VENEZUELA–BRITISH GUIANA BOUNDARY ARBITRATION

DIGEST

Of evidence arranged according to

SUBJECTS

PREPARED FOR PRIVATE USE OF VENEZUELAN COUNSEL

NEW YORK

THE EVENING POST JOB PRINTING HOUSE, 156 FULTON STREET

1899

F232
.B72V64

P.

U. S. Geological Survey
THE LIBRARY
OF CONGRESS
15 Sep '01

2545M

CONTENTS.

Chapter I. Geographic features and definitions.

Orinoco Delta. PAGE

General description 1
Military importance of Barima Point 7
Pomeroon-Moruca Region 9
Lower Essequibo Region 12
Cuyuni-Mazaruni Basin.
Definitions 15
Forests 17
Savannas 18
Obstacles to river navigation 20
Routes of travel, actual and proposed 21
Definitions. Amacura 23
Amazons 24
Arabian Coast 24
Barima 25
Cuyuni 25
El Dorado 29
Essequibo 30
—upper 38
Guiana 38
Itabo 40
Manoa 40
Mazaruni 41
Nova Zeelandia 42
Orinoco 42
—as far as 44
—Dardanelles of 44
—near to 45
Quake 46
Spanish Main 46
Terra Firma 46
Wild Coast 46

Chapter II. Dutch Trade and Fisheries.

Dutch Trade—in general.
With the Portuguese 49
Spanish 49
Indians of the coast 51
Indians of the interior 53
Participated in—by Surinam Dutch 56
— by French and others 57
Character as to legal rights.
By permission of Spain 58
Surreptitious, clandestine and illicit 60
Never under a claim of right 63
Nature of trade—for horses 64
—for various Indian products 66

Chapter II. Dutch Trade and Fisheries—(Continued).

PAGE

How carried on 67
Spanish trade to Essequibo 68

Slave Trade.

Slaves—whence and how obtained 70
—by whom captured and bought 75
—surreptitious character of trade in 77
Slavery—cruelties practiced 78
—its status and importance 81
—abolition of by British, its effect 84

Dutch Fisheries 86

Chapter III. Boundaries.

Claims. By the Spanish—to Guiana as a whole 89
—to Essequibo 94
—to all the coast 96
—to the Pomeroon-Moruca region 97
—to Barima and Orinoco mouth 100
—to Cuyuni, Mazaruni and the interior 103
—basis for, and Spanish views of Dutch claims to same 106
By the Dutch—to the Pomeroon-Moruca region 110
—to Waini 112
—to Barima and Orinoco mouth 115
—to Amacura 117
—to Cuyuni, Mazaruni and the interior 118
—to all the coast 121
—basis for, and Dutch views of Spanish claims to same 123
By the British—in colonial records, correspondence, etc 125
—in diplomatic correspondence 129
—in official or semi-official maps 132
—in Cases and Counter Cases 135
—alleged basis for 137

Admissions. By the Spanish 140
By the Dutch—direct, in general 143
—that Moruca was a frontier post 147
—passes required at Moruca 151
—tolls at Moruca 152
—boundaries on the Cuyuni 153
By the British—boundaries on the coast 154
—boundaries in the interior 158
—customs collected in Moruca 160
—Barima light-house 161
By the Venezuelans 162

Ignorance as to Boundaries—
By the Spanish 163
Dutch 164
British 166

Boundaries as inferred from designations used 167
Acts of jurisdiction by one nation passed over without protest by the other 173

Chapter IV. Nature of Spanish and Dutch occupation.

PAGE

Spanish occupation—its purpose 175
—its methods 179
—its influence and results 179
—efforts and plans for extension of;
–expeditions to interior, and establishment of missions and villages there 181
–reconnaissances of coast by Inciarte and others .. 186
–plans for Moruca Post and San Carlos de la Frontera 187
Dutch occupation—its purpose; to trade, plunder and plant 190
—its methods 192
—its influence and results 193
—its efforts and plans for extension always limited to trade relations 194

Chapter V. Remonstrances, and meaning of treaties.

Remonstrances and acts or declarations of like nature 195
Meaning of treaties—Truce of 1609 214
—Treaty of Munster, 1648 217
" Utrecht, 1714 232
" Aranjuez, 1791 232
" London, 1814 233
—Agreement of 1850 233
—Treaty of arbitration, 1897 240
—Charters of Dutch West India Company 241
—Dutch trading regulations 244

Chapter VI. British Trade and Timber Cutting.

British Trade 245
British Timber Cutting 246

Chapter VII. Indians.

The Indians considered by **themselves.**
In general 253
Akaways 255
Arawaks 257
Caribs 261
Makusis 270
Warrows 270
Various tribes unclassified 274
Their relations to the **Essequibo Dutch.**
Hostility to 276
Independence of, as appears from
—allegations in Cases and Counter Cases 279
—the words, *invite, persuade, induce,* etc 281
—the words, *order, threat, demand,* etc 284
—the words, *friend, ally, neighbor,* etc 285
—*insolence,* and *demands* made, and Dutch treatment of Indian complaints 289

Chapter VII. Indians—(Continued).

PAGE

Treaties with Indians 290
Attitude assumed by the Dutch towards others as to Indian relations 291
Nature and purpose of Dutch-Indian relations.
Alliances—for hostile purposes, in general 294
—to enslave uncivilized Indians 297
—to enslave Spanish Indians 297
Alliances—for defence of Dutch 301
Alliances—for trade, in general 303
—for trade in slaves and capture of runaways 305
—inconstant character of 309
Protection given Indians by the Dutch 310
Creole-Dutch language 312
Their relations to the **French, English, Surinam-Dutch,** etc. 314
Their relations to the **Spanish.**
In general 316
Hostility to 318
—its cause 320
—its character (rebellion) 322
As subjects—*entradas* and compulsory settlement in Missions 324
—punishment of rebels 325
—recognition of the Spanish as masters 326
—obedience to Spaniards 328
—Spanish claim to sovereignty over them 330
Their relations to the **British.**
Appointment of Indian Captains 332
—by the Indians themselves 334
—by the Dutch and British 335
Protectors of Indians 341
Suppression of Indian slavery and its effect 346
Treaties or agreements with Indians 347
What Indians were controlled 350
Admissions that British did not control 354
Allies and friends, not subjects 358
Attitude towards British sovereignty 362
Their relations to the **Venezuelans** 363
Presents to Indians.
By the Spanish 364
By the Dutch—origin of 365
—frequency of 366
—character and object of 367
By the British—frequency of 373
—object and character of 376
—to Indians outside the colony 380

CHAPTER I.

GEOGRAPHIC FEATURES.

ORINOCO DELTA—GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The region bounded on the north and northeast by the Gulf of Paria and the Atlantic Ocean; on the east by the Atlantic Ocean, and by the divide separating the waters of the Moruca from the waters of the Waini; on the south by the Imataca mountains: and extending thence westward, **is a geographical and political unit,** the material occupation of a part of which, by the nation first discovering and exploring it, is in law attributive and constructive possession of the whole. *V. C., 22.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is untrue. Neither geographically nor politically is the region therein stated a unit, and no possession ever taken by Spain can be construed as giving constructive possession of the whole. *B. C.-C., 133.*

The Venezuelan contention as to the geographical unity of the so-called **[Orinoco] delta** region as defined by them **is** therefore **entirely unfounded.**

Same, p. 12.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The Orinoco Delta Region . . . is bounded on the north and west by the Orinoco itself; **on the south by a range of hills** or mountains, to different parts of which have been applied the designations **Piacoa mountains** and **Imataca mountains; on the east** it is separated from the second of the four tracts above mentioned; first, **by a wet savanna difficult to traverse; and,** further inland, by **a tract of white sand, miles in length,** white almost as the driven snow, hot and dazzling to the eyes, **difficult and even painful to travel over.**

V. C., 14.

Into the Orinoco, at and above Barima point, flow various streams: the Barima, Amacura, Arature, Aguire and Imataca.

The Barima, between Mora passage and Barima point, can hardly be called an independent stream; it is rather one of those many channels through which the Orinoco empties its waters into the ocean. At certain states of the tide the waters of the Barima flow westward and are discharged into the Orinoco; at other states the current is in the opposite direction, the water from the Orinoco flowing eastward through this same Barima channel, and discharging through the Mora passage into the sea. This set of conditions, which converts the lower Barima and the Mora passage into a veritable Orinoco mouth, gives rise to unusual conditions in the Mora passage itself. *Same, p. 15.*

ORINOCO DELTA—GENERAL DESCRIPTION—(Continued).

——. Venezuelan Case.

The River Barima falls into the south side of the Orinoco near the most eastern point of its mouth. *V. C., 21.*

——. British Counter Case.

The Barima and the Amakuru . . . might be supposed by a person unacquainted with the physical history of this coast, **to run into the estuary of the Orinoco.** *B. C.-C., 7.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The entire coast region from Barima point south-east, as far as the divide separating the waters of the Moruca from the waters of the Waini, is an integral part of the Orinoco delta. *V. C., 224.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is unfounded. Neither the Barima, nor still less the coast region as far as the watershed between the Moruka and Waini, is any part of the Orinoco delta. *B. C.-C., 133.*

——. British Case.

The delta of the Orinoco lies between the River Vagre on the west and the main stream of the Orinoco on the east. **The low land on the coast to the east of the Orinoco has no connection with the Orinoco delta,** having been formed by the detritus brought down by the rivers to the eastward of the Orinoco, and carried westward under the influence of the westerly current and the prevailing wind on that coast. *B. C., 8.*

——. British Counter Case.

The Rivers Amakuru and Barima, the Waini with its tributary the Barama, and the Pomeroon **flow directly into the sea.** *B. C.-C., 5.*

The Amakuru and Barima are not tributaries of the Orinoco, but are, in fact, independent rivers; . . . the conception of the Lower Barima and the Mora Passage as a mouth of the Orinoco is entirely at variance with the facts, and is founded only on erroneous mapping. *Same, p. 6.*

A first glance at a map—fancifully drawn and coloured as **at p. 1 of the Atlas delivered with the Venezuelan Case—may give the impression that the Amakuru and the Barima,** especially because of the north-west trend of the lower part of their course, **belong to the Orinoco system.** It can be clearly shown from the origin of this north-west trend that these rivers have, in fact, no connection with the Orinoco system. *Same, pp. 6-7.*

The suggestion made in the Venezuelan Case **that the alluvial country is characterized by "interlacing bayous"** as distinguished from "true flowing streams," **is based on a misconception of the nature of the itabos.**

Same, p. 8.

The sea-tides from the mouths of both **the Waini and the Barima flow alternately into the Morawhana;** . . . the current of fresh water which comes down from the Upper Barima flows to the sea partly through the Barima mouth and partly through the Morawhana. *Same, p. 11.*

ORINOCO DELTA—GENERAL DESCRIPTION—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

Definition of the **actual limits of the delta of the Orinoco.** These are, as already stated, **the River Vagre on the west, and on the east the main stream of the Orinoco,** flowing south of the Islands of Tortola, Imataka, and Cangrejo (or Crab) Island. *B. C.-C., 11.*

[1750.] Anonymous Spanish MS. in Hydrographic Office, Madrid.

From this [Great] mouth [of the Orinoco] it is a passage of one hour **across the sea to the entrance of** the River **Barima.** *B. C.-C., App., 194.*

1757. Don Jose Felipe de Iturriaga.

Barima, which flows into the **[Orinoco] mouth** itself. *B. C., II, 137.*

1768. Francisco Cierto.

The Creek of Barima, which **is close to the great mouth of the River Orinoco and falls into it.** *B. C., III, 170.*

1768. Manuel Cubas.

Upon arriving at the mouth of **the** Creek of **Barima,** which **falls into the River Orinoco close to the great mouth.** *Same, p. 171.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

Here [near the mouth of the Arature] we cut masts for the felucca and launch, so as **to have them ready for** the opportunity of **crossing from the mouths of the** said **Orinoco to the creek** or river **of Barima.**

B. C.-C., App., 218.

The Orinoco apparently does not communicate its waters to the said creek **(Barima),** and even if it does they are very little felt, for it was impossible to perceive any other change except that of the tide. *Same, pp. 219–220.*

The **Orinoco does not communicate its waters to any** of the **creeks** included **between** that of **Barima and** the River of **Essequibo.** *Same, p. 238.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

[The Orinoco] rises and falls once every year; the waters begin to rise **slowly in** the month of **March, and** in the month of **August,** in which they **attain their greatest height, again subside** with the same slowness **until February,** in which they remain at their lowest level, between which and its highest point there is a difference here in the capital of about 14 fathoms.

The rise of the river is favoured by the east winds or breezes which prevail for eight months in the year. *B. C.; V, 55.*

From Carucina [20 leagues more or less up the Orinoco from Point Barima] the ridge runs along the same side of the Orinoco with a small tract of meadow land between the two and of hill country which ends at the River Caroni, where the range turns to the south. This portion of land has in length the distance shown, and in breadth, from north to south, twelve leagues, more or less, up to the town of Oputa where begins the flat tract of savannahs which reach to the Cuyuni and beyond. *Same, p. 57.*

The south coast of the Orinoco, from the point of **Barima, 20 leagues** more or less **inland,** up to the creek of Carucima **is low-lying and swampy** land.

Same, p. 61.

ORINOCO DELTA—GENERAL DESCRIPTION—(Continued).

1802. Major McCreagh.

In **entering the River Orinoco** by the south-east, generally called the great channel, **Cape Barima forms the south-east point.** *B. C., V, 173.*

1839. Wm. Crichton, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

[I] then descended the Wyena to the mouth of the Morocco Creek [**Mora Passage**] **which may properly be termed a mouth of the Barima** discharging itself into the Wyena River within a very short distance of the sea.

B. C., VI, 75.

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The River **Barima falls into** the south side of **the Orinoco**, near the most eastern point of its mouth and in a direction almost parallel to the coast.

B. C., VII, 33.

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

The land [**between Essequibo and Orinoco**] **is chiefly low-lying swamp and is covered with dense forest**; and though few rivers—the Pomeroon, the Morooca, the Vani or Guiana, and the Barima, with their tributaries—run through it to the sea, yet none of these are of any great size, length, or importance. *V. C., III, 150.*

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

In the [Pomeroon] district the rivers form its most important features. These are:

Rivers.	Chief Tributaries.
Pomeroon	Arrapiakroo and Issororo.
Morooka	Manawarin.
Waini	Barrimanni, Moreybo and Barama.
Barima	Arooka and Kaitooma.
Amakooroo.	

In addition . . . there is a number of creeks and also . . . of natural, or partly natural, waterways, here called **itabboos, which connect the rivers the one with the other, the whole water system thus constituted forming a network which pervades the whole district. The most important part of this water system forms a single waterway**, consisting partly of rivers and creeks, partly of itabboos, from the southern extreme of the district, on the Tapacooma Lake, to its northern extreme. *B. C., VII, 255.*

1897. Major C. S. N. Grant, R. E.

The delta of **the Orinoco** . . . **is bounded on one side by the Vagre River**, and **on the other by** what may be looked upon as **the main stream of the Orinoco itself**, flowing south of Tortola and Imataca Islands.

The geological formation of the delta proper is, I believe, **different from that of the coast region south of the Orinoco.** The former is composed of the débris brought down by the river itself, and is dark in color, the latter is largely composed of sand, and much lighter in appearance. *Same, p. 242.*

There can be . . . little doubt that all this low-lying coast country, extending from Cape Nassau to the mouth of the Amacura, has been built up of the detritus brought down by the Amazon and the Essequibo and its confluents, the Cuyuni and the Mazeruni, and that it has nothing to do with the delta region of the Orinoco. *Same, p. 243.*

ORINOCO DELTA—GENERAL DESCRIPTION—(Continued).

1897. E. F. im Thurn.

I have been well acquainted with the district referred to . . . for the last fifteen years, and . . . **am of opinion that the statements made . . . are correct, and that the conclusions formed by Major Grant appear to me to be sound.** *B. C., VII, 243.*

1897. D. F. Turnbull.

The Orinoco has a delta on its north side and on its south side consisting of the usual delta swamp formation, intersected with bayous generally large and deep in proportion to the amount of water which passes through them, but more or less obstructed by mud banks or bars, and, in the case of the smaller ones, by fallen trees. . . . On the North side and in descending the river, the really firm land stops about at the head of Brazo Macareo; below that is the delta.

On the south side there is firm land down as far as Imataca. It does not consist of a continuous firm bank to the river, but of a series of spurs which run out east-northeast from the main Imataca range of mountains. The river runs to the north of east; the main Imataca range trends to the south of east, so that it recedes from the river. These spurs run out obliquely towards the river. As the general course of the Orinoco is to the east, these spurs approach it obliquely, and thus serve to keep the river from cutting to the south. **Between these spurs** there **are what one may call bays filled with river mud more or less consolidated into swamp or firm savannah.**

These spurs which, on the south bank, reach down the river as far as the town of Imataca, (back of which the main range of the Imataca mountains trends off more to the south), the ends of these spurs seem to stop further off to the south and the sort of great natural bay thus left by them has been **filled up with mud and sand, making the great southern delta of the Orinoco.**

V. C.-C., III, 324.

Thus, if **a person coming down the river, finds on the south bank** of the river **more or less firm land until he gets to Imataca; below that nothing but delta swamp,** largely under water in the wet season, with an occasional bank of hummock where a few Indians live. The spurs terminate too far back from the river to be visible. . . .

From the Imataca range a series of spur-like formations run out in an E-N-E direction towards the Orinoco; these prevent the river, in general terms, from cutting away its south bank. Between each of these low ridges there is a drainage stream which finds its way into the Orinoco; and the lower portion of each of these streams generally flows through an alluvial, swamp-like region.

Same, p. 325.

Considering now **Imataca town; it stands on the north slope of the last end of the spur from the Imataca mountains.** This spur is here about 175 feet high. **Beyond it** however **are some low detached hills** which might be considered as prolongations of it—some on Corisimo Island, and one a little lower down, say 100 feet high. **These are the last hills seen in descending the Orinoco. About here the main Imataca range (consequently its spurs) trend off towards the south,** and therefore appear to recede from the water. **The intervening land is Orinoco delta.** *Same, p. 326.*

ORINOCO DELTA—GENERAL DESCRIPTION—(Continued).

1897. D. F. Turnbull.

Imataca town, which rises directly from the water, stands, strictly speaking, not on the Orinoco but on the Corisimo. The Corisimo is however not a drainage stream simply but rather a part or arm of the main river. It makes in from the Orinoco proper as a waterway 350 yards wide, with a wide channel carrying 30 feet of water and more. This reaches to the town of Imataca, about two and a half miles from the river proper, and then bends to the east-northeast, and gets back to the Orinoco. This waterway is, at Imataca town, as large and deep as I have stated, and so continues, substantially, until it again reaches the main river. I have been through it in a steam launch. *V. C.-C., III, 326.*

1898. Michael McTurk.

The Imataeca Mountains do not, to the extent suggested in the said Chapter [V. C., Chapter II] **divide the territory** which is intended to be **included in the term Orinoco Delta Region from the other part of the territory in dispute.** The Imatacca Mountains start from the southern shore of the Orinoco near where it is joined by the Caroni, and then extend in a south-easterly direction towards the Atlantic sea-coast; but they very soon rapidly diminish in height until, on approaching the sources of the Parima, they are nothing more than a series of low hills. There is, in fact, no well-defined mountain range for very many miles west of what is known as the Schomburgk line. The Imatacca Mountains, some distance before they approach the Schomburgk line, develop into a series of low hills, the highest of which, at the source of the Aunama and the Accarrabisi, was estimated by Sir Robert Schomburgk to be 600 feet, and they ultimately terminate in a series of spurs of low altitude which run in various directions; one known as the Blue Mountains goes off towards the junction of the Cuyuni and the Massaruni, another terminates at Mount Yarakita, which is about 250 feet high, and another may be said to terminate at Mount Everard on the Barima.

These different spurs [of the Imataca], however, do not affect the general watershed of the country, which may be roughly divided into two groups: those **rivers which flow directly** from the northern slope of the Imatacca range **into the Orinoco, namely, the Sokoroko, the Imataeca, the Aguirre, and the Aretare, and those**, namely, the Amakuru, Barima, Waini, Barama, Morucca, and Pomeroon, **which flow into the Atlantic.** *B. C.-C., App., 401.*

The **said Chapter** [*II*, of *V. C.*] **suggests that the Amakuru, Barima, and even the Waini are not independent streams, but are, in fact, merely part of the Orinoco. This is not the fact,** . . . the original course of the Amakuru, Barima, Waini, and Pomeroon was from the face of the spurs of the Imatacca range . . . eastwards towards the sea, but, owing to the way in which the large tract of alluvial deposit has been formed, each of these rivers, after a certain distance has had its course very considerably turned to the north-west. . . . There is a similarity in the physical formation at the mouths of the Amazon, Essequibo, and Orinoco which conclusively points out that the deltas at the mouths of these rivers have been formed under like conditions. The deepest channel of each of these rivers is on the east or side from which the wind and current first meets the mouths of these rivers, and their deltas are to the west. *Same, p. 401.*

The suggestion in the said Chapter [*II*, of *V. C.*] **that the Mora passage, or Morawhanna, converts the River Barima into a veritable Orinoco mouth**

ORINOCO DELTA—GENERAL DESCRIPTION—(Continued).

is absolutely unfounded. The Morawhanna is simply the largest of many itabos which exist within the district of the alluvial deposit. . . . The course of the Morwahanna, as represented in the atlas delivered on behalf of the Government of the United States of Venezuela, is incorrect. It is there shown as a single straight reach flowing on from the Waini into the Barima. As a matter of fact, **the Morawhanna** is by no means straight, and joins the Waini at a considerable angle; its course **is correctly laid down in Mr. Hohenkirk's Chart, which accompanies the British Counter Case.** . . . The Morawhanna, . . . like all other itabos or water passages, originally consisted of two streams or creeks, both rising in the same swamp, the one flowing into the Waini and the other into the Barima, and the itabo was formed in the usual way by canoes and boats being forced through the swamp. *B. C.-C., App., 402.*

The tide rushes up the Waini and also up the connecting passage between the Waini and the Barima, the Mora Passage, so that for a certain time the water in the Barima is falling, whereas the water in the Mora Passage is rising, but as the flood tide up the Mora Passage becomes less and less strong, the current of the later flood tide in the Barima asserts itself, and then there is in the Mora Passage what is technically called "*slack water*," to be followed by falling water in the Mora and Waini, although it is still flood tide in the Barima . . . **The suggestion that the Waini empties itself** into the ocean **partly through its own mouth and partly through the Mora Passage** and the Barima River **is** thus shown to be **absolutely incorrect.** *Same, p. 402.*

ORINOCO DELTA—MILITARY IMPORTANCE OF BARIMA POINT.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The importance of Barima point, and of the land and rivers immediately surrounding it, is due to its commanding position with reference to the "Ship's Mouth" or main channel of the Orinoco. . . . **This importance of Barima, political and otherwise, has been forcibly set forth by explorers and writers, and has been recognized and acted upon by British statesmen.** *V. C., 17–18.*

——. British Counter Case.

Political unity of what is called the Orinoco Delta Region is asserted solely on the alleged ground that Barima Point, the extreme point of the right bank of the Barima River, commands strategically the "Ship's Channel" into the Orinoco. **As a matter of fact, Barima Point has not the strategic value ascribed to it in the Venezuelan Case.** The ground is quite unsuitable for the erection of fortifications, and the Ship's Channel is 10 miles wide, its inner edge being about 5 miles from Barima Point. *B. C.-C., 12.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

Taking the mouth of the River Barima as the place of departure; **the line** . . . **ought to** be directed to the mouth of the River Amacura, in order to be able to **insure the political importance** which would always be **attached to the mouth of the Orinoco.** *B. C., VII, 5.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

Colonel Moody, of the Royal Engineers, . . . was sent in the earlier part of this century to report on the **military situation of the Orinoco.**

Same, p. 13.

ORINOCO DELTA—MILITARY IMPORTANCE OF BARIMA POINT—(Continued).

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

Barima . . . point in the possession of Great Britain is of great value in a military respect. The peculiar configuration of the only channel (Boca de Navios), which admits vessels of some draught to the Orinoco, passes near Point Barima; so that if hereafter it becomes of advantage **to command the entrance to the Orinoco,** this might be easily effected from that point. This assertion is supported by Colonel Moody's evidence, who visited this spot in his military capacity in the commencement of this century. *B. C., VII, 13.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk (**Confidential letter**).

I have now to point out the **importance** which is **attached to** this position [**Barima**], should the British Government establish the Amacura as the boundary between British Guiana and Venezuela. . . . **The only access to this vast inland communication** for sailing vessels of more than 10 feet draft of water is by means of the Boca de Navios, which **is commanded from Point Barima.** . . . Colonel Moody considers this position "susceptable (*sic*) of being fortified so as to resist almost any attack on the sea-side . . . and debarkation from the Orinoco might be put under the fire of any number of guns—and the land reproaches (*sic*) . . . could be easily rendered inaccessible to an invading force. **This . . . importance . . . in a military respect . . . is fully born out by personal inspection during my late survey** of the entrance to the Barima. *Same, p. 33.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Barima—a point **of more importance** to Great Britain **than I have ventured to make it appear** in my memorial. *Same, p. 34.*

1848. R. H. Schomburgk.

A strong battery established at Punta Barima, where the Dutch had as early as 1660 a fortified outpost, **would prevent any vessel from entering the Orinoco drawing more than eight feet of water.** Punta Barima, or Point Breme, as it was called by the Dutch, commands entirely the entrance of the Orinoco by the Boca de Navios; and when on a late occasion the right of possession to this point was the subject of discussion between the British Government and the Republic of Venezuela, Punta Barima was appropriately and emphatically styled "the Dardanelles of the Orinoco." *V. C., 20.*

1850. Belford Hinton Wilson.

The [**Venezuelan**] **Governor has spoken of raising a fort at Point Barima,** . . . The . . . debates in Congress and . . . other reports . . . satisfy me of the **desire** and tendency **in** this country [**Venezuela**] . . . **to secure,** by actual occupation, **possession of Point Barima.** *B. C., VI, 180.*

1850. Governor Barkly.

I need add little to what Sir Robert Schomburgk so forcibly stated at that time of **the** prospective **importance, both in a military and a commercial point of view, of a site which effectually commands the entrance of one of the mightiest rivers in the world;** but I may remark that it has gained, rather than lost in importance since he wrote, for not only would the whole coasting trade of this Colony . . . be at the mercy of any naval power . . . there . . . but the supply of cattle, indispensable . . . for consumption in this and other Colonies, would be cut off, and both the inhabitants and the troops be left dependent on more remote and expensive sources for animal food. *Same, p. 183.*

ORINOCO DELTA—MILITARY IMPORTANCE OF BARIMA POINT—(Continued).

1857. Lieutenant-Governor of British Guiana.

Point Barima . . . is at the entrance of the only channel of the Orinoco navigable by vessels of any great burthen. *B. C., VI, 204.*

1881. Lord Granville.

Her Majesty's Government . . . are disposed . . . to submit . . . a line . . . 29 miles . . . east . . . of the River Barima. . . . **This boundary will surrender to Venezuela** what has been called **the Dardanelles of the Orinoco. It will give to Venezuela the entire command of the mouth of that river.** *B. C., VII, 99-100.*

1898. Michael McTurk.

The said [Venezuelan] Case also refers to the value of Barima Point from a military and strategical point of view. As is well known, there are other entrances to the Orinoco than the one by Barima Point, and although it is true that the one opposite Barima Point, which is known as Boca des Navios, or Great Ships Mouth, is the most used, yet **the edge of the navigable channel, which is of itself of considerable width, is at least 5 miles from Barima Point**, and owing to the nature of the soil and the wash of the sea, **it would be practically impossible to erect any fortifications of sufficient strength to contain heavy artillery.** *B. C.-C., App., 402.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

I would further add that from my own personal knowledge of Barima Point, **I am satisfied that the only method of armed control of the Boca de Navios, or Ships Mouth**, into the Orinoco, **would be by a sea force, which**, from the nature of the shore and of the ground at Barima Point itself, **would be independent of the power which actually held Barima Point.** *Same, p. 407.*

POMEROON-MORUCA REGION.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The old beach line, which in the Orinoco delta is now well inland, makes its nearest approach to the present seaboard near the mouth of the Moruca; it is now elevated land, according to the quotation from Schomburgk above given [*V. C., 26*], and approaches the sea within about two miles. . . . **There is no natural inland water communication between the Orinoco delta, on the west, and the Moruca, on the east.**

The **practical** effect of this lack of natural water communication is that **actual** communication between the two regions has been very slight. **The difficulty of crossing from the Moruca to the region west has been so great as to constitute an actual barrier between them**, a barrier which, in the history of settlement, has in fact served to keep the two regions apart. *V. C., 26-27.*

The above facts [quoted from im Thurn, *infra, pp. 11-12*] would seem to place beyond question the point of special importance **regarding this Moruca-Pomeroon Region**; viz., that **a natural and effective physical barrier separates it from the Orinoco Delta Region.** *Same, p. 28.*

POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

Westward of the Pomeroon, however, the only actual sand-reefs are patches of very limited extent . . . no sand-reef exists anywhere between the Moruka and the Waini. Such sand-reefs are only of very occasional occurrence in the "sand and clay deposit." . . . This deposit constitutes no barrier whatever to passage, and the description of the sand-reef given in the Venezuelan Case is inapplicable to it. . . . The assumption made in the Venezuelan Case that these sand-reefs, even where they do exist, constitute a barrier to traffic is a mistake: passage over them is in fact perfectly easy. . . . **Part of the waterway** which is formed by the short itabo between the heads of the Moruka and of the Barabara **is, in the dry season, difficult to pass. But**, as events have proved, **it is not impassible,** and it is used at all times of the year, **even in the dry seasons. . . . No physical barrier, either by sand-reef, or by absence of inland water communication, exists between the Moruka and the Waini.**

B. C.-C., 13-14.

1841. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Messrs. Hamilton and Eyere, the former a native of Angostura, the latter of the Rio Negro, with a crew of twenty black Spaniards, arrived at the Post. . . . The object of Mr. Hamilton's visiting this part of the Colony was principally **to ascertain if a path could be made from Morocco to the River Winey.** Mr. Hamilton . . . stated . . . that, if a path was practicable to Morocco, he could undertake to land cattle in Morocco at twenty dollars per head.

Your reporter, knowing the impossibility of conveying cattle by that route took the liberty of directing the attention to the head of the Iserooroo Creek, from where your reporter has frequently walked across to the River Winey. . . . The difficulty of getting them [cattle] conveyed from the Barama to the Winey would not be considered an obstacle. *B. C.-C., App., 295.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The want of a proper canal through this part of Upper Morocco forms a complete barrier for several months of the year to all communication with the Rivers Winey, Barima and Oronoko, thereby cutting off, although for a time only, that intercourse so essential to the general welfare of the Pomeroon district, but more especially to the Arabian coast. *B. C., VI, 171.*

1871. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Pomeroon.

This tract of land, situated on the left bank of Marucca, and bounded, for the most part, by the said river, and partly by the sea, is as large as the island of Wakenaam, and **with the exception of the high lands known as St. Roses Mission,** otherwise Mariabba, Comachane, **and two or three other small hills, the whole tract is nothing more or less than a swampy jungle.**

[This] tract of swampy jungle to which allusion has been made extends to the head of the Baramanie Creek, a tributary of Rio Wynie. Sir R. Schomburgk, in his map of Guiana, has laid down this branch, and, although wide and very deep, its extreme length don't exceed 30 miles.

This canal [on the Marucca] **formed by coreals passing and repassing, is 5 miles long, and runs through a swampy crossing** [*sic*] **in its course a sand-reef,** parts of the Owyebarri Hill, and by which the water of these vast swamps are separated, one portion flowing towards the Wynie River, the other down the Marucca. *Same, p. 211.*

POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

1886. E. F. im Thurn.

Under ordinary circumstances . . . communication between these two rivers [**Pomeroon and Barima**] **would be by sea; but . . . occasions will arise for the use of . . . the itaboo** between the Morooka and the Waini. *B. C., VI, 242.*

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

From the head of the Morooka there is an itabboo—unfortunately IMPASSABLE IN VERY DRY SEASONS—which leads into the Bara-Bara, and thence by the way of the Biara and Barimanni Rivers into the Waini River.

From Warramoori Mission on the Morooka River to Barimanni Station on the Waini River . . . **this part of the waterway IS IMPASSABLE IN THE DRY SEASONS, and . . . even at other times, unless in very wet seasons, the passage is difficult. . . .**

This passage . . . has served as a sort of natural barrier dividing the whole Pomeroon district into two clearly marked sub-districts. It has, indeed, until recently, almost entirely prevented the spread of population from the Pomeroon Sub-district to that of Barima. *B. C., VII, 256.*

1891. E. F. im Thurn.

The Pomeroon Sub-district and . . . the Barima Sub-district . . . **the difficulty of communicating between them.** *Same, p. 266.*

1892. E. F. im Thurn.

After five hours' boat journey up the Moruka, the country on each side of the river becoming gradually more and more open—the river at last winding through open savannahs, and broadening out here and there into pools so thickly set with water-lilies that it was difficult to force the boat through them—we reached the point where the waterway leaves the river and passes along a narrow itabbo, or artificial water-path, which connects the Moruka with the Waini River. This connecting passage is in all about 30 miles in length; but only about the first 10 miles of this is actually semi-artificial itabbo, made by the constant passage of the canoes of the Redmen through the swampy savannah. After that it runs into the Barabara and then into the Biara River, which latter runs into the Baramanni River, and that again into the Waini, at a point about 80 miles from its outflow into the sea.

We found the itabbo section of this passage very difficult to get through. Generally, it was hardly wider than the boat, and its many abrupt windings added to our difficulties. Again, the trees hang down so low over the water, that even after we had taken the tent off the boat, we had either to force the boat under the low-lying branches or make a passage by cutting them away. On either side of the channel the ground is so swampy as hardly anywhere to allow foothold of even a few inches in extent. The light hardly penetrates through the dense roof of leaves; and in the gloom under the roof only a few aroids, ferns, lilies, orchids, and great masses of a palm which had at the time of my journey not been described, . . . grew among the fantastically twisted tree-roots which rose from the bare mud. Only close to the channel itself, where just a little more light penetrated, did these same plants grow a little more densely.

This itabbo is quite dry in the longer dry seasons, and is then, of course, impassable; for walking along its banks is out of the question—a circumstance

POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

which has had a good deal to do with the fact that the parts beyond had up till then been almost completely shut off from the rest of the colony; even now, though the overhanging trees have been cleared from this part of the waterway, it presents no slight obstacle to the swarm of gold boats which would press through it to the goldfields beyond. *V. C., 27–28.*

1897. Jacobus Ingles.

There is an old path in the bush behind Essequibo all the way from Supenaam to Pomeroon at Issarooroo, thence to Kwabanna on the Waini to Wycarabie in the Barama, then along the left bank of the Barama to Hooree on the same river and from Hooree to Okaba, five miles below Coriabo. This is the old Postholder's road. *B. C., VII, 225.*

1898. Michael McTurk.

That it [Pomeroon-Moruca region] is not divided from the so-called Orinoco Delta Region by an absence of water is well known, as **old and well established water communications exist between the Waini and the Moruku by means of the creeks Baramanni and Bara Bara, and the connecting itabo,** as also between the Morucca and the Pomeroon by the Manawarin Creek, the River Wackepo, and the usual itabo, as has already been stated in the Case delivered on behalf of the Government of Her Britannic Majesty. The suggestion that it is also shut off by an almost impassable sand reef is equally without foundation. . . . The suggestion in the Venezuelan Case of the indivisibility of the so-called Orinoco Delta Region, and of the Morucca-Pomeroon Region, and their complete separation the one from the other, is entirely erroneous and without foundation. *B. C.-C., App., 403.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

It is hard to understand what is exactly intended by the description in the Venezuelan Case of the tract or district called the Moruka-Pomeroon Region, or exactly what territory it is intended to include. **If it is suggested that it is cut off from the Waini and the Barima by any natural obstacle, it is incorrect,** . . . if it is intended to be suggested that it is cut off from the country lying immediately behind it by an impassable barrier of sand reefs, this is also incorrect. *Same, p. 407.*

LOWER ESSEQUIBO REGION.

——. British Case.

All the rivers below the points to which the tide reaches are more or less navigable, forming means of communication; **but above** these points they **are full of cataracts and rapids,** and become unnavigable except for small boats and native canoes. *B. C., 146.*

——. British Counter Case.

The statement in the Venezuelan Case that "near the point of junction of the **Cuyuni and Massaruni** there is a **break** in these mountains, and **through** this . . . the Cuyuni and Massaruni Rivers pour their united waters into the Essequibo," **is entirely misleading. No such gorge exists.** *B. C.-C., 5.*

1739, Commandeur in Essequibo.

As the continuous rainy season . . . makes the **road above the** [lowest Cuyuni] **falls very dangerous,** it has prevented the making of any further discovery—assuming that anything at all is to be found there. *B. C., II, 30.*

LOWER ESSEQUIBO REGION—(Continued).

1742. Mining Engineer Hildebrandt.

March 26. [1742]. Set out with nine slaves [**to go** from the Perker and Haak mine in the Blue Mountains **down to the Cuyuni mouth**] but the water was higher than I had yet seen it, and **I passed the falls with great danger**, but just before reaching the indigo plantation I ran on a rock with the boat, so that a cask was thrown out and broken and a hole made in the boat. *B. C., II, 38.*

1743. Mining Engineer Hildebrandt.

Early in the morning I looked out a suitable place where I could best get to from there overland, in order to make a station for storing ore and other commodities of the Company, and also at the same time **to make a path overland** in case we should have anything important that **might come to grief in the little falls which lie above the great fall to the number of two.** *Same, p. 39.*

So **I gave orders to make another small path** through the bush, to be used by men so as **to escape the great danger of the falls**, and later to transport other things by. *Same, p. 40.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The very existence of the Colony is precarious, except the immense **belt of forest that forms its southern boundary**, be occupied by some friendly Power. *B. C., VI, 33.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The dangerous fall Wakupang, where our stores were lost on the preceding day, was passed without accident.

We had commenced this morning (26th July) the descent of the third series of falls, caused by **a small range of mountains, through which the river has broken itself a passage.** It rained almost incessantly; and, as the wind was against us, it endangered our descent of numerous rapids, and the coxwain could hardly look forward. **We had to unload at the cataract Arnakamatubba, and to haul our corials overland.** We passed soon after the Woku or Powis Mountain, which rises on the river's right bank to a height of 500 to 600 feet; this ridge extends west-north-west, and east-south-east, and it can be seen from the junction of the Cuyuni and Maxaruni. Little islets, consisting of heaped-up masses of rock, divide the river into numerous channels. **We had to pass the fall Camaria**, and, as it did not afford any portage, **we attempted to descend it in our craft. It nearly proved our destruction.** As it was, the craft filled with water, and it was only the presence of mind of some of our crew to which, under the Almighty, we were indebted for our safety. We reached, on that evening, **Ematubba, generally called "the Great Fall," where we had to unload and to haul our corials overland**, and encamped at the foot of the small island, whither the corials had been drawn. Continued rains precluded the possibility of any observations, and we started on the morning of the 27th July, under the same unfavourable weather. An hour and a-half after we were at the foot of the last fall, called **Akaya**, and saw before us the junction of the three rivers Essequibo, Mazaruni and Cuyuni. *B. C., VII, 29.*

The difficulties which the Cuyuni presents to navigation, and those tremendous falls which impede the river in the first day's ascent, will, I fear, prove a great obstacle to making the fertility of its banks available to the Colony. *Same, p. 30.*

LOWER ESSEQUIBO REGION—(Continued).

1843. Local Guide.

The *Local Guide* for 1843, . . . [says]:

Above the rapids, which occur about 50 miles from its (Essequibo's) mouth, there are no inhabitants except Indians. The same is the case with the two great tributaries of the Essequibo, the **Cayuni and the Mazarnni. . . . A short distance above their junction these rivers become impeded by rapids.** *V. C., 172.*

1880. E. F. im Thurn.

The timber tract . . . extends toward the interior as far as the lowest cataracts on the various rivers. It is at present impossible to cut timber profitably beyond the cataracts, owing to the difficulty of carrying it to market. So that an imaginary line roughly parallel to the seacoast, and cutting each of the great rivers at their lowest cataracts marks the furthest limit from the coast of this tract. This part of the country . . . once contained much valuable timber . . . but this has now been felled and destroyed.

V. C., III, 407–408.

The forest tract immediately succeeds the timber tract, and . . . is everywhere covered by dense forest, as yet untouched by the wood-cutter. . . .

The first rapids called Aretaka . . . separate the timber from the forest tract. These rapids interrupt the course of the river for upwards of fifteen miles. *Same, p. 409.*

1888. Michael McTurk.

The lower part of the Cuyuni River is very much obstructed by falls, which, though not so numerous as those on the Mazaruni, are larger and tortuous in their course. The latter circumstance adds to the difficulty and danger of getting over them. . . .

I made the preliminary survey of a route for a road from Cartaboo . . . to the placer mines on the Puruni. . . . **For the first 30 miles from Cartaboo the country is comparatively level. . . . Beyond this** distance **the land** rises and **is mountainous and rocky.** . . . Unless at very considerable expense, I do not think a road could be constructed over this latter part of the route, owing to the rugged nature of the country. *B. C., VII, 322.*

1892. Michael McTurk.

The old road from . . . Morabisci Creek to the open water above the Camaria Falls was reopened and is much used by the miners on the Cuyuni. . . . **By using this road some of the most dangerous falls on the Cuyuni River are avoided.** *Same, p. 329.*

1896. Marcus Baker.

From the mouth of the Cuyuni to the **first fall, called Akayu,** is, according to Schomburgk's map, 8 miles.

Beginning with Akayu fall the river widens and is much impeded by islands, rapids and cataracts for 8 miles. In this stretch Schomburgk enumerates 5 cataracts and rapids, as follows, going up-stream: Acayu cataract; Saregatava cataract; Turrung rapid; Ematuba great cataract around which is a portage; Arcabusa cataract; and lastly Camaria cataract. **The whole series is sometimes called the Camaria rapids.** It is a dangerous part of the river. **Schom-**

LOWER ESSEQUIBO REGION—(Continued).

burgk on July 26, 1841, came near losing his life here, and from time to time accidents occur by which travelers are drowned. Small hills appear on either bank at Akayu fall, which on the Great colonial map are shown as a low range parallel to the Essequibo. *U. S. Com., III, 292–294.*

1896. Michael McTurk.

The Portage at Little Matop on the Cuyuni River, . . . **The many rapids in the Cuyuni**, particularly in the immediate neighborhood of this portage, **renders it impossible, except at very great risk of life and expense, to get timber from any distance above to the spot**, . . . There is suitable timber below, but it is quite impossible to bring it up against the stream and over the rapids. . . .

The preliminary survey of this road extends **about 18 or 20 miles from Cartabo**. . . . **The country** over which this survey has extended **is high and undulating, and, excepting a few miles from its commencement at "Carlabo," covered with virgin forest.** This excepted distance is covered with scrub-brush, and razor-grass. *B. C., VII, 336.*

1898. Michael McTurk.

The falls and rapids on the Cuyuni, Massaruni, and Essequibo, although difficult and tedious to pass, offer no insuperable difficulties to navigation, which is conclusively shown by the numbers of boats which annually pass up and down, and in those cases where accidents have occurred it has been on account of the carelessness or incompetency of those in command of the boat. . . .

The falls of the Essequibo do not present the same difficulties of navigation as those on the Cuyuni and the Massaruni, and are chiefly situated in the first 20 miles from the junction of the three rivers. *B. C.-C., App., 404.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

The Venezuelan Case also suggests that, by reason of the cataracts in the lower part of the Cuyuni, Massaruni, and Essequibo, within a short distance from the point where these three rivers join, access is rendered impossible from the lower to the upper parts of these rivers, is also incorrect, as I know from personal knowledge of both the Cuyuni and the Essequibo. In neither of these rivers—in fact, **on none of the large rivers of British Guiana—are there any falls properly so called, except on the upper reaches,** where there is no occasion for traffic. *Same, p. 407.*

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN; DEFINITIONS.

——. British Case.

There are three systems of mountains on the possible line of boundary that may be said to be well marked.

1. On the north, **the Imalaka Ridge** runs west-north-west and east-south-east between the head waters of the Barima and Waini on the north-east and the Cuyuni and its affluent the Guaran on the south-west.

2. **Mount Roraima** . . . with its spurs running out in every direction, it separates the waters running to the Orinoco from those running to the Essequibo and the Amazon.

3. On the south of the colony there are found **the Akarai mountains** running east and west . . . separating the waters of those rivers [Takatu and Corentin] from those belonging to the basin of the Amazon. *B. C., 145-146.*

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN; DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

——. British Case.

With the exception of these three mountain ridges the watersheds of the country are generally flat and low, rarely exceeding an elevation of three hundred feet. *B. C., 146.*

The basin of the Essequibo and its tributaries is divided from that of the Caroni and Orinoco by a range of hills which runs past Upata and joins the Imataka range. *Same, p. 8.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Towards the west its [**Cuyuni-Mazaruni Basin**] **connection with the Orinoco** is so intimate as to render the dividing line between the two **scarcely perceptible.** *V. C., 33.*

The Cuyuni-Mazaruni Basin, being the region bounded on the north by the Imataca mountains; on the east by the Blue mountains, by the lowest falls of the Cuyuni and Mazaruni rivers, and by the Ayangcanna and Pacaraima mountains; and on the west by the divide separating the waters of the Caroni and Orinoco rivers from the waters of the Cuyuni and Mazaruni rivers, **is a geographical and political unit,** the material occupation of a part of which, by the nation first discovering and exploring it, is in law attributive and constructive possession of the whole. *Same, p. 222.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is wholly inaccurate. The Spaniards neither discovered nor explored the region described, and had no knowledge of it as a geographical or political unit. *B. C.-C., 132.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

This **Cuyuni-Mazaruni Basin is a tract of land geographically separate from and independent of the Essequibo River.** *V. C., 222.*

——. British Counter Case.

The Cuyuni-Mazaruni Basin is **not** a tract of land geographically separated from and independent of the Essequibo River. *B. C.-C., 139.*

There is no such range as the so-called Ayangcanna Mountains.
Same, p. 5.

——. [1897.] Marcus Baker.

The great escarpment on the south bank [of the Mazaruni], being the edge of the Merumé plateau, approaches nearer the river and is crowned with higher blocks, apparent survivals of erosion. One of these is called Camacusa mountain and the other **Ayangcanna*** mountain.

Brown, in his Canoe and Camp Life, page 390, describes **Ayangcanna** as a "huge mountain forming a most singular picture." *U. S. Com., III, 357-358.*

1850. Kenneth Mathieson.

In the outline Codazzi's map of the Province of Guiana is more correct than those generally met with, but in detail it is extremely incorrect. For instance, **Upata is placed at least 40 miles farther to the east than is its**

* Ayangcanna Mts. of great colonial map.

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN; DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

real position; the same error is observable as to the position of the Mission villages, with the addition of their being placed by him 50 miles south beyond their true latitude. His two Rivers Yuruan are altogether wrong, as the large one so named in his map, with its source in the South Sierra, is only known as the Cuyuni, and the small river, called Yuruan by him, instead of taking its source from the west by north of the village of Tupuquen, takes its source and principal waters above 60 miles to the east of it, and is solely known as the Yuruary, till its waters, with that of the Miamo fall into the Cuyuni, or his Yuruan, within two miles of the south-west of Santa Rosa. The Yuruary embraces all the streams that take their rise north-east and south-east of Tupuquen, and the latter branch in particular is of considerable magnitude. I have frequently crossed all the rivers now mentioned, and know them intimately, although I did not discover their wealth. *B. C., VI, 182–183.*

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN; FORESTS.

——. Venezuelan Case.

In further explanation of the difficulty of access to this region, it should be stated that **its eastern part is covered with a dense forest which renders access to it, overland, well nigh impossible.** A few paths or trails have been at times chopped out by the Indians, but these, under the stimulus of a tropical sun and abundant moisture, are speedily overgrown. *V. C., 31.*

——. British Counter Case.

The statement in the Venezuelan Case as to "the Cuyuni-Mazaruni basin," that "its eastern part is covered with a dense forest which renders access to it overland well nigh impossible," **loses all force in view of the fact that roads have easily been made when required, and are easily maintained by use.** *B. C.-C., 17.*

——. British Case.

The interior of the country westward of the Essequibo is covered with thick forests stretching almost without a break from the sea to the Imataka mountains, and filling the whole valley of the Cuyuni.

The **belt of forest** between the Pariacot Savannah and the River Cuyuni. *B. C., 8.*

——. British Counter Case.

The country **between the Cuyuni and Massaruni is** occupied throughout its whole extent by **virgin forest.** *B. C.-C., 19.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The Cuyuni-Mazaruni basin is an interior region, the eastern part of which is **covered by dense tropical forests** and is made inaccessible from that side by these forests, by mountains, and by falls and rapids. *V. C., 33.*

1823. Wm. Hilhouse.

The very existence of the Colony is precarious, except **the immense belt of forest that forms its southern boundary,** be occupied by some friendly power. *B. C., VI, 33.*

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN; FORESTS—(Continued).

1896. [1898] E. J. Monge.

During the latter part of this journey [from Angostura to Tumeremo], and before reaching Tumeremo, **a well-defined line of thick forest was visible on our left**, running in a general direction from northwest to southeast. After leaving Tumeremo we traveled in a southwesterly direction some fifteen or twenty leagues to a place called Boca del Monte, where a stockyard is located. **Boca del Monte is situated at the entrance to the forest region**, the line of the forest here running from northeast to southwest. From Boca del Monte we traveled in a southerly direction though a little to the east, for a distance of about ten leagues through a country covered by **an impenetrable forest. The road is cut directly through this forest, and connects Boca del Monte with the Venezuelan town of El Dorado at the junction of the Cuyuni and the Yuruan.**

V. C-C., III, 327–328.

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN; SAVANNAS.

——. British Case.

If the course of the Curumo and Yuruari be followed upwards from the Cuyuni, it is found that as the ground rises towards the watershed **the forest is replaced at some distance from the Cuyuni by open plateaus called savannahs**, which were **formerly known under the collective name of the Pariacot Savannah.** *B. C., 8.*

——. British Counter Case.

The savannahs do not extend to the Cuyuni, but are separated from it by a broad belt of forest. *B. C.-C., 18.*

It is difficult to define the exact width of the belt of forest which separates the savannah from the Cuyuni. . . . By this road [made by Venezuela] it is about 33 miles [from the Cuyuni] to the edge of the Savannah. Up the Yuruary it is two days' voyage before the savannah is reached.

Same, p. 19.

1850. Kenneth Mathison.

The distance from Upata to the Missions or village of **Tupuquen is 140 miles over extensive tracts of undulating open pasture-lands,** through occasional large patches of woods, and narrow but deep streams. *B. C., VI, 182.*

1880. Michael McTurk.

We turned up the Urawan. . . . There is a considerable fall here in rainy weather called Rurreewa, . . . The Savannah opens down to the creek a little below this place, on the opposite side. . . . About a mile farther we came to a landing. . . . The path leads from this over the Savannah to Cayou, which is the nearest Venezuelan town or village. About a mile from the landing, along the path, is the nearest house, Francisco's. It is a two days' journey over the Savannah along this path to Cayou. From Francisco **the Savannah is open and undulating, with clumps of trees several acres in extent here and there.** *V. C.-C., III, 249.*

1895. [1898] Arthur Hamilton Baker.

On the 2nd January [1895], Inspector Barnes, myself, and the six policemen **were taken prisoners and taken to their station, El Dorado.** On the 12th January we started at 8 A. M. for Sua-Sua riding, proceeding along

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN; SAVANNAS—(Continued).

the road, or rather bush track, which had been recently made. **We travelled in a northerly direction, and arrived at Sua-Sua at 4.30 in the afternoon, the distance being 33 miles. Until Sua-Sua was reached we came to no open country or savannah. The track was through bush the whole way. . . . Sua-Sua is a cattle ranch of recent origin . . . The country between Sua-Sua and Upata is savannah,** interspersed here and there with swamps and small woods.

B. C.-C., App., 405–406.

1896. Marcus Baker.

About six hours' journey by canoe from the mouth [up the Yuruari] is "a series of rapids," . . . it is here that Codazzi's map indicates the head of navigation. . . . A few hours' journey farther up the river is a yet greater fall. . . . **A little above this the savanna reaches the banks in places, first on the eastern, and later on both banks.**

On emerging from the river's wooded fringe to the open savanna, Campbell climbed a small hill a half mile from the river and obtained a delightful view. Far in the distance, and from west around to northeast, were seen high mountains "probably those bordering the Orinoco. The view was diversified by nearer hills and large savannahs as far as the eye could reach, woods bordering the creeks and rivers, and clumps of trees in all directions. There was a fine breeze; a thunderstorm was passing in the distance; and the setting sun illumined the whole. Altogether it was very pleasing."

It is hereabouts that Dixon's map indicates the limit of the savannas toward the southeast. *U. S. Com., III, 327–328.*

1896. [1898] E. J. Monge.

In the early part of 1896 I made a trip from Trinidad to Angostura, entering the Orinoco by way of the Macareo. . . . After remaining a short time at Angostura, I descended the Orinoco as far as the Caroni and San Felix. **Leaving San Felix and traveling in a southeasterly direction,** our party **crossed a range of hills somewhat wooded,** but easy to traverse. Descending on the other side of this range, we reached **Upata, which lies in a savannah country. From Upata we proceeded through savannahs to Guacipati. From the latter place** we continued to **El Callao and** from there to **Tumeremo,** traveling **all the time through savannahs.** *V, C.-C., III, 327.*

1898. Michael McTurk.

These savannahs do not touch the Upper Cuyuni, but are separated from it by a thick belt of forest which decreases in depth until at its narrowest part near the Uruan it is upwards of a day's journey on mules to the edge of the savannah, or about 30 miles. *B. C.-C., App., 403–404.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

This tract of country which extends a considerable distance, namely, across the head of the Missaruni, and as far as the Cuyuni, is also everywhere covered by forest but interspersed with elevated treeless plateaux rising out of the forests. These plateaux in no way correspond with the savannahs; in fact, the country north of Mount Roraima to the Cuyuni River, at the junction of the Uruan, can in no way be described as savannah. **The suggestion** in the Venezuelan Case **that the savannahs stretch from the Orinoco down across the great bend of the Cuyuni to the very centre of the great basin, and even beyond is, therefore, incorrect.** *Same, p. 406.*

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN—OBSTACLES TO RIVER NAVIGATION.

——. British Counter Case.

The **obstacles to navigation on the Cuyuni below the Uruan are distributed** along the whole course, **and are not**, as the Venezuelan Case suggests, **confined to the lower part, where indeed they are less formidable than further up**. The difficulties, such as they are, of navigating the Cuyuni up and down stream are the same, whether it be approached from the Uruan or from the Essequibo. *B. C.-C., 16.*

1741. Thomas Hildebrandt.

Sunday, April 23.— . . . ate breakfast with my people on the indigo plantation, and then pushed on my journey to beneath **the great fall, called by the Indians Ematobo.** Reached there safely in the evening at 6 o'clock, and stayed there over night. . . .

Monday, April 24.—While my people carried the things to **above the great fall** and with great difficulty dragged the two boats overland, I meanwhile washed the sand and examined the rocks, . . . When the things were again loaded in the boat I again came to a difficult fall, where I ate my midday meal and had again to have the things taken out of the boat and the boats dragged over again ; this done, went on to **a fall named Awarontaru.** . . .

Sunday, April 30.— . . . came to **a great fall named Tokeyne, where we had great** (er) **tronble to get up** than we had yet had anywhere, the height of the above-named fall being $4\frac{1}{2}$ fathoms. If I had not had the luck of six Indians, who showed themselves helpful in dragging over my boat, I should have found it impossible to get up. *B. C., II, 32-33.*

1755. Don Eugenio Alvarado.

From the disemboguement of the waters of the **Cunuri to** where they enter **the River Essequibo, through the rivers** named [**Yurnari and Cuynni**], the distance is from **twenty-five to thirty days of wearisome navigation, on account of the falls and rapids**; and it is necessary that the boats be very small, like canoes, made from the bark of a tree. *Same, p. 108.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The dangerous fall, Wakupang, . . . is the commencement of the second series of falls. . . . The river [Essequibo] is studded with islands. . . . Valuable forest trees become abundant along its banks; but **the impediments which the numerous rapids throw in the way will for some time render these treasures unavailable to the Colony.**

We . . . commenced . . . the descent of the third series of falls, caused by a small range of mountains, through which the river has broken itself a passage. *B. C., VII, 29.*

1880. Michael McTurk.

We camped above the Yenia-ah Falls [some 40 miles more or less up the Cuyuni from its mouth] **above which none of us had ever ascended.** Before this fall there are two portages. . . . After passing the second of these, the river for some miles is free from any large falls such as require the boats to be unloaded and hauled over, Yanamoo and the Payuco being the largest. While hauling up the falls at Wohmopoh [the canoe wrecker], we saw some Indians (Acowois) . . . from the head of the Urawan . . . on their way to Georgetown. . . . At Wohmopoh . . . there is a portage.

V. C.-C., III, 248.

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN—OBSTACLES TO RIVER NAVIGATION—(Continued).

1893. Michael McTurk.

The Cuyuni . . . is very much obstructed by falls in its whole course up to and above the Uruan police station. *B. C., VII, 333.*

1895. Michael McTurk.

No ordinarily laden boat should take more than two and a half or three days to arrive at the top of the Camaria Road [about twenty miles].

Same, p. 336.

1896. Marcus Baker.

From the mouth of the Cutuau river to the Toroparu hills on the southern bank [of the **Cuyuni**] is 22 miles. In this stretch the river forms a circular arc nearly a quadrant in extent, running first south, then bending slowly around to west. Low hills appear on either bank. The river is **studded with many islands, impeded by numerous rapids, and dammed by the "great and dangerous" fall Wakupang. This fall is the beginning, as one descends the river, of a "series of falls and rapids" which, continuing 14 miles, terminates at Otupikai island,** a little above the Cutuau river. In this stretch Hilhouse, ascending the river, enumerates "**Warara rapid; Watoopegay rapid, small but very long;** Totowou creek, N. bank; Watoopegay; Copang creek, N. bank; Bayuma creek, S. bank," where the river is clear of islands, and 150 yards wide; "**Waycourny fall, long and difficult; rocks like the slag of a glass house;**" then the river clear of islands, and **lastly Acueywaugh fall,** which by his estimate is 220 feet above sea level. *U. S. Com., III, 298–299.*

Near the mouth of the rivulet Arakuna, begin **a series of rapids, which continue almost without interruption for 20 miles.** The river here runs "through black granite with detached upright masses with round tops, on which grow stunted bushes." Its course is shaped like a long letter S. From the beginning of these rapids at Schomburgk's Yamemure cataract downstream to Aricari rapids of Schomburgk is 20 miles. The elevation of the river at the head of these rapids was estimated by Hilhouse to be 300 feet. **The total fall of the river in this 20-mile stretch was also estimated by him to be 80 feet, of which 30 feet occurs at the great cataract called the** *Canoe Wrecker*, about 15 miles from the head of the rapids. *U. S. Com., III, 303–304.*

1898. Michael McTurk.

I have during the last twenty-five years made upwards of twenty journeys to Uruan and back, and the **average time** occupied in each journey up the river would be about **sixteen days, and the return journey down stream would be considerably less.** I have recently made it in as short a time as five days.

B. C.-C., App., 403.

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN—ROUTES OF TRAVEL, ACTUAL AND PROPOSED.

——. British Case.

The natural, and until recent years the only, route of communication through the belt of forest between the Pariacot Savannah and the River Cuyuni was by the Rivers **Uruan** and **Yurnari** or by the Curamo which were impassable for want of water during half the year. The Cuyuni was always open to traffic from the Essequibo. *B. C., 8–9.*

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN—ROUTES OF TRAVEL, ACTUAL AND PROPOSED—(Continued).

——. British Case.

The only permanent means of access to by far the greater part of the upper portion of this basin is by these streams themselves. . . . The savannahs about the Upper Yuruari can, it is true, be approached from the Orinoco; but **to the valley of the Cuyuni the only access always open through the dense forests until the last few years was by the Cuyuni itself,** . . . and to the valleys of the Essequibo, the Rupununni, the Siparuni, and the Massaruni, the only access is by these streams. *B. C., 161–162.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Annama and Acarabisi . . . present . . . the means of connecting the Pomeroon and Moroco coast with the upper Cuyuni, where that River is comparatively free of obstacles. *B. C., VII, 27.*

1857. Venezuelan Case.

In . . . 1857 . . . many parties were anxious to try their fortunes at the diggings, . . . but **the route was always by the coast rivers or else by sea to the Orinoco.** *V. C., 180.*

1857. Lieutenant-Governor, Demerara.

Mr. Shanks will take charge of an expedition . . . to ascertain the practicability of opening up a route in the direction of the River Cuyuni . . . clearing portages alongside the rapids so as to obviate as much as possible the heavy work of dragging up the batteaux and corials against the stream. . . . Mr. Bratt . . . placed himself at my disposal, and **I have detached him by the ordinary route of the Orinoco, to the actual scene of the gold discoveries.** *B. C., VI, 203.*

1857. Court of Policy.

Ordered . . . Mr. Shanks **to ascertain the practicability of a route by the Cuyuni River to the present gold-fields at Upata.** *Same, p. 204.*

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

These . . . mines . . . of Tupuquen . . . are . . . roughly speaking, of, at the very least, **twenty or thirty days' journey from the mouth of the Cuyuni.** *V. C., III, 151.*

1891. Michael McTurk.

If it is decided that a station is to be put up at the mouth of the Uruan, the matter must be taken in hand while the dry weather lasts, as **it is** not only a very laborious but **also dangerous undertaking to ascend the Cuyuni at any other time.** *B. C., VI, 253.*

1894. James Rodway.

Post up the Cuyuni near its junction with Yuruan. . . . **The** police who reside there have to **perform a very hazardous and long journey of forty or fifty days to reach it and then are cut off from all communication until relieved.** *V. C., III, 349.*

CUYUNI-MAZARUNI BASIN—ROUTES OF TRAVEL, ACTUAL AND PROPOSED—(Continued).

1894. George G. Dixon.

It takes our Government from five to six weeks to reach their frontier station [Yurnan] whereas the Venezuelan outpost . . . probably is in direct communication with their capital by road and wire . . . I . . . proved . . . that the Yuruan frontier station can be reached in fourteen days from Georgetown . . . by steamer to the Barima falls, on foot overland, by the route I have opened, to Kuyuni, and in paddle-boats up that river.

B. C., VI, 353.

1894. Combined Court.

Mr. Weber proposed . . . that this Court . . . ask . . . the Governor that . . . he give orders to make the plan for a wagon or mule road from the point where the Barima river is no longer navigable up to the Upper Cuyuni river, and if found practicable, to the Yuruan river, with the end of putting these rivers in direct communication. He said that his Excellency knew, no doubt, how difficult it was to reach that very important District; that **the numerous falls of the Cuyuni river made the trip to the Yuruan river so troublesome and difficult, that almost seven weeks were required to reach that place.** *V. C.-C., III, 209.*

1895. Michael McTurk.

This journey to Urnan has been the quickest on record, occupying a little over 13 days. *B. C., VII, 335.*

1896. Michael McTurk.

The Journey which extended beyond the Uruan, occupied 28 days there and back. *Same, p. 336.*

The cutting of the line for a **reconnaissance survey of the country between Cartabo Point . . . to the mouth of the Mara-Mara on the Purnni, has been completed** . . . while I do not consider that the difficulties . . . in the construction of . . . a road or railway are such that modern engineering cannot easily overcome, I do not think the financial condition of the Colony at present . . . will justify any attempt of the kind, considering the **very rough nature of the country to be traversed.** *Same, p. 337.*

1898. Michael McTurk.

The suggestion in the Venezuelan Case **that the natural access to the Upper Cuyuni** (and because of the suggested absence of falls and rapids in that part of the river, consequently to the whole of it) **is from the Orinoco over the savannahs is without foundation,** and a hastily formed conclusion founded on a want of knowledge of the river. *B. C.-C., App., 403.*

DEFINITIONS.

AMACURA.

——. British Case.

In discussing the western boundary of the Dutch Colony it is necessary to bear in mind that in the eighteenth century it was not unusual to describe as the **Barima** the river now called the **Amacuru**, and that now called the Barima as the Amakuru. The rivers are so marked in D'Anville's Maps and in many others, but the usage was not uniform. *B. C., 50.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

AMACURA—(Continued).

1762. [1897] George L. Burr.

In 1762, on the title-page of the first directory of the Essequibo colony, one finds the **River Amacura** named as its western boundary; but a study of the context shows that the Amacura here meant must lie **east** of the Barima, for the Barima does not appear among the streams of the colony. It is probably the Amacura of the D'Anville map, so much appealed to by Governor Storm van's Gravesande, the author of this directory. . . . While it is, I am convinced, a misconception to hold that, when . . . Gravesande spoke of the **Barima**, he **meant** the **Amacura**, it is none the less certain that, when he here speaks of the Amacura, it was not the Amacura proper, but, at farthest, the stream we now know as the Barima. And so with the following directories, till their cessation in 1769. *V. C.-C., II, 140.*

AMAZONS.

1615. Report of Council to Spanish King.

Some settlements and that in particular they [**Dutch**] have three or four from the River Marañon [**Amazon**] to the Orinoco. *B. C., I, 43.*

1621. Cornelis Janssen Vianen.

Diverse products and fruits which might be found or raised on the mainland of America, between Brazil on the east and the River Orinoco on the west, in and about the river **Amazon.** *V. C., II, 17.*

1624. West India Company (the Nineteen).

The deputies of Zeeland will please bring with them the instructions given to the ships **bound for the Amazons**, and further information as to the condition of things in that quarter; and the deputies of all the Chambers shall come instructed, so as to devise means for the securing of that region, whether by the planting of suitable colonies or otherwise. *U. S. Com., II, 38–39.*

1626. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Resolved, To look about for a capable person for director of the business **in the Amazons**; and, if a capable one can be found to send him thither by the first ship. *Same, pp. 41–42.*

To the Orinoco shall be consigned, etc.

Note by Prof. Burr. This is only one of a group of decisions reached at this session as to the destination of vessels. Ships were also to be sent "**to the Amazons**" and "to Brazil," among other places. *Same, p. 42.*

Resolved to fit out the yacht Out-Vlissinghe for Angola, in order there to buy up some negroes and to carry them **into the Amazon or to the places where the Company may have its folk lying.** *Same, p. 44.*

ARABIAN COAST.

1898. Editor of British Case.

The **Arabian Coast** is the local name for the coast district between the Essequibo and Pomeroon. *B. C., 106.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

BARIMA.

——. British Case.

The word **Barima** does not necessarily indicate either Point Barima or the river of that name, but usually **means the district** on either bank of the river **stretching to the Amakuru on the one side and to the Waini on the other.** *B. C., 7.*

In discussing the western boundary of the Dutch Colony it is necessary to bear in mind that in the eighteenth century it was not unusual to describe as the **Barima** the river now **called** the **Amakuru**, and that now called the Barima as the Amakuru. The rivers are so marked in D'Anville maps and in many others, but the usage was not uniform. *Same, p. 50.*

1762. [1897] George L. Burr.

In 1762, on the title-page of the first directory of the Essequibo colony, one finds the **River Amacura** named as its western boundary; but a study of the context shows that the Amacura here meant must lie **east** of the Barima, for the Barima does not appear among the streams of the Colony. It is probably the Amacura of the D'Anville map, so much appealed to by Governor Storm van's Gravesande, the author of this directory. . . . While it is, I am convinced, a misconception to hold that, when . . . Gravesande spoke of the **Barima**, he **meant the Amacura**, it is none the less certain that, when he here speaks of the Amacura, it was not the Amacura proper, but, at farthest, the stream we now know as the Barima. And so with the following directories, till their cessation in 1769. *V. C.-C., II, 140.*

CUYUNI.

——. British Case.

The word Cuyuni is constantly used of the district watered by that river and its tributaries. *B. C., 7.*

1680. Commandeur in Essequibo.

An old negro of the Company, recently poisoned **up in the Cuyuni** [*boven in de Cajoene*], as the Caribs pretend, by the Accoways. *B. C., I, 183.*

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have sent a negro **up in Cuyuni** [*boven in Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 185.*

1685. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The French in the Barima likewise come even **to the upper Cuyuni** [*komen se oock selfs tot boven in Cajoene*]. *U. S. Com., II, 172.*

[Another translation.]

The French in the Barima come and fetch them even as far as **up in the Cuyuni** [*komense oocke tot boven in Cajoene*]. *B. C., I, 188.*

[Still another translation.]

The French come into the Barima, and fetch them [*sic*] to **above on the Cuyuni.** *British Blue Book, Venezuela, No. 3 (1896), p. 60.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

CUYUNI—(Continued).

1686. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Savannah of the Pariakotts **up in the Cuyuni** River [*het savaen boven in Cajoene van de Pariakotten*]. *B. C., I, 201.*

1697. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Horses bought for you **up in Cuyuni** [*boven en Cyœnè*]. *Same, p. 213.*

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

September 17, [1699]. Jotte, the old negro, arrived from the **upper Cuyuni** [*van boven uijt Cioene*]. *Same, p. 216.*

November 17, [1699]. **In the forenoon** . . . Commandeur, . . . sailed from the fort to the bread plantation, from thence **took a trip to the Cuyuni,** [*een tour na Cioene*] . . . **and came back in the course of the afternoon.** *Same, p. 217.*

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

March 20 [1700]. Some trading wares also dealt out to the old negro Louis, in order to go and purchase some cattle, &c., **up in Cuyuni** [*boven in Cioene*]. *B. C.-C., App., 92.*

1701. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

January 8, [1701]. This morning there appeared here Samuel Stoffelsen, to whom some trading wares were dealt out with which to go **up in Cuyuni,** [*naar boven in Cioene*] and collect some cattle and rare birds. *Same, p. 135.*

January 31, [1701]. There also arrived from the dye store **up in Cuyuni** [*boven uijt Cioene*]. *Same, p. 139.*

March 1, [1701]. The Commandeur . . . proceeded **up stream to Cuyuni** [*boven na Cioene*].

March 3, [1701]. The Commandeur . . . again proceeded **up stream into the Cuyuni** [*weder na boven in Cioene*] in order to see what timber had been squared there by the negroes, **and returned again in the afternoon.**

March 4, [1701]. . . . there also arrived here . . . towards evening Mr. Hendrik van Susteren, who, as mentioned yesterday, had proceeded **up into Cuyuni** [*boven in Cioene*] with the Commandeur and had remained there overnight. *Same, p. 144.*

1710. Commandeur in Essequibo.

These [runaway slaves] are somewhat scattered **up in Cuyuni** [*boven in Cyoene*] among the Indians. *B. C., I, 234.*

1724. Court of Policy.

Another coffee plantation . . . (above the cassava plantation already laid out **in Cuyuni** [*Cajoene*]).

A new coffee plantation has also been laid out **in Cuyuni** [*Cajoene*], half-an-hour above that of your Lordships.

The plantations belonging to your Lordships are all in a very fair state, and the growth of the coffee is . . . flourishing well. It is computed that both **in Cuyuni** and at Bartica [*soo in Cajoene als op Barritique*] there are about 15,000 coffee shrubs, which are all in very fine condition. *B. C., II, 1–2.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

CUYUNI—(Continued),

1726. Court of Policy.

The coffee **plantation in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*].

The **grounds in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*] being better for this [coffee] culture. *B. C., II, 4.*

1727. Court of Policy.

We find the coffee **in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*] will not yield a sixteenth part of that which it did last year. *Same, p. 6.*

1730. Commandeur in Essequibo.

On the 29th and 30th September [1729] I inspected the coffee plantations **in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*] both **above and below the fall.**

Jan van der Meers . . . foreman at the coffee plantation **in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*]. . . . A small piece of land **in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*] has already been cleared and sown with indigo. . . . A new coffee plantation upon the Island Batavia, **in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 10.*

1732. Court of Policy.

A commencement [for an indigo plantation] has already been made to-day, and a clearing made and planted with indigo **up in the River Cuyuni** [*booven in de revier Caioene*]. *Same, pp. 14-15.*

1732. Commandeur in Essequibo.

On the 12th August of last year [1731] a beginning was made by nine negroes with cutting an opening for a new indigo plantation **in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 15.*

1733. Court of Policy.

The coffee and cocoa plantation **in Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*]. . . . The aforesaid plantation **at Cuyuni** [*in Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 17.*

1735. Court of Policy,

An able negro was drowned, who, having run away and fallen into the hands of the Indians, the director of the aforesaid plantation gave orders to the creole Jantie (who had been sent by the Commandeur **up in the River Cuyuni** [*na booven de Revier Caioeny*]) that, if he should find the negro among the Indians, he should put him in chains and bring him to the plantation. *Same, p. 20.*

1738. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The unhealthiness which prevails in **the Upper Cuyuni** [*boven in de Rivier Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 27.*

1739. West India Company.

Persuaded that minerals are to be found in the mountains **up in the River Cuyuni** [*boven aen de rivier Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 28.*

1739. Commandeur in Essequibo.

A piece of ore found **up in the chain of mountains of Cuyuni** [*boven in het Gebergte van Cajoene*]. . . .

The Undersigned is getting ready to make a journey . . . **to up in the River Cuyuni** [*naar boven in de Rivier Cajoenn*] to the high mountains here called the Blue Mountains. *Same, p. 30.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

CUYUNI—(Continued).

1741. Commandeur in Essequibo.
Shall get everything ready [for mining] **up in Cuyuni** [*boven in Cajoene*].
B. C., II, 35.

1742. Mining Engineer Hildebrandt.
Feb. 2, [1742]. Ready to set out again **to the River Cuyuni** [*na de revier Cajoene*].
Feb. 3, [1742] Set out again for Cuyuni [*weder na Cajoene*].
Feb. 28, [1742]. Set out again for **the Upper Cuyuni** [*aen na boven Cajoene*].
Same, p. 37.

May 1 [1742]. Sent off a boat to **the Upper Cuyuni** [*na boven Cajoene*].
May 5 [1742]. Came home from **the Upper Cuyuni** [*van boven Cajoene*] with the boat.
May 7 [1742]. Sent off a boat . . . to **the Upper Cuyuni** [*na boven Cajoene*].
May 11 [1742]. At 1 o'clock in the afternoon there came back safely from above the boat which on the 7th of this month I had sent to **the Upper Cuyuni** [*na boven Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 38.*

May 16 [1742[. Sent another boat to **the Upper Cuyuni** [*na boven Cajoene*].
May 20 [1742]. At 3 o'clock in the afternoon the boat . . . sent up on the 16th . . . came back **from above out of Cuyuni** [*van boven uijt Cajoene*]. *Same, pp. 38–39.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.
Courthial made an application to the Court for permission to cut a road through the wood **in the River Cuyuni** in order to bring mules and cows into the river overland by that road [*om een weg door het bos, in de Rivier Cajoene te moge maken om daer door over lant Muijl Ezels en koebeesten in de Rivier te brengen*]. *Same, p. 44.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.
[*De Spanjaerde begonne hoe langs hoe meer* **boven Cajouuy** *te naderen.*]
The Spaniards were beginning to gradually approach the **Upper Cuyuni**.
Same, p. 57.

[Another translation.]
The Spaniards were beginning to approach more and more **up in Cuyuni.**
V. C., II, 101.

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.
The design of founding a Mission **in the River Cuyuni** [*aen de Rivier van Cajoenij*]. *B. C., II, 63.*

1760. West India Company. Zeeland Chamber.
Your further remarks about **Rio Cuyuni** [*over Rio Cajoene*]. *Same, p. 185.*

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.
About ten of those [slaves] who were **on their way to Cuyuni** [*de weg van Cajoenij*] have been captured and brought back by the settler J. Crewitz, who lives below the fall. *Same, p. 212.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

CUYUNI—(Continued).

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Spaniards **up in Cuyuni** [*boven in Cajoenij*] are engaged in building boats. *B. C., II, 217.*

1764 B.C. III. 116 F (read)

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

I continue to have a good look-out kept on all the movements of the Spaniards **in the upper reaches of these rivers** [*boven deeze rivieren*], and have therefore charged . . . Tampoko, to go and live **near the first fall in the Cuyuni**, to make his way continually **up and down this river**, . . . and . . . to report to me upon all that occurs. *B. C., III, 131.*

1840. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

March 16.—Gave Postholder written instructions . . . The Postholder had just returned from having visited all the places **in the higher parts of the** Rivers Essequibo, Masseroeny and **Cayonny**. *B. C., VI, 90.*

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

In consequence of the general indisposition, . . . combined with the very great scarcity of provisions . . . the Akaway Indians of Winey and Barama have destroyed their habitations, and gone to reside with other Akaways **in the upper parts of the** Rivers **Coyoney** and Massaruny. *Same, p. 141.*

1891. Michael McTurk.

I left Kalacoon for **the Upper Cuyuni** River. *Same, p. 252.*

1891. Lieutenant-Governor.

Mr. McTurk proposes to start immediately on a fresh expedition **to the Upper Cuyuni**. *Same, p. 255.*

1894. Mr. Weber.

Mr. Weber proposed . . . a . . . road from the point where the Barima river is no longer navigable up to **the Upper Cuyuni** river. *V. C.-C., III, 209.*

1894. James Rodway.

A [British] boundary post **up the Cuyuni near** its junction with **Yuruan**. *V. C., III, 349.*

1897. Michael McTurk.

Peter Cornelisen . . . I know . . . was a Captain for the Carib Indians living in **the upper parts of the three rivers**. *B. C., VII, 233.*

EL DORADO.

1593. Antonio de Berrio.

Hearing the great news that there is about the expedition to El Dorado. *B. C., I, 1.*

The Indians assured me that . . . I should find a great river which is called Caroni which descends from Guayana . . . that there . . . the cordilleras end and the provinces of Guayana begin, and then come successively those of Manoa and **El Dorado** and many other provinces. *Same, p. 2.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

EL DORADO—(Continued).

1598. A. Cabeliau.

We made company to visit together the whole coast as far as the River Worinoque, so-called by the Indians, by the English Reliane, and by the Spaniards, **Rio El Dorado.** *B. C., I, 19.*

1750. Anonymous.

The great river Orinoco, the fame of which has spread throughout Europe on account of the celebrated city of **El Dorado**, or the Golden, which is now regarded as fabulous, is said to take its name or derivation from this fable. *B. C.-C., App., 190.*

ESSEQUIBO.

——. British Case.

[**The Colony**] **of Essequibo** was for a long period the chief settlement, and besides the district of the Essequibo and its tributaries **included** the rivers and districts of **Pomeroon, Waini, and Barima** on the west. Subsequently Demerara became the leading settlement and the seat of the Colonial Government has been at Georgetown in Demerara, Essequibo becoming the name of a county which included all the territory [in British Guiana] to the west of the Boerasirie Creek. *B. C., 7.*

1628. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Amazon, Wiapoco, Kiana [Cayenne], and so onward to **Essequibo.** . . . Goods for **Essequibo.** *B. C., I, 64.*

1632. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Regarding the petition of Anthoni Janssen Enpoina asking to be granted a sum in lieu of twenty months' wages **earned by him in Essequibo,**

As to the claim of Hendrik Munnix, **arrived from Essequibo;**

It was resolved to appoint a committee to settle with the **colonists from Essequibo and Cayenne;**

A committee to negotiate with Confrater van Pere touching his proposition **about the river Essequibo.**

Jan van der Goes shall be employed by the Company **on the river** of **Essequibo.**

Hendrik Munnix of Middelburg and Willem Jacobsz. Fasol of Oiltgensplate are engaged to sail to **the river Essequibo.** *U. S. Com., II, 66-67.*

1636. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

There was read and adopted the **letter for Essequibo**, to Jan de Moor and others. *Same, p. 70.*

1637. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Resolved, That the ship *de Jager* shall provisionally be made ready to be sent to Arguin and **Essequibo.**

Adriaen van de Woestyne, late cadet at the Castle of Arguin, at the wages of nine guilders a month, and taken along to **Essequibo** by Jan van der Goes as assistant. *Same, p. 71.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1637. Corporation of Trinidad.

When the enemy entered Guayana [Santo Thome], they carried off, among other things, the Most Holy Sacrament, which is kept by the enemy in their **fort at Macaruni** [Kykovoral].

When the enemy [Dutch] entered Guayana [Santo Thome] they took him [Andres] and Juan Gonçalez and carried them off to Amacuro and **Macaruni,** where the enemy have a fort on an island, and . . . they carried off the property which they took in Guayana, and the Most Holy Sacrament of the said town, which they keep in a house in the said **fort of Macaruni.**

B. C., I, 98–99.

1638. Instructions to J. Baptiste de Arezula.

They have carried off the Most Holy Host, and are keeping it under great guard and custody in **Essequibo, in the fort and settlement** which they hold **there.** *Same, p. 116.*

1639. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Then sail **to Essequibo** . . . after taking in the commodities which the Company has **in Essequibo** . . . in case of ill success, he offers his services **to remain in Essequibo** for three years . . . so as to remain **in Essequibo** in order to trade in the river and on the Wild Coast.

U. S. Com., II, 96–97.

1640. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

There were read **letters to Essequibo** and Arguin, which were approved [and ordered] to be sent as drawn up. *Same, p. 99.*

1657. Committee governing Walcheren cities.

There shall be equipped two ships, the one to the **Wild Coast, otherwise Essequibo.** *Same, p. 145.*

1657. Minutes of "Wet en Raed" of Vere.

The colony of the Wild Coast and river of Essequibo. *B. C.-C., App., 26.*

1672. Contract between Essequibo and Berbices.

Mr. Hendrik Rol, Commandeur of the Fort and **Colony of the River Essequibo and the appurtenant rivers and districts.** *Same, p. 45.*

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

December 28, [1699] . . . In the evening the Commandeur returned to the Fort from **Essequibo.** *Same, p. 76.*

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

January 9, [1700] . . . Mr. Adriaen Hollander arrived at the Fort from **Essequibo.** *Same, pp. 78–79.*

July 6, [1700]. At about 4 or 5 o'clock the vessel "De Jonge Jan" and our barque "Rammekens" came in sight and **anchored off Essequibo.**

July 7. . . . the clergyman stopped here on his way to the vessel "De Jonge Jan," lying at anchor about an hour and a-half from here. *Same, p. 107.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1701. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.
June 11, [1701]. Free **colonists of this river.** *B. C.-C., App., 158.*

1703. Muster Roll.
Muster roll of all retainers, . . . in the service of the . . . West India Company in the Chamber Zeeland, in the **Colony Essequibo**, [**includes** postholders in Demerary, Mahaicony, **Pomeroon and Cuyuni**]. *B. C., VII, 153.*

1705. Muster Roll.
Muster-roll of all retainers, . . . in the service of the . . . West India Company, Zeeland Chamber, in the **Colony of Essequibo**, [**includes** those in **Pomeroon and Wakupo**]. *Same, p. 154.*

1719. Court of Policy.
Commandeur and Council were ordered by the Directors of the Zealand Chamber, in . . . 1719, to issue a new notice forbidding any one to fell timber in the **Colony of Essequibo, or the rivers of Bonweron or Demerary.** *Same, p. 189.*

1724. Court of Policy.
That nation [Maganouts] intended to come and kill the Christians and ruin **this river** at the first opportunity.
According to reports received, the Maganout nation were killing all they could lay hands on **up in Essequibo.** *B. C., II, 2.*

1744. Court of Justice.
Two Spaniards on their way hither from Orinoco had been **arrested at** the Company's Post in **Waequepo**, and **asked if they would be allowed to arrive in the Colony or be sent back.**
It was **resolved to allow them to come here** this time, but that this must not be taken as a precedent. *Same, p. 43.*

1746. West India Company.
Something which might tend to the disadvantage of the Company or of the **Colony in Essequibo.** *Same, p. 46.*

1747. West India Company (the Ten).
Condition of affairs **in Rio Essequibo.**
Letters from the Commandeur . . . written **in Rio Essequibo.**
Commandeur **in Rio Essequibo.** *Same, p. 50.*

Could be found **in Essequibo** a competent surveyor.
Limits of this Company **in Rio Essequibo.**
We approve the Regulations about the granting of lands mentioned in the Resolution of the Court of Policy of **the Colony in Rio Essequibo.** . . . Whether it is possible to find out how far the **limits of the Company in Rio Essequibo do extend.** *Same, p. 51.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I flatter myself that the map of **this river** thereby transmitted may yet come into your Honours' hands.

I hope that the letters and papers by the "Juffrow Margareta" may yet come to hand, because I sent by her a map of **this river** made for your Honors.

B. C., II, 57.

1750. Report of Committee on the Commandeur's report.

No one whatsoever should be allowed to come into **the river**, much less make **a stay there**, unless he beforehand addressed himself to the Commandeur there, and asked him for permission **to stay in the Colony** for a stipulated period.

Same, p. 68.

1752. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The **river and Colony of Essequibo.** *Same, p. 73.*

1754. Muster Roll.

List of all **the . . . Company's servants** on the 11th October, 1754, **in Rio Essequibo** [**include those in Moruka,** Demerara and Mahaicony].

B. C., VII, 162.

1755. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The real limits of the **river of Essequibo.** *B. C., II, 102.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

The woods of the southern slope which form the defence of **Essequibo.**

Same, p. 109.

It is morally impossible to enter into negotiations of peace with the innumerable Chiefs of **the sources of Aquire . . .** seeing that these sources **are in the woods of the southern slope that protect the Colony of Essequibo.**

Same, p. 111.

From the Province of Guiana to the Dutch Colony of Essequibo there are two ways of journeying by sea. In both the **starting point is the Great Ships' Mouth of** the River **Orinoco.** *Same, p. 112.*

The most convenient navigation is to descend the Orinoco to its Great Ships' Mouth, then avoiding the coast to enter the Creek of Barima, facing the Island of Cangrejos, cross the Creek of Garambo, [Mora passage] ascend that of Baune [Waini] . . . **and so on by others** forming a species of zigzag **until the Creek of Moruca is reached. Here the Dutch have a** castle which they call the **Post.** *Same, p. 113.*

The forests of the southern bank [**of Cuyuni**], which serve as **a defence to the Colony of Essequibo.** *Same, p. 114.*

1755. Court of Justice.

Deserters from **this Colony** would be prevented from escaping so easily from **this river** to the Orinoco. *Same, p. 123.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1755. Muster Roll.
List of all the . . . **Company's servants** on the 1st June, 1755, **in Rio Essequibo** and Demerarij [**includes** those in **Moruka,** Mahaicony and Cuyuni]. *B. C., VII, 162.*

1756. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).
For the defence of the **Colony of Essiquibo.** *B. C., II, 127.*

1756. Director-General in Essequibo.
Report of the **Assistant of the Post Arinda up in Essequibo,** . . . report of the **Assistant in Essequibo.** *Same, p. 129.*

Jacob Steyner, **Assistant at** the Post **Ariuda.** *Same, p. 130.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.
The River Moroco, where the **Post of Essequibo** is situated. *Same, p. 148.*

1758. Director-General in Essequibo.
Lawrence Storm van's Gravesande, **Director-General of this Colony and of the rivers of the district of Essequibo.** *Same, p. 155.*

Well guarded and conducted as quickly as possible to **this River Essequibo.** *Same, p. 156.*

1758. Muster Roll.
List of all the . . . **Company's servants** . . . in service in the month of August, 1758, **in Rios Essequibo and Dimmerarij** [**includes** those in **Moruka, Cuyuni and Mahaicony**]. *B. C., VII, 163.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.
The address of the Governor of Cumaná's letter is: "To the Dutch Commandant residing **in Essequibo,**" which sounds very haughty and contemptuous. *B. C., II, 171.*

[Speaking of the destroyed **Cuyuni Post** Gravesande says] the ownership of **this portion of Essequibo.** *Same, p. 172.*

1759. States General.
The general Company . . . having the special direction and care of the **Colony of the River Essequibo and the rivers thereto subject.** *Same, p. 176.*

1764. Shareholders of West India Company.
The **Colony of Essequibo** comprises the district of the northeast coast of South America lying between the Spanish Colony, the Orinoco, and the Dutch Colony, the Berbices, and that the same is **crossed** not only **by** the chief river. **the Essequibo,** but **also by** several small rivers such as **Barima, Waini, Moruka, Pomeroon and Demerary,** from which it takes the name of the Colony of Essequibo and the rivers belonging thereto, though in the whole of the aforesaid district—at least, as long as it was under the direction of the West India Company, until the year 1750, no other river than the chief river of Essequibo was inhabited or populated. *B. C., III, 116.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1764. Register of the Colony.

Register of the **Colony of Essequibo,** Demerary, and dependent districts. Situated on the north coast of South America, 7° north latitude and 42° longitude from the Creek Abari on the east **to the River Amacura** on the north, comprising the Rivers Demerary, Essequibo, **Pomeroon, Waini,** and the great Creeks Maykouny, Maheyka, Wacquepo, and Moruka, being a stretch of land along the seacoast of about 120 [Dutch] miles of 15 in 1° belonging to the Chartered West India Company. *B. C., III, 118–119.*

1764. Muster Roll.

Monthly Report of the state of the Garrison **in Rio Essequibo and Demerarij,** together **with the dependent Posts,** on the last day of November, 1764. *B. C., VII, 164.*

1765. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The **Colony of Essequibo and rivers thereto pertaining.** *B. C., III, 124.*

Demerara . . . is situated between the two most extreme trading-places or posts **in Essequibo**—namely, the one, to the north, on the River Moruka, and the other, to the south, on the River Mahaicony, both of which rivers, as well as the others situate between, pertain to that Colony—which of course, shows undeniably that **Demerara** is one and **the same Colony with Essequibo.** *Same, p. 125.*

1767. Muster Roll.

Directory of the **Colony Essequibo, Demerarij, and dependent districts** in the year 1767. *B. C., VII, 166.*

1767. West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber).

Upon the States-General's Resolution of the 2nd September, 1751, this was then communicated to the Chief Participants, who . . . did declare their determination to continue to keep **Essequibo** with all the rivers appertaining thereto, from Rio Berbice **as far as the River Orinoco.** *B. C., III, 145.*

Demerara is situate between the two most extreme trading-places or posts on Essequibo, namely, the one to the north, on the River Moruka, and the other to the south, on the River Mahaicony, . . . it therefore, undeniably appears that **Demerara is subordinate to Essequibo,** and both together constitute **one** and the same **Colony.** *Same, pp. 145–146.*

This appropriation of Demerara which the Zeeland Shareholders are trying to effect for themselves, on **the claim that Demerara is subordinate to,** and is one and the same Colony as, **the Colony Essequibo,** rests upon, etc. *Same, p. 146.*

The natural **meaning of** the expression **" Essequibo and adjoined or subordinate rivers" is not** that which the Zeeland Chief Participants attribute to it (namely, that all the places which are situate on the mainland of the so-called Wild Coast, between the boundaries which the Chief Participants themselves have . . . defined as extending **from Moruka to Mahaicony, or from Rio Berbice as far as the Orinoco,** are "adjoined, subordinate to, and inseparable

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

from," the Colony Essequibo), **but, on the contrary, only** this, that under that description are comprehended **the various mouths and rivers, originating from Rio Essequibo or emptying into it**, which are marked on the map, **such as**, for instance, **Cuyuni, Massaruni**, Sepenouwy, and Magnouwe.
B. C., III, 147.

1768. Muster Roll.
Directory of the **Colony Essequibo cum annexis** at the end of 1768.
B. C., VII, 166.

1769. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).
Upon opening the letter-bag brought by the ship . . . recently arrived from **Essequibo cum annexis** at Ziericzee. *B. C., IV, 18.*

1769. Remonstrance of the States-General.
The Company . . . having the particular direction and care of the **Colony of Essequibo, and** of the **rivers which belong to it**, *Same, p. 29.*

The **Colony of Essequibo and appurtenant rivers.** *Same, p. 32.*

1769. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).
The **Colony of Essequibo and adjacent rivers.** *Same, p. 35.*

Certain undertakings of the Spaniards from Oronocque against different **Posts of the Colony of Essequibo.** *Same, p. 36.*

The States-General have demanded of us an account of the state of defence of the **Colony, cum annexis.** *Same, p. 40.*

The aforesaid **Colony of Essequibo cum annexis . . . the colony of Essequibo and adjacent rivers.** *V. C., II, 205.*

The Director-General of Essequibo cum annexis. *Same, p. 209.*

1771. Commandant of Guiana.
An enemy could reach the said villages by different ports of the Orinoco . . . and with still more ease by coming from **Essequibo, a Dutch Colony up the Cuyuni**, which is navigable as far as the innermost and most important of all these Missions [*y mucho mas facil si suben desde Esquivo, Colonia Olandesa, por el Rio Cuyuni navegable hasta lo mas interior, e precioso de todas estas Misiones*]. *B. C., IV, 89.*

1774. Muster roll.
Muster Roll of the Military at **Essequibo**, made July 4, 1774, [**includes** persons at **Arinda and Moruka**]. *B. C., VII, 168.*

1775. J. C. v. Heneman.
The Colony of Essequibo, . . . description and . . . detailed explanations of the extent of this . . . colony **and its rivers.** . . .
And, **the colony and river of Essequibo** being of such extent that the mouth of this river can be reckoned at 6, and even nearly 7 hours wide. *V. C., II, 224.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1776. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

They had found a copy of a letter from the Postholder of Moruca, wherein he complains . . . of the claims which the aforesaid Spaniards advance to **the districts subject to the river Essequibo.** *B. C., IV, 140.*

They [Presidial Chamber, Amsterdam] had been grieved to learn the excesses committed by the Spaniards against the free Indians in **Essequibo,** as seen from the letter written by the Postholder of **Moruca.** *Same, pp. 140-141.*

1780. Muster Roll.

Muster Roll of the servants, . , . in the Service of the . . . Netherlands West India Company, in **Rio Essequibo,** . . . 4th . . . May, 1780 [**includes** persons in **Wakupo and Arinda**]. *B. C., VII, 174.*

1796. Commandant of Moruca Post.

Petition . . . addressed to his Excellency A. Beaujon, **Governor-General of both Rivers Demerary and Essequibo and Dependent Districts.** *B. C., V, 161.*

1796. Court of Policy.

Resolved: That the Articles of this Capitulation be . . . made known unto the Commander-in-chief and other Commanders of **the military posts in Essequibo, Moruca,** Courabana, Mahaica, and Mahaycony. *Same, p. 162.*

1796.

Diary of Governor of the **Colony of Essequibo, Demerary, and annexed Districts.** *Same, p. 163.*

1803. Court of Policy.

Minutes of the Proceedings of the Court of Policy of the **Rivers of Essequibo and Demerary and Dependent Districts.** *Same, p. 180.*

1804. Court of Policy.

Meeting of the Court of Policy of the **Rivers and adjacent Districts of Essequibo and Demerary.** *Same, p. 183.*

1804. Lieut.-Governor Myers.

The **Colonies of Demerara and Essequibo.** *Same, p. 186.*

1805. Court of Policy.

The **Colonies of Essequibo and Demerary, with their Dependent Districts.** *Same, p. 187.*

1808. Court of Policy.

Court of Policy of the **Colonies of Essequibo and Demerary.** *Same, p. 189.*

1811. Court of Policy.

Minutes of the Proceedings of the Court of Policy of the **Colonies of Demerary and Essequibo, with their Dependent Districts.** *Same, p. 198.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ESSEQUIBO—UPPER.

——. British Case.

In . . . 1810 a Carib Chief from **the Upper Essequibo or the Rupununi**, with his followers, visited the capital. *B. C., 104.*

1816. Court of Policy.

Dorothea Pieterse, inhabitant of the **Upper** River of **Essequibo.**

B. C., VI, 4.

1831. Rev. J. Armstrong.

I give you the following statement of the free colored people and Indians residing **up the Essequibo River.**

Having had an opportunity of going **up the River Essequibo** . . . I inquired of them. . . .

Their local situation is unfavorable to settling **up either the Essequibo or the Massaroony,** since there are a considerable number of inhabitants on each branch of the river, From this circumstance, . . . I conceive that the point of juncture, between the Essequibo and the Massaroony, would be the most convenient situation for my . . . proposed school. *Same, pp. 45–46.*

1832. Second Fiscal.

. The **Postholder of Mazaroony** states the Indians as well as free colored people **up the rivers** to be in a state bordering on starvation. *Same, p. 47.*

1832. Supreme Court of Colony of Essequibo.

There is a spar-cutting place **up the Essequibo.** Mr. De Bretton, a white person, lives there. It is a tide above the Buck place where I saw the bodies. I have known that place of De Bretton's eleven years. . . . Mr. de Bretton is an Englishman. *Same, p. 48.*

1834. Government Notice.

The Lieutenant-Governor has been pleased to appoint . . . the following . . . Justices of the Peace within the . . . Colony. . . .

Upper River Essequibo: Thos. Richardson. *V. C.-C., III, 174–175.*

1840. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

March 16.—Gave Postholder written instructions . . . The Postholder had just returned from having visited all the places in the **higher parts of the** Rivers **Essequibo,** Masseroeny and Cayonny. *B. C., VI, 90.*

1897. Michael McTurk.

Peter Cornelisen . . . I know . . . was a Captain for the Carib Indians living about **the upper parts of the three rivers.** *B. C., VII, 233.*

GUIANA.

——. British Counter Case.

There was no **province of Guiana,** and no defined tract of territory to which Spain became entitled by virtue of her settlement on the Orinoco. *B. C.-C., 137.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

GUIANA—(Continued).

1593. Antonio de Berrio.

The Indians assured me . . . I should find a great river which is called Caroni, which descends from **Guayana** . . . ; that there . . . the cordilleras end and the **provinces of Guayana** begin, and then come successively those of Manoa and El Dorado and many other provinces. *B. C., I, 2.*

These great provinces [**Guayana**, Manoa, El Doraldo and many others] lie between two very great rivers, namely, the Amazon and the Orinoco. . . . the river Caroni . . . is the one that comes from **Guayana.** *Same, p. 5.*

1595. Capt. Felipe de Santiago.

These territories [**Guiana**, Manoa, El Dorado] extend from the bank of the said River Orinoco along the windward side as far as that of the Marañon [Amazon], so that they lie between these two mighty and celebrated rivers. *Same, p. 10.*

1599. States General.

To make a voyage along the **Coast of Guiana** in America, there to seek the rivers of Wiapoco and Orinoco. *V. C., II, 12.*

1602. Shakespeare.

She is a region in **Guiana**, all gold and bounty. I will be cheater to them both, and they shall be exchequers to me: they shall be my East and West Indies. *Merry Wives, Act I, Sc. III.*

1603. William Usselinx.

The **province of Guiana** in America lies at a northern latitude of from 4 to 6 degrees or more, and extends from the great river Amazon to Punta de Araya or Trinidad. . . . Its situation is such that the nearest places inhabited by the Portuguese in Brazil are more than 300 [Dutch] miles away. Likewise the nearest places inhabited by the Spaniards are distant about 200 [Dutch] miles. *U. S. Com., II, 30.*

1613. Vargas, Governor of Margarita.

Coast of **San Thomé** of **Guiana.** . . . Santo Thomé de Guiana. *B. C., I, 35.*

1614. Don Juan Tostado.

60 leagues from that Government on the mainland at Santo Thomé which is **called the River Orinoco of Guiana.** *Same, p. 36.*

1666. Major John Scott.

The River Amazones bounds **this province** [**Guiana**] on ye south-east, whose north cape hath onely 38 minutes of north latitude and 335 degrees of longitude. . . . Oranoque bounds it on the north-west, whose Sotherne Cape hath eight degrees and 40 minutes of latitude, and 322 degrees of longitude. Between these two rivers Guiana fronts 230 leagues on the Atlantic Ocean. *Same, pp. 167–168.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

GUIANA—(Continued).

1666. Major John Scott.

Cape North, the Northerne Cape of the great Amazone, and Cape Brema, the Southerne Cape of Oronoque, by which all ye rest may be measured.

B. C., I, 168.

1737. Marquis de Torrenueva.

The Dutch are established within this demarcation and limits, on the continent of the **Province of Guayana**, and occupy with their cities and mills, the territory which stretches from the Orinoco. *B. C., II, 41.*

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

To dislodge the foreigners on the coast of the **Province of Guayana.**

Same, p. 86.

1773. Commandant of Guayana.

This **Province of Guaiana** is the most easterly part of the King's dominions in South America on the north coast, and its boundaries are: On the north, the lower Orinoco, the southern boundary of the Provinces of Cumana and Caracas; on the east, the Atlantic Ocean; on the south, the great River of the Amazons; and on the west the Rio Negro, the caño of Casiquiari, and the Upper Orinoco, boundary of the eastern and unexplored part of the Kingdom of Santa Fe.

B. C., IV, 111.

ITABO.

——. British Case.

"**Itabo**" is an Indian name for a waterway connecting two rivers, or two points on the same river, *generally made by the passage of boats* through intervening swampy ground. *B. C., 9.*

——. E. F. im Thurn.

We reached the point where the waterway leaves the river and passes along a narrow **itabbo, or artificial waterpath,** which connects the Moruka with the Waini River. This connecting passage is in all about 30 miles in length; but only about the first 10 miles of this is actually **semi-artificial itabbo, made by the constant passage of the canoes of the Redmen** through the swampy savannah. *U. S. Com., III, 261.*

1897. Marcus Baker.

These bayous or sloughs are locally known as **itabos,** a word variously spelled etabbo, itabbo, etc., and derived from *ita* or *eta*, a native word for the eta palm (*Mauritia*), and *abbo*, a water course. *U. S. Com., III, 243.*

MANOA.

1593. Antonio de Berrio.

The Indians assured me . . . I should find a great river which is called Caroni, which descends from Guayana, . . . that there . . . the cordilleras end and the Provinces of Guayana begin, and then come successively those of **Manoa** and El Dorado and many other provinces. *B. C., I, 2.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

MAZARUNI.

1637. Corporation of Trinidad.

When the enemy entered Guayana [Santo Thome], they carried off, among other things, the Most Holy Sacrament, which is kept by the enemy in their **fort at Macarnni** [Kykoveral].

When the enemy [Dutch] entered Guayana [Santa Thome], they took him [Andres], and Juan Gonçalez, and carried them off to Amacuro and **Macarnni**, where the enemy have a fort on an island, and they carried off the property which they took in Guayana, and the Most Holy Sacrament of the said town, which they keep in a house in the said **fort of Macarnni**. *B. C., I, 98–99.*

1686. Essequibo Council Minutes.

Jan Genasie, chief Captain of the Caribs **above in Mazaruni at the annatto store.**

Another **Carib Captain in Mazaruni.**

Above the **annato store in Mazaruni.**

When Makourawacke, with his tribe, were wishing to go to war with the Akuwayas up in Demerara, they . . . were advised to go and salt pork **above in the Mazaruni River**; . . . [and that] they should make war **far away in Mazaruni** and moreover **inland** . . . not against their and our friends who dwelt close by the Caribs and the annatto store. *Same, p. 202.*

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

August 14, [1699]. **Jan** . . . has **set out for the Upper Mazaruni** [*is na boven Masseroene vertrocken*] . . . to obtain some poison wood by barter.

August 27, [1699]. . . . In the evening the boy **Jan** Antheunissen **arrived at the fort from** the **Upper Mazaruni** [*van boven uijt Masseroene*] with fourteen or fifteen bundles of poison wood. *Same, p. 215.*

September 18, [1699] Jotte, the old negro, has **set out for the Upper Mazaruni** [*is na boven masseroene vertrocken*] . . . to bring down four or five slaves.

September 22 [1699]. In the afternoon Jotte, the old negro, **arrived from Mazaruni** [*uijt masseroene*] . . . bringing with him four female slaves, two children, and a boy. *Same, p. 216.*

1756. Director-General in Essequibo.

The colonist, Couvreur, D., who has just now come from **up in Mazaruni** [*boven Masseroenij*], where he lives. *B. C., II, 129.*

1840. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

March 16.—Gave Postholder written instructions . . . The Postholder had just returned from having visited all the places **in the higher parts of the** Rivers Essequibo, **Massaroney** and Cayonny. *B. C., VI, 90.*

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

In consequence of the general indisposition, . . . combined with the very great scarcity of provisions . . . the Akaway Indians of Winey and Barama have destroyed their habitations, and gone away to reside with other Akaways **in the upper parts of the** Rivers Coyoney and **Massarnny**. *Same, p. 141.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

MAZARUNI—(Continued).

1897. Michael McTurk.

Peter Cornelisen . . . I know . . . was a captain for the Carib Indians living **in the upper parts of the three rivers.** *B. C., VII, 233.*

NOVA ZEELANDIA.

1658. Committee governing for Walcheren cities.

There was read a short description by Cornelis Goliat of the Rivers Demerara, Essequibo, Pomeroon and Moruca, situated on the coast of Guiana, otherwise called the Wild Coast, and now **Nova Zeelandia.** *B. C., I, 146.*

1664. States-General.

Niew Middelburgh, situated in the district named **Nova Zeelandia,** lying on the mainland Wild Coast of America. *B. C.-C., App., 43.*

1686. West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber).

Concerning the populating and cultivating of the River **Pomeroon** . . . **formerly named Nova Zeelandia.** *B. C., I, 193.*

ORINOCO.

——. British Case.

Oronoque, the name given to the portion of the Orinoco district under Spanish control. *B. C., 29.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is certain that **the term Oronoque,** as used by the Dutch Commandeurs, **referred to the Spanish possessions at Santo Thome,** and excluded the Amakuru, Barima, and more easterly rivers. *B. C.-C., 65.*

1663. Commandeur in Pomeroon.

Having taken my commission with me **to Orinoco** and not desiring to risk carrying it with me upon the journey from Barima, since we continued our voyage in corrials, which were very small, it was left in the aforesaid galliote.
B. C.-C., App., 41.

[1666?]. Major John Scott.

Gromweagle . . . had served the Spaniard **in Oranoque.** *B. C., I, 169.*

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The French . . . have made themselves masters of the **fort in Oronoque,** . . . on his way to the **said Oronoque.** *Same, p. 187.*

1685. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Spaniards having resumed possession of **Oronoque.** *Same, p. 188.*

In 1684 . . . the French . . . raided the **Orinoco** and occupied Santo Thomé. *U. S. Com., I, 259.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ORINOCO—(Continued).

1723. Viceroy of New Granada.

At the mouth of the said river [**Orinoco**] where it enters the sea, has been founded the castle of Guayana [Santo Thomé] on the mainland.

V. C., III, 368.

1730. Commandeur in Essequibo.

It was his [Bishop of Orran] intention to go **to Orinoco.**

I learned that the Indians of Aguire (**a creek in Orinoco**) had . . . killed the aforesaid bishop. *B. C., II, 11.*

1737. Marquis de Torrenueva.

The Dutch are established within this demarcation and limits on the continent of the Province of Guayana, and occupy with their cities and mills, the territory which stretches **from the Orinoco** [according to Delisle's map cited below this should read *Essequibo*] **to** the before mentioned **Surinam**, a distance of 5°, from 318½° to 324° of [East] longitude [according to Delisle's map of 1703, *Atlas to V. C., map 37*]. *Same, p. 41.*

Read from B.C. II.

1750. Anonymous.

The great river **Orinoco**, the fame of which has spread throughout Europe on account of the celebrated city of El Dorado, or the Golden, which is now regarded as fabulous, is said to take its name or derivation from this fable.

B. C.-C., App., 190.

1763. Secretary in Essequibo.

The uncertainty of how they would be treated by the Spanish is the reason why I have this year dared to send no boats belonging either to the Company or to myself **out salting to the coast of Orinoco.** *B. C., II, 225.*

1777. Records of the Colonies of Essequibo and Demerary.

Postholder of Orinoco. [*Note by British Editor.* Clearly a synonym for the Moruka Post.] *B. C., VII, 182.*

1802. Governor-General in Essequibo and Demerara.

One detachment to the **Post of Orinoco.**

The detachment ordered to the **Post of Orinoco.**

The Postholder of the **Post of Moruca** comes to report that the detachment for that Post arrived there three days ago. *B. C., V, 175.*

1806. George Pinckard.

It is suggested that we may obtain a supply [of provisions] from the Spaniards, who have great numbers of wild cattle, . . . **upon the neighboring coast of Oronoko.** *V. C.-C., III, 224–225.*

1809. Henry Bolingbroke.

The west coast of Pomaroon **juts on the boundary of the Orinoko** where there is a military post established. *Same, p. 232.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ORINOCO—AS FAR AS.

1598. A. Cabeliau.
We made company to visit together the whole coast **as far as the River Worinoque**, so-called by the Indians, by the English Reliane, and by the Spaniards, Rio El Dorado. *B. C., I, 19.*

1637. Don Pedro de Vivero.
On the mainland in the jurisdiction of this Royal Audiencia and of the said Government and port of Guayana, English, Irish and others, with negro slaves, have established and settled themselves, from Cape North **up to the mouth of the River Orinoco.** *Same, p. 110.*

1751. Memorial of Shareholders of West India Company.
The Zeeland chief shareholders . . . are resolved, . . . to remain in possession of Essequibo, with all her subject rivers from River Berbice down **as far as the River of Orinoco.** *B. C., II, 72.*

1762. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).
We have seen that you [L. L. van Bercheyck] would not be disinclined to make a map, based on actual surveys, of the river of Essequibo. . . . Before we take any final decision . . . we must know . . . whether . . . there might not . . . be brought in the coast from Essequibo **as far as Orinoco**, with an accurate location of the mouths of the Rivers Pomeroon, Waini and Barima, and such others as empty into the sea between Essequibo and the Orinoco. *Same, p. 215.*

1767. West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber).
The Chief Participants . . . did declare their determination to continue to keep Essequibo with all the rivers appertaining thereto, from Rio Berbice **as far as the River Orinoco.** *B. C., III, 145.*

ORINOCO—DARDANELLES OF.

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.
The Dardanelles, of this territory [**the Orinoco**]. *B. C., VII, 36.*

1843. R. H. Schomburgk.
Point Barima, **the Dardanelles of the Orinoco**, as it has been lately styled by the Venezuelans. *Same, p. 50.*

1881. Earl Granville.
What has been called the **Dardanelles of the Orinoco.** *Same, p. 100.*

1887. Senor Urbaneja.
The so-called **Dardanelles of the Orinoco.** *Same, p. 129.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

ORINOCO—NEAR TO.

1634. Bishop of Porto Rico.

The Dutch, . . . who are now settled **close to this great river Orinoco,** in three rivers adjoining it, namely, the River Berbice, Corentine and Essequibo. *B. C.-C., App., 10.*

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

These circumstances deserve consideration, chiefly because the Dutch on the mainland are so **near to the principal mouth of the Orinoco** in three colonies called Surinam, Bervice and Essequibo, with large populations and fortifications, and are gradually approaching nearer. *Same, p. 181.*

The Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago . . . reports, referring to the first point:

Namely, what means could be used and employed for dislodging the Dutch from the Colonies in which they have established themselves **on the Orinoco.** *Same, p. 185.*

1745 (?). Father Joseph Gumilla.

Essequibo, Berbice, and Surinam, colonies of the aforesaid Republic established (**not on the Orinoco**), **but a good distance to the east of its mouths.** *B. C., III, 84.*

1757. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

That the Dutch were building a new fort on the River **Moruca** to the windward and at **a short distance from** the Ship's Mouth of the **Orinoco.** *B. C., II, 136.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

By means of the River Moroco, where the Post of Essequibo is situated, or by the River Waini, all which rivers flow out **near the mouth of the Orinoco.** *Same, p. 148.*

1761. Don Jose Solano.

Colonies of the French at the mouth of the Amazon and those of the Dutch of Surinam and Esquivo, **near the Orinoco.** *Same, p. 205.*

1772. Court of Policy.

With respect to the land in Maroco, the same is granted without determination of the number of acres and upon the express condition that the owner or owners are bound to establish an outpost there, it being a ground lying **close to the river Orinoco,** full two days' sail from here, not cultivated by the lessee for some time, and lying quite waste. *B. C., IV, 101.*

1776. J. C. v. Heneman.

At the creeks **near** Rio Barima and **Rio Orinoco** (Indian Posts, Moruca and Wacquepo). *Same, p. 169.*

1788. Governor Marmion.

The right was claimed of possession . . . of the River or creek of Guayna **near the outfall of the Orinoco.** *B. C., V, 62.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

QUAKE.

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

The Postholder . . . arrived with **13½ quakes, or about 2½ casks** of annatto dye. *B. C.-C., App., 74.*

SPANISH MAIN.

1806. George Pinckard.

On our left [from Essequibo] we approach the river Orinoko, and what is termed the **Spanish Main.** *V. C.-C., III, 225.*

TERRA FIRMA.

1595. Capt. Felipe de Santiago.

The mouths of the River Orinoco are situated on the coast of **Terra Firma,** to the windward of the Dragon's Mouth. *B. C., I, 9.*

WILD COAST.

——. British Case.

The Wild Coast—a name by which the coast between the Essequibo and the Orinoco had become well known. *B. C., 25.*

——. Editor of British Case.

The **Wild Coast** was the original name of the coast between the Orinoco and the Essequibo. *B. C., I, 136.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

This definition of the phrase **Wild Coast,** is an inadvertence whose repetition cannot be too earnestly protested against. Not "the coast between the Essequibo and the Orinoco," but the whole coast of Guiana, from the Orinoco to the Amazon, was what the Dutch called the **Wild Coast.** For this, as every scholar knows, it was their current and accepted name. No case has ever been adduced . . . of its use in any narrower sense. It is important that this be from the outset clearly understood. *V. C.-C., 8–9.*

1627. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The ship "Arent" shall go to **the Amazon and the Wild Coast.**

In the River of **Berbice on the Wild Coast.** *B. C., I, 63.*

Articles upon which the Directors of the West India Company . . . have . . . granted to Abraham van Peres, that he carry men . . . as settlers over **to the coast of the mainland (called the Wild Coast)** of West India, in the River Berbice. *Same, p. 64.*

1627. West India Company (the Nineteen).

It is hereafter permitted to send colonists to the **Wild Coast and adjacent islands.** *U. S. Com., II, 47.*

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

WILD COAST—(Continued).

1628. West India Company (the Nineteen).

Liberties and exemptions accorded and granted by the Chartered West India Company to private Individuals who on **the Wild Coast of Brazil** . . . shall plant any colonies.

To plant any **colonies on the Wild Coast** and the islands lying near and about the same.

Their intention of planting on any river **on the Wild Coast** or the islands thereabout. *B. C., I, 65.*

All patroons of the Colonies in the rivers or on the islands shall be allowed . . . to navigate and trade on **the whole Wild Coast from the Amazon to the Orinoco, inclusive, and all the islands adjacent thereto.*** *Same, p. 67.*

1631. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Van de Mart was authorized to make up a cargo for the liers **on the Wild Coast in Essequibo.** *U. S. Com., II, 64.*

1632. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Cargoes serviceable **on the Wild Coast.** *Same, p. 65.*

1649. West India Company.

Ship de Lieffde, . . . destined **to the Wild Coast and so on to Essequibo.** *Same, p. 112.*

1656. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The **Wild Coast** extending from the River Amazon to . . . degrees northwards. *B. C., I, 137.*

1657. Cornelis van Lodensteyn.

The coast of Guiana, situate in America on the **Wild Coast** between two and five degrees, . . . and as far inland as shall be convenient. *Same, p. 140.*

1657. Proceedings of Provincial Estates of Zeeland.

New settlement on the **Wild Coast of Essequibo** and places thereabout, extending from 1° to 10° north of the Equator, between the Rivers Orinoco and Amazon. *Same, p. 141.*

1657. Committee governing Walcheren cities.

There shall be equipped two ships, the one to the **Wild Coast, otherwise Essequibo.**

There was read a letter from Cornelis Goliat, offering his services for honest employment on the **mainland Wild Coast.** *Same, p. 145.*

1658. Committee governing for Walcheren cities.

There was read a short description by Cornelis Goliat of the Rivers Demerara, Essequibo, Pomeroon and Moruca, situated on the coast of Guiana, otherwise called **the Wild Coast,** and **now Nova Zeelandia.** *Same, p. 146.*

* These bold face words are italicised in the original manuscript.

DEFINITIONS—(Continued).

WILD COAST—(Continued).

1658. West India Company, Zeeland Chamber.

Put to the vote whether it would not be expedient to offer for hire to the Committee of **the Wild Coast** our Ship *Prins Willem* in order to carry folk over to Essequibo. *B. C., I, 146–147.*

The whole **Wild Coast,** it being from one to ten degrees more than 200 [Dutch] miles. *Same, p. 148.*

1765. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The River Demerara . . . belongs to the so-called **Wild Coast,** which is situated on the continent of America. . . .

We refer . . . [to certain papers] about the particular interest of the inhabitants of Zeeland in the aforesaid **Wild Coast** in general, ever since its first discovery, both in relation to navigation upon that coast and with regard to establishing and founding colonies and settlements thereon. *B. C., III, 124-125.*

1767. West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber).

The River Demerara . . . just like Essequibo, . . . also belongs to the so-called **Wild Coast,** situate on the continent of America. *Same, p. 145.*

A certain Contract made . . . between the Amsterdam Chamber, . . . in the name of the Company, . . . and the . . . Count of Hanau . . . granted to the aforesaid Count . . a certain stretch of land, to be chosen by that Count, on the **Wild Coast,** between the River Orinoco and the River Amazon, for cultivation, and for establishing of a Colony. *Same, pp. 146–147.*

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

In Hartsinck's map . . . the boundary line of "**Wildekuste**" which name was applied to the tract coextensive with the Dutch possessions, falls far short of the Amacura. *V. C., III, 152.*

CHAPTER II.

DUTCH TRADE AND FISHERIES.

DUTCH TRADE—IN GENERAL.

WITH THE PORTUGUESE.

1753. Director-General in Essequibo.

Three of our inhabitants, having gone up to the Essequibo . . . to try to establish some **trade with the Portuguese** along the Amazon, have been killed in a murderous way by the nation named Mapissanoe. *B. C., II, 88.*

1776. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Portuguese are trading above in the river as the Spaniards here below. *B. C., IV, 176.*

WITH THE SPANISH.

1673. Venezuelan Case.

By 1673 Rol was trafficking in the Orinoco **with the Spaniards.** *V. C., 83.*

1683. British Case.

In 1683 and onwards these [negro] **traders** are mentioned as periodically **visiting the Pariacot Savannah**, and as using the name of the Dutch Government to put an end to native wars on the Cuyuni, which hindered commerce. *B. C., 14.*

1693. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

No slight advantage . . . has . . . been brought the Company by your having started up in the River of **Cuyuni** a **trade in horses.** *B. C., I, 212.*

1701. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The **trade in horses up in Cuyuni** [*boven in Cioene*] does not go as briskly as it used to; still, the negro traders brought down, on the 24th March of this year [1701], 12 fine ones. *Same, p. 221.*

1733. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The want of **horses** having already become great, on your Honour's plantations as well as on those of the inhabitants of this Colony, I shall by all available means **try to obtain them from the Spaniards.** *B. C., II, 16.*

1734. Commandeur in Essequibo.

On the 19th February I . . . dispatched two **canoes to the Orinoco,** laden with thirty hogsheads of bread, four half-barrels of rum, and four of syrup, with a letter to the Governor **requesting** him to send **horses in exchange** therefor. . . . I sent François van der Maale . . . to superintend everything. On the 23rd April van der Maale came back and reported to me that he had obtained eighteen horses by exchange. *Same, p. 17.*

1735. West India Company (the Ten).

We praise and **approve all that has been done** by the Commandeur **with the Governor of Orinoco;** . . . and recommend your Honour to use every endeavour to cause that commerce to increase more and more. *Same, p. 21.*

DUTCH TRADE—IN GENERAL; WITH THE SPANISH—(Continued).

1735. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Governor of Orinoco urgently asking me for a good quantity of bread, not only did politeness demand that I send it to him, but there was another important reason in the **profits** which this colony **derives from trade with the people of the Orinoco.** As long as peace continues and this trade remains open, such things cannot well be avoided. . . . I sent to Orinoco the necessary rum, wares, etc., to pay for six mules, . . . the Governor has kept the wares, sending provisionally three horses on account, and . . . saying . . . that he would furnish the mules at the earliest opportunity. *V. C., II, 88-89.*

1750. Acting Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Fathers above in Orinoco **were inclined to open a trade** with this Colony **in cattle,** which they (if able to obtain permission therefor), would transport overland.

This would contribute very much to the raising and cultivation of trade, but on the other hand this would be a safe and open way . . . for the slaves who might come to run away from the Colony, unless a good Post were established thereon. *B. C., II, 69.*

1750. Anonymous.

They all make the utmost **efforts to collect the produce offered by** the Indian tribes and **the Spaniards settled on the banks of the Orinoco,** and also that offered by the smugglers who go down to the Kingdom of Santa Fe, and the Provinces of Barinas, Venezuela and Cumana. Of course a vessel rarely comes from Surinam and Berbice, owing to the distance and costliness of the journey; but as they are in correspondence with Essequibo and that colony is constantly sending its ships to the Orinoco, they all share in its benefit.

B. C.-C., App., 195.

1752. Director-General in Essequibo.

I shall send him [**Commandeur of Orinoco**] one [yacht] about the middle of November, together with some hardware for which he also asks, and shall receive mules in payment, which are in readiness there; it is my opinion that **we must keep on friendly terms with this man,** since that will always be more to our advantage than to our disadvantage. *B. C., II, 76.*

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

Concerning **the trade with Orinoco** that I shall do all that lies in my power to further the same as much as possible, . . . a new Governor has arrived in Cumana, who assures me that he will do all that lies in his power to maintain friendly relations. *Same, p. 91.*

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

Trade on that river **is** at present (as far as such trade can be) **fairly open and free.** *Same, p. 185.*

1764. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The hope of a **larger and safer trade with the Orinoco** is a matter which we count very advantageous for the colony. *V. C., II, 155.*

1765. Don Joaquim Moreno de Mendoza.

The inhabitants . . . enjoyed . . . **trading with foreigners** [at the old site of Santo Thome] of which they are here [Angostura] deprived.

B. C., III, 123.

DUTCH TRADE—IN GENERAL; WITH THE SPANISH—(Continued).

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

The chief **external trade of the Colony**, and the only one of interest to the present research, was that **with the Spaniards of the Orinoco**. Begun as early as 1673, it seems always to have been carried on by that inland water route connecting the Moruca with the Barima, and must have involved more or less of intercourse with the Indians of this region. Now connived at, now hampered by the Spanish authorities, it was always encouraged by the Dutch West India Company, save for a brief period of prohibition (from 1684 on) when they were clearly moved by distrust of their own Governor. *V. C.-C., II, 86.*

The Moruca became . . . as, to some extent it still is, **the regular avenue for the coasting trade with the Orinoco**—not alone that of the Essequibo, but that of the other Guiana Colonies as well. . . . It was doubtless by this route that the Spaniards carried on that early traffic with the Pomeroon and the Essequibo of which we know through the pages of Raleigh and of Jan de Laet. *Same, p. 97.*

Save for commerce and for the fishery at the river's mouth, the **Waini** seems **never** to have actually been **put to use by the Dutch.** *Same, p. 115.*

Of Dutch trade in this lower Orinoco region I find **no mention after the sixties of the eighteenth century.**

With the lower Orinoco in general, and especially with the Aguire, they **[Dutch] long maintained relations of trade,** and in such sort as to make doubtful their recognition of Spanish sovereignty there. *Same, p. 143.*

——. British Counter Case.

In reality the **trade with Orinoco,** by which is **meant** the **Spanish Settlements at and above Santo Thomé,** had nothing to do with the possession of Barima. *B. C.-C., 78.*

WITH INDIANS OF THE COAST.

1596. [1896] James Rodway.

Mr. Rodway . . . in . . . *Timehri* for December, 1896, . . . states that Ibarguen . . . in 1596 . . . says in his report that on his way from the Orinoco to the Essequibo he arrested "five **Flamencos** in a boat, who were **trading with the Indians of Barima.**" . . . Yet this . . . suggests only that Dutch trade to Santo Thomé of which we already know from the pages of Jan de Laet. *V. C.-C., II, 42.*

1638. British Case.

In 1638 it was reported to the King of Spain that the Dutch . . . **traded with the Indians of the Orinoco.** *B. C., 25–26.*

1673. Venezuelan Case.

By 1673 Rol was **trafficking** in the Orinoco **with** . . . **Caribs of Barima.** *V. C., 83.*

1680. Tiburcio Axpe y Zuñiga.

The frequency with which those of said nation **[Dutch] come to this river to trade among the natives,** . . . their perseverance in maintaining such trade and transactions with the inhabitants in violation of the agreements . . . as a result of these transactions this place has been lost several times.

V. C.-C., III, 13.

DUTCH TRADE—IN GENERAL; WITH INDIANS OF THE COAST—(Continued).

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

They [**Indians**] meet you with the tart answer that they can get plenty of these (goods offered) by **trade in Barima** and other places, which partly squares with the truth, on account of the trade which the French from the islands carry on there. *V. C., II, 44.*

1683. [1897] George L. Burr.

Prior to 1683 little is known of the **relations of the Dutch with the Barima**; but, so far as known, they **were of trade alone** and did not differ from those of other Europeans trading in that river. *V. C.-C., II, 137.*

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Much [**annato**] was supplied **from Barima.** *B. C., I, 186.*

1700. Venezuelan Case.

As regards the **Barima,** there is **no** record of any attempt whatever to **trade there during this period** [1700–1725]. *V. C., 93.*

1723. Antonio de Guerrero.

The river has neither garrison nor defense of any kind for preventing and hindering the incursions of the **Hollanders** and other foreign nations sailing on that sea, and having several settlements near the said river Orinoco, this gives them a chance to freely introduce themselves daily and frequently by the river, going far into the interior and **trading with said Indians.** *V. C.-C., III, 19.*

1735. Court of Policy.

The Commandeur brought forward the matter of Jan Cauderas, . . . informing them that this aforesaid Cauderas, as settler of this Colony, had . . . sought a permit from his Honour, **to collect** the **debts** of his comrade named Jeronimus Marseleijn, which he had left **outstanding among the Indians in the River Barime,** to the satisfaction of his creditors in this river. *B. C, II., 20.*

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

With which [slave trade] are united **other branches of commerce** they have held **with the Caribs** in balms those countries produce, such as marana or copaiba, carapa, anatto, cotton, hammocks, birds, wild animals and a small number of horses. *B. C.-C., App., 182.*

1764. [1897] George L. Burr,

Down to this time [1764] . . . there is in the records no mention of any Dutchman's sojourning in the **Barima for** any purpose save that of **trade.** *V. C.-C., II, 132.*

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

They . . . met the colonist Diederik Neelis **coming from Barima.** *B. C., III, 127.*

1768. [1897] George L. Burr.

The Dutch documents . . . know little enough of the Barima after 1768, . . . Gravesande did not again urge it as the boundary; . . . **Not** even a **Dutch trader is again heard of in the Barima.** The West India Company, which theretofore had always encouraged the colonial trade to the Orinoco, issued in 1761 its instructions that so far as possible this trade be transferred to the

DUTCH TRADE—IN GENERAL; WITH INDIANS OF THE COAST—(Continued).

Spaniards and carried on, not from Essequibo to Orinoco, but from Orinoco to Essequibo. This policy was loyally and effectively carried out; and within two years the current of trade was flowing the other way. *V. C.-C., II, 136.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

The [Essequibo] Colony's trade . . . was mainly a **trade with the natives**. . . . this was at the outset, and for more than a quarter of a century of its existence its exclusive function, . . . and for many decades this remained its [the Company's] chief source of income, and the object of its most jealous care. *Same, p. 82.*

WITH INDIANS OF THE INTERIOR.

——. British Case.

Besides their enterprise upon the coast, the Dutch had also before the end of the seventeenth century penetrated far into the interior. **Negro traders were employed** by the Company **to travel among the Indians and obtain by barter the products of the country.** *B. C., 14.*

Upon the Cuyuni, Massaruni and Essequibo the Dutch very early had established an **extensive trade.** *Same, p. 81.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

Trade, from the first, knew far less narrow limits than settlement. That **with the Indians** was carried on (1) by the West India Company's outrunners, and (2) by its posts, and (3) by private rovers. The routes of the outrunners are little known; the rovers were irresponsible and heedless of frontiers; the posts were few, fixed, certain, and had a military and political as well as a commercial use. *V. C.-C., II, 88.*

Trade with the Indians in the upper river [**Mazaruni**] **began early**, but no regular post was ever maintained there. *Same, p. 176.*

1680. [1897] George L. Burr.

The earliest mention of the river [**Cuyuni**] I have found in the Dutch records is that in Commandeur Abraham Beekman's letter of June 28, 1680, when that river, temporarily closed by an Indian war, is called "**our provision chamber.**" *Same, p. 146.*

1681. Commandeur in Essequibo.

By reason of the Accoway war **in Cuyuni**, of which you have heard, the **trade** in hammocks . . . has **resulted badly.** *B. C., I, 184.*

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have sent a negro up **in Cuyuni** in order . . . to establish peace between the Akuways and the Caribs, so as by this means **to get hold of the wild-pig hunting there** as formerly. *Same, p. 185.*

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Gabriel Bishop, and other interlopers from Surinam, spoil not only that [annato] trade [in Barima], but buy all the letter-wood, . . . as well as madder oil and hammocks. . . . They traverse and overrun the land **right up to** [or even into] **the River Cuyuni** itself. *Same, p. 186.*

DUTCH TRADE—IN GENERAL; WITH INDIANS OF THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Copaiba and curcai are much bought up by the Spaniards. The war which various nations there [**in Cuyuni**] carry on with one another has been the cause that Daentje the negro has not been able to get so far up among that nation. *B. C., I, 186.*

1685. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Daentje, **the negro has come back** . . . [from the Cuyuni] **without** bringing with him **a single pound of balsam.** *Same, p. 188.*

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

August 14, [1699]. Jan . . . has **set out for** the Upper **Mazaruni** . . . **to obtain** some poison wood **by barter.**

August 18, [1699]. This morning the negro **traders set out for the Upper Cuyuni** [*naar boven in Cioene*] in order **to procure** some **horses.**

August 27, [1699]. In the evening the boy Jan Antheunissen **arrived** at the fort **from** the **Upper Mazaruni** [*van boven uijt Masseroene*] **with** fourteen or fifteen bundles of **poison wood.** *Same, p. 215.*

September 17, [1699]. . . . Jotte, the old negro, **arrived from** the Upper **Cuyuni, bringing** with him two parcels of **bread,** and having come down for a canoe in which to fetch the remainder of the bread.

September 23, [1699]. . . . Jotte again **set out for Cuyuni, to fetch** the remainder of the purchased **bread.**

Saturday, October 17, [1699]. Two Caribs . . . arrived from the **Upper Cuyuni,** bringing tidings that the old negro **traders** . . . had not set out from the dye store until the 20th September. *Same, p. 216.*

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

January 27, [1700]. . . . There arrived **from Mazaruni** the old negro **Big Jan,** who had been sent thither upon the 2nd November last, **bringing** with him 10 quakes of **oriane dye,** 30 quakes of **bread,** 8 quakes of **pork,** and 4 quakes of **fish.** *Same, p. 218.*

March 14, [1700]. Arrived **Sam,** the negro, **from Mazaruni, bringing** with him twenty parcels of **bread,** twelve quakes of oriane **dye,** and (?) parcels of **pork,** &c., sent down by Big Jan. *Same, p. 219.*

April 10, [1700]. There **arrived** here . . . the old negro trader **Big Jan,** with his boy Sam, **bringing** with them **from Mazaruni,** 22 parcels of **bread,** 22 parcels of **pork,** and 3 quakes of *paaij,* together with some other trifles. *Same, p. 220.*

October 18, [1700]. There came here the old negro traders, Big Jan, Jan Swart, "Handsome Claesje," and Lieven, to each of whom **trading wares** were **dealt out** for the purchase of oriane dye. . . . Jan Swart and "Handsome Klaseje" [go] **up to Cuyuni** [*boven naar Cioene*]. *Same, p. 221.*

1701. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

January 20, [1701]. . . . In the afternoon there arrived here from . . . the negro trader Lieven, bringing with him some provisions.

January 21. . . . the above-mentioned negro trader came here with the Indians he had taken with him and brought back again, who had served as pad-

DUTCH TRADE—IN GENERAL; WITH INDIANS OF THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

dlers on the journey to and fro, and who were ready to proceed thither with him again. These were paid for their services, and fresh trading wares were dealt out to the above-mentioned trader, in order **to proceed up stream again to acquire more goods by barter,** whereupon they departed. *B. C.-C., App., 137.*

1730. Commandeur in Essequibo.

It having been found . . . that divers **inhabitants of this Colony** allow **trade** to be caried on **in the rivers of Massarnni and Cuyuni** through the medium of their slaves or free Indians whom they send out for that purpose, both for the exchange of red slaves and other things; and whereas those two rivers had for years past been kept for the private trade of the Honourable Company, each and **every one is hereby expressly forbidden to carry on any trade** in them under the penalty of confiscation of the vessels, slaves, and other goods, and the imposition of an additional fine of 50 Caroly guilders. *B. C., II, 10.*

1731. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

That . . . you have forbidden to **private** colonists the **trade** in the rivers Mazaruni and Cuyuni **meets our full approval.** *V. C., II, 83.*

1747. **Inventory of trading goods at the Cuynni Post.**

In the year 1747 of the transfer of accounts to the former Postmaster and stock of the same, as follows:

[Detailed list of cloths, looking glasses, knives, beads, etc. used in the **Indian trade.**] *Same, p. 297.*

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I think it would be best . . . to prohibit until further orders **traffic with the Indians** on the Rivers **Essequibo, Massarnni,** and **Cuynni.** *B. C., II, 65.*

1774. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Postholders draw their pay, and, . . . furthermore, some **wares for the Indian trade** instead of regular rations, and they have freedom of trade, whereby, . . . they make quite a fair living. *B. C., IV, 123.*

1790. Captain-General of Caracas.

The **trade which the Indians** of the province of Guayana are wont to **carry on with** the colony of **Essequibo** is done in corials or canoes, by way of the rivers Cuyuni and Curumo.

It . . . appears that the territory . . . between the northern side of the Cuyuni and Essequibo is liable to overflow, and **no . . . traffic is carried on by land,** but only through rivers or bayous, and **it is controlled exclusively by the inhabitants and natives,** no other person being admitted by them. *V. C., III, 401–402.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

The [Essequibo] Colony's trade . . . was mainly a trade with the natives. . . . This was at the outset, and for more than a quarter of a century of its existence its exclusive function, . . . and for many decades this remained its [the Company's] chief source of income, and the object of its most jealous care. *V. C.-C., II, 82.*

PARTICIPATED IN—BY SURINAM DUTCH.

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

In **Barima** I have had one of the Company's servants take up his abode, since there is much annatto and letter-wood there and it is close by Pomeroon. Recently, too, it has been navigated as many as two or three times by Gabriel Biscop and exploited with great success, much to the prejudice of the Company. . . . That **trade**, both there and in Pomeroon, **I have forbidden to him**, and to all others as well. *U. S. Com., II, 158–159.*

[Another translation.] I have caused one of the Company's servants to reside in Barima, as much annatto and letter-wood is obtainable there, and it lies near to Pomeroon, and has recently been navigated two or three times by Gabriel Bishop, and traded in with great success, to the great prejudice of the Honourable Company. . . . **I have prohibited him and all others trading from there and in Barimaroome** * [*sic*]. *B. C., I, 185.*

1684. Commander in Essequibo.

Gabriel Bishop, and other **interlopers from Surinam, spoil** not only that [**annatto**] **trade** [**in Barima**], but buy up all the letter-wood, . . . as well as madder oil and hammocks. . . . They traverse and overrun the land right up to the river Cuyuni itself.

To check this I have caused a small station to be made in Barima, and Abraham Baudaart, who is there [in Pomeroon] as Postholder . . . shall occasionally visit those places and encourage the Caribs to trade. *Same, p. 186.*

1717. Petition of Free settlers in Essequibo.

It is now nearly five years since we have been prohibited . . . from trading, as well within as without this Colony **in** Red Indian slaves, balsam, &c., . . . [and] must see the profits, which were to be expected therefrom, accrue before our eyes to our neighbours, to wit, **the colonists of Surinam and Berbice.**

[**Traders from**] **Surinam and Berbice** . . . **traffic in** the Rivers **Marocco, Weijne, Barima, Pomeroon, Orinoco, Trinidad,** and wherever it is convenient to them. *Same, pp. 246–247.*

We cannot . . . comprehend what is the object of Y. H. in prohibiting the business [trading in Indian slaves] to us seeing that **you cannot hinder those from Surinam and Berbice**—yea, not even French, English and other foreign nations. *Same, p. 248.*

1724. Governor of Cumana.

As soon as I arrived in this Government . . . news was frequently sent me that many foreigners—**the Dutch from Surinam and Berbice**—came to these places trading, in vessels, and penetrating more than 100 leagues up the Orinoco, and more than 30 above Angostura, the Fathers lamenting the trade carried on with the Caribs, the sale of tools, stuffs, wine, spirits, guns, and other arms, which they exchanged for a large number of Indian slaves. *B. C., III, 78.*

1728. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

The Secretary, H. Gelskerke . . . communicated to us a certain letter written by Jan Batiste from the Post in Wacquepo, . . . in which information was given that the **Spaniards** of the Orinoco **had** with armed force **taken possession of a Surinam vessel** fishing in the neighbourhood of the aforesaid river. *B. C., II, 7.*

* Note by George L. Burr. The reading "Barimaroome" finds no warrant in the manuscript; it is clearly "Baumeronne," a common spelling of the name of the Pomeroon. *U. S. Com., II, 158.*

PARTICIPATED IN—BY SURINAM DUTCH—(Continued).

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

If this prohibition [against sale of fire arms to Indians] extended only to the Colonies of Essequibo and Demerara, this would cause much damage to the colonists, . . . for a much greater number are sold by the neighbouring Colonies. **The itinerant traders** . . . always have an ample supply of them.

B. C., II, 67.

1750. Anonymous.

They all make the utmost efforts to collect the produce offered by the Indian tribes, and the Spaniards settled on the banks of the Orinoco, and also that offered by the smugglers who go down to the Kingdom of Santa Fe and the provinces of Barinas, Venezuela and Cumana. Of course **a vessel rarely comes from Surinam and Berbice, owing to the distance and costliness of the journey;** but as they are in correspondence with Essequibo, and that colony is constantly sending its ships to the Orinoco, they all share in its benefit. *B. C.-C., App., 195.*

1757. Director-General in Essequibo.

Complaints having been repeatedly made by the Commandant of Orinoco concerning the evil conduct in Barima of **the traders, or wanderers,** as well **from Surinam** as from here, I have written circumstantially to the *ad interim* Governor there, Mr. I. Nepven, whose reply is awaited daily. *B. C., II, 131–132.*

PARTICIPATED IN—BY FRENCH AND OTHERS.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The Dutch trade into the interior . . . was in no sense exclusive, . . . it was **participated in** . . . **by** . . . **Spaniards, [and]** . . . **French** as well. *V. C., 90.*

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

They [Indians] meet you with the tart answer that they can get plenty of these [goods offered] by trade in **Barima** and other places, which partly squares with the truth, on account of the **trade which the French from the islands carry on there.** *V. C., II, 44.*

The wares already begin to depreciate in price and value, through the **multitude of foreign traders,** a medium axe being worth only 7 shillings, the rest accordingly. *U. S. Com., II, 157.*

1684. British Counter Case.

There is no evidence whatever that the Spanish were at this time trading in the interior of Guiana at all. . . . Save for this interruption (of the French . . . **in 1684) the Dutch** at this time **enjoyed the whole trade of the Cuynni, Massaruni, and Essequibo.** *B. C.-C., 61.*

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

In order somewhat to check this [trade by French and Surinam Dutch], I have caused a small station to be made in Barima, and Abraham Baudaart, who is there [in Pomeroon] as Postholder in place of Daniel Galle, who is going home, shall occasionally visit those places and encourage the Caribs to trade in annatto and letter-wood **which the French** even from the islands in the river **frequently come with their vessels to fetch.** *B. C., I, 186.*

PARTICIPATED IN—BY FRENCH AND OTHERS—(Continued).

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

[Another translation.]

In order somewhat to check this, I have caused a small shelter to be made in Barima, and Abraham Baudardt, who is stationed there [in Pomeroon] as outlier in place of Daniel Galle, who is going home, shall occasionally visit that place, and encourage the Caribs to the trade in annatto and letter-wood, **which even the Freneh** from the islands **frequently come and carry off with their vessels.**

U. S. Com., II, 159–160.

This trade [to Orinoco] is falling off, by reason of the **various foreign traders** and our neighbors, who cause the price of merchandise to fall.

Same, p. 161.

1685. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The **Freneh in the Barima** come and fetch them even **as far as up in the Cuyuni,** and have burned there the houses of the Pariacots, and have driven them away. *B. C., I, 188.*

[Another translation]

The **French in the Barima** likewise **come even to the upper Cuyuni** to get them [hammocks] and have there burnt the houses in the Pariacotten [and] driven them away. *V. C., II, 52.*

1686. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Daentje, the Company's old negro, [has just come] . . . from the savannah of the Pariakotts up in the Cuyuni River. He has been away for fully seven months, and was detained quite three months by the dryness of the river. . . . **The Freneh are making expeditions through the country** up there [in Cuyuni] in order to buy up everything. *B. C., I, 201.*

1717. Petition of Free settlers in Essequibo.

The **Freneh and English** barques **are not behind-hand** [in the Orinoco trade]. *Same, p. 247.*

We cannot . . . comprehend what is the object of Y. H. in prohibiting the business [slave trade] to us seeing that you cannot hinder . . . **French, English and other foreign nations.** *Same, p. 248.*

1750. Anonymous.

This **trade** is equally sought for and **carried on** from time to time, **by the Freneh of the Island of Granada,** . . . They also send their schooners or launches with brandy, fine linens, velvets and hats; returning with money, balsam of copaiba, and Carib hammocks; but they do not trade regularly, as the distance is costly, and when a vessel goes, it takes ten or twelve hundred pesos worth. *B. C.-C., App., 195-196.*

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—BY PERMISSION OF SPAIN.

——. Venezuelan Case.

Even while it [Cuyuni horse trade] lasted it was carried on in what was **confessedly Spanish territory.** *V. C., 96.*

During a part of the 18th century the Dutch, **with the permission of Spain,** and together with other nations, traded to the main mouth of the Orinoco river, and to other parts of the Orinoco delta. *Same, pp. 223–224.*

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—BY PERMISSION OF SPAIN—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

Spain controlled the **trade** of the Orinoco **from Santo Thome upwards**, but, except in this respect, it is untrue that the Dutch trade to the Orinoco River and to other parts of the Orinoco delta **was by permission of Spain.**

B. C.-C., 133.

——. Venezuelan Case.

In the interior Cuyuni-Mazaruni basin, the **Spaniards** for a time **permitted** both the **French and the Dutch to trade.** *V. C., 101.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is . . . certain that until Santo Thome was reached **no Spanish permit was required.** *B. C.-C., 65.*

1665. Clemente Gunter.

He entered the Orinoco River . . . with a permit from Theodoro Saes, Governor of . . . Booruma.

He had come to this city . . . to collect some few debts for clothing sold on credit to two of the inhabitants . . . [he said] Governor . . . Viedma had granted him a **permit to come up to this city** . . . to inform said Governor as to who were the debtors. *V. C.-C., III, 11–12.*

1702. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I can no longer delay in making Y. H. acquainted with the great mortality of horses in this Colony, there being already almost 100 head dead through mange and other forms of sickness. That truly is a great loss to the Colony, the more so since the **Spaniards will no longer permit any trafficking for horses on their territory.** *V. C., II, 68–69.*

1711. British Counter Case.

In 1711 a new Governor at Trinidad seems to have **stopped the trade to Orinoco**, but in 1712 the traffic was renewed. *B. C.-C., 67.*

1726. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

On the 14th March, [1726], **Jan Batiste and Hendrik van der Win were sent to Orinoco** for the aforesaid purpose [buying balsam], and also to buy red slaves, **and were given a letter to the Governor of that river.** *B. C., II, 3.*

1734. Commandeur in Essequibo.

It is . . . to be feared that . . . we shall suffer great need of horses, to obviate which I have by all available means tried to make arrangements with the Governor of Orinoco, and to put the trade, both in horses and other things, upon a firm footing. . . . He has politely excused himself, and **this trade will be possible only by the Governor's connivance and during his pleasure.** *V. C., II, 85.*

1750. Anonymous.

The Spaniards from Barinas and other smugglers come down to the Dutch colonies with cargoes of tobacco from Barinas and money, and return with the goods aforesaid; and an occasional one ventures to take a cargo from the Islands of Granada or Martinique, carrying only the aforesaid goods in demand by the French. *B. C.-C., App., 196.*

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—BY PERMISSION OF SPAIN—(Continued).

1750. Anonymous.

The same smugglers are wont to travel by land with a hundred, two hundred or more mules for Essequibo, bringing them from the plains and driving them behind the town of Guayana, at six or seven days' distance; but they do not frequently use this route as it is long and troublesome, and on account of the rivers and ravines in which they lose numbers of cattle.

It must necessarily follow that **what has been conquered** in the Orinoco **will be lost if** the Governor of Cumana carries out rigorously the exclusion of what the people of the river require, . . . or the **prevention of their trade with the Dutch.** *B. C.-C., App., 196.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

There are no foreigners navigating the Orinoco, that is, above Guayana, for at its mouth and up to the neighbourhood of the said fortress they do so freely, but without being able to land in the said provinces, **nor do any more trade than the fortress allows**, and within the terms explained in my . . . Notes, and **without the toleration** therein stated, which is absolutely necessary, **they can do nothing.** *B. C., III, 35.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

The new Governor of Orinoco has sent a trustworthy man here, bringing an assurance from his part that it is his **intention to allow trade** to be carried on with this river (but with absolutely no other). *Same, p. 104.*

I think that **trade with Orinocque will now be fairly easy,** because our boats not only go to and fro unchecked but only last week two Spaniards came to me with formal passports from the Governor to come here. Essequibo was not expressly mentioned in them, but the neighbouring colonies of friends and allies, which is equivalent. *Same, p. 106.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

Spanish deserters have arrived in Essequibo, . . . They give the harsh treatment of the new Governor as a reason for deserting. . . . I do not trust the whole business, especially since **commerce with Orinoco is entirely stopped,** and even the fishery is absolutely at a standstill, which has never happened before, and which is exceedingly embarrassing . . . to the whole Colony. *Same, p. 143.*

1771. Director-General in Essequibo.

If . . . the war between England and Spain has . . . commenced, . . . the . . . Spaniards . . . will require us, and we **shall then get permission** to fetch these animals [mules] from Orinocque. *B. C., IV, 95.*

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—SURREPTITIOUS, CLANDESTINE AND ILLICIT.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The [Dutch] trade then begun continued with more or less regularity during the early years of the 17th century, during which time Dutch vessels sailed along the Guiana coast, and ascended some of its rivers. They were at times driven off by the Spaniards, but at other times they were successful in capturing Spanish booty, or in **quietly trading with the natives at places from which the Spaniards were at the moment absent.** *V. C., 66-67.*

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—SURREPTITIOUS, CLANDESTINE AND ILLICIT—(Continued).

——. Venezuelan Case.

Trade with the Spanish colonists of the Orinoco, though **forbidden by the laws of Spain**, began in the last quarter of the 17th century to be **encouraged by the Dutch** authorities. *V. C., III.*

——. British Case.

It is, of course, the fact that **the Dutch carried on an extensive contraband trade with the Spanish possessions** by the connivance of the authorities, but the existence in any region of trade carried on by the Dutch systematically and not on sufferance excludes the idea of Spanish political control, while it naturally, and in fact, led to political control by the Dutch. *B. C., 80.*

——. British Counter Case.

Balsam and red slaves were obtained from the country above Santo Thomé, and trade therein, therefore, could not be well carried on **without the** consent or **connivance of the Spaniards.** *B. C.-C., 64.*

The trade in balsam . . . **was,** in any case, **contraband,** and . . . involved going high up the Orinoco. *Same, p. 69.*

1609. Ambassadors at Antwerp.

They [Spaniards] replied that your subjects [**Dutch**] **have never traded in the places and ports which** they [**Spaniards**] **have in the Indies,** and that in negotiating the Peace you [Dutch] had **neither claimed to have done so.** *B. C.-C., App., 320.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

The communications between Guiana and the Dutch Colony of Essequibo [by] the navigable rivers and streams, used for **contraband commerce** are most numerous. *B. C., II, 115.*

1757. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

On these occasions Aruacas, Caribs and **Dutchmen come disguised, so as not to be detected.** These last named are accustomed to go ashore at the River Caura and elsewhere, and whilst the others are engaged in fishing for turtle they occupy themselves in buying from the Caribs Indian slaves. *Same, p. 137.*

1758. Director-General in Essequibo.

The six mules which . . . were left behind in Orinoco have been brought here . . . but the Commandant there instead of 6 sent 8 head, . . . giving for reason that no more can be got for a long while, because one of H. M.'s ships is daily expected from Spain, which will stay at anchor in the mouth of the Orinoco. Thus **the trade is stopped** and **even the salters will have to keep away from there until things take a different look.** *V. C., II, 123.*

1760. Confidential Report [to King of Spain].

Alvarado . . . shows that besides the River Imataca there are other rivers and other ways open by which **various Dutchmen have gone in and out and traversed the province [of Guiana] laden with merchandise** in the years 1742, 1747, 1749, 1750, and 1753, from which it is inferred that the same may be done in the following years. *B. C.-C., App., 205.*

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—SURREPTITIOUS, CLANDESTINE AND ILLICIT—(Continued).

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The repairs and steps taken duly by the Governors, for the security of the fortress, **stop the foreigners from continuing their illicit traffic,** their landing and their incursions through the provinces through which the Orinoco runs, as they did until the year 1734 and even that of 1746. *B. C., III, 46.*

By this increase . . . of the garrison . . . the foreigners . . . **small illicit commerce will be very easily stopped.** *Same, pp. 49–50.*

Illicit entry . . . **is a general practice,** . . . **in the Province of Guayana** by the vessels which enter through the mouths of the Orinoco, the chief parties interested being the Dutch of Essequibo and the other Colonies of the coast. This kind of trade is most difficult to avoid, and it is even necessary to tolerate it somewhat, for, unless that be done, . . . the Spanish villages would become . . . devoid of clothing.

Neither the King nor the country are affected by the loss of the surplus hides and tallow; or of those of bad quality which the said Dutch purchase for more or less, as the case may be. For the aforesaid reasons . . . it has been the practice of this Government to tolerate the fact of the poor people obtaining the clothing they need, and which they have no other means of getting in this country. *Same, p. 76.*

[Marginal note on his report as follows] Letter from Don Phelipe Ricardos, in which he declares that the **illicit commerce of foreigners in the Orinoco threatens irreparable ruin,** and that they will penetrate to the provinces washed by that river. *Same, p. 94.*

1768. Judicial Proceedings.

Auto ordering the sale of the effects, **seized in the** Creek of **Barima from the foreigners who had established themselves clandestinely** in the said creek, for trade and exportation of woods and other products. *Same, p. 167.*

First notice [*of sale*]. I ordered . . . the first announcement should be given of the goods and utensils . . . that were **seized** . . . **from the foreigners clandestinely settled** for commerce and traffic in the creek called the Creek of **Barima,** jurisdiction of this province. *Same, p. 168.*

[*Act of*] *sale* of the implements and other utensils and articles . . . which were seized from the foreigners who were **clandestinely settled in the Creek of Barima,** jurisdiction of this province, for the purpose of exporting woods and other products. *Same, p. 169.*

Whereas the Dutch have unwarrantably sought to take possession of the territory of Barima, jurisdiction of this province, where they had established farms and houses to carry on the exportation of woods and other products **in a clandestine manner,** for which purpose, . . . they had . . . gathered . . . runaway slaves, . . . to act as pilots, and point out the lawless Spanish subjects who only occupy themselves in carrying on **clandestine exportation along the creeks** and landing-places which are out of the way and unknown: . . . seeing that . . . it is forbidden . . . to suffer or per-

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—SURREPTITIOUS, CLANDESTINE AND ILLICIT—(Continued).

mit foreigners to exercise the freedom of establishing themselves in these dominions by establishing new colonies, . . . we . . . declare that the said Dutch . . . must forfeit the implements and other things which they were found to possess, . . . and that they be devoted to the Royal Treasury.
B. C., III, 173–174.

1769. Ex-Prefect of Missions.

The most Reverend Father is persuaded that at the present time, **under pretext of fishing, they [Dutch] wish to** establish themselves freely with their boats in the mouths of the Orinoco, to **re-establish and facilitate the clandestine shipment of mules from Guarapiche** and Guaruapo, and tobacco from Barinas, hides and other products of the Spanish Provinces, with which they used to benefit their Colony considerably when the Orinoco with its creeks was not so well guarded as now; which new measure and want of commerce, is the real cause of the decay of Essequibo and of the resentment of Mr. **Gravesande, the chief trader and always the most interested in the illicit commerce of the Colony.**
B. C., IV, 49.

1776. Charles Teuffer.

I . . . asked him, [Commandant of Guiana] whether there was not a way of establishing some trade between the two Colonies. He told me that this was . . . strongly prohibited, . . . and that he could not give permission thereto. After a long conversation he said to me that it had stood with us alone to keep up a better understanding, and that, although he had been **unable openly to give permission** as regarded commerce, matters might have been arranged to the satisfaction of both sides. *Same, p. 173.*

1791. Captain-General of Caracas.

It could be learned if the Dutch of Essequibo and Demerari sustain **suspicious intercourse with the Indians** of the margins of the Orinoco, and whether they supply them with arms and ammunition. *V. C.-C., III, 152.*

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—NEVER UNDER A CLAIM OF RIGHT.

——. British Case.

From the end of the sixteenth century **the Dutch constantly and of right, traded** to the coast of Guiana between the Orinoco and the Amazon. *B. C., 78.*

From the early part of the 17th century **the Dutch**, and since their acquisition of the Colony the British, **controlled the trade of the whole district now in dispute.** *Same, p. 119.*

Trade was carried on **by the Dutch** systematically and **as of right** along the courses of all these rivers. *Same, p. 162.*

1757. Director-General in Essequibo.

Complaints having been repeatedly made by the Commandant of Orinoco, concerning the **evil conduct in Barima of the traders**, or wanderers, as well from Surinam as from here, I have written circumstantially to the *ad interim* Governor there, Mr. I. Nepven, whose reply is awaited daily.
B. C., II, 131–132.

CHARACTER AS TO LEGAL RIGHTS—NEVER UNDER A CLAIM OF RIGHT—(Continued).

1769. Secretary of State for the Indies.

It is necessary for me to ask information . . . in order that His Majesty may be informed of the extension of those boundaries and about the **right claimed by the [Dutch] Republic to the fishery at the entrance to** the River **Orinoco—a thing** as **new to me** as that the Carib tribe of Indians is conceived of as the ally of the Dutch. *V. C., III, 381.*

1772. Director-General in Essequibo.

A new Governor has arrived in Orinoco. . . . I hope that he will not be such a Turk as his predecessor. With **the latter** there was not the least chance of getting anything out of the Orinoco, and he **even forbade the usual salting in the mouth of the river, and set a strong watch to prevent it.** If the present one shows a little more tractability, as the former ones did, I will soon take advantage of it; there must now be abundance of cattle there. *B. C., IV, 103.*

1897. George L. Burr.

Van Meteren points out: **The United Netherlands . . . endeavored . . .** gradually **to open a commerce with the West Indies, without seeking to make any conquests there,** but rather to win the friendship of the Indians and to protect them against the Spaniards, . . . and thus to come into traffic with them. *V. C.-C., II, 48.*

NATURE OF TRADE—FOR HORSES.

1693. Venezuelan Case.

In or about 1693 **the Dutch began the trade in horses** up in Cuyuni—a trade which could only have been carried on with the Spaniards; and this trade was continued through the remaining years of the 17th century. *V. C., 91.*

By 1693 . . . **the Essequibo Dutch were travelling six weeks** up from Kykoveral to the savannas of the Cuyuni **to buy horses.**

This trade in horses in the Cuyuni continued without restriction until 1702. In that year the Spaniards prohibited it; and though it was attempted to be kept up by the Dutch, they were compelled to abandon it altogether by 1707. *Same, p. 104.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **horses** appear to have been brought by the Dutch **from the Indian tribes on the Upper Orinoco, and possibly from some Spaniards** in the same region. *B. C.-C., 62.*

The **prohibition of the trade in horses** was against their being brought from the Upper Orinoco to the Cuyuni, and did not rest on any control of the latter river. *Same, p. 69.*

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

August 17, [1699] This morning a goodly parcel of trading wares was given to the old negro traders, so that they may set out for the Upper Cuyuni to-morrow **to procure some horses** by barter.

August 18. This morning the negro traders set out for the Upper Cuyuni, in order **to procure some horses,** &c., by barter. *B. C.-C., App., 52.*

NATURE OF TRADE—FOR HORSES—(Continued).

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

October 17, [1699]. Two Caribs also arrived from the Upper Cuyuni, bringing tidings that the old negro traders who had set out from the Fort on the 17th August **for the purpose of purchasing horses,** had not set out from the dye store until the 20th September, on account of a lack of Indians, and having to wait for the bread baking. *B. C.-C., App., 60.*

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

January 23, [1700]. About 4 o'clock in the afternoon **there appeared here some of the Company's horse-kopers** with the brother of the free planter Pieter Tollenaar, also licensed, and **having** been out for that business, reporting that they had obtained for the Honourable Company **ten animals.** *Same, p. 82.*

February 15, [1700], Pieter Tollenaer, the free planter, arrived here from Cuyuni, where he had been looking out for the **horse-kopers,** but after staying there two or three times twenty-four hours, and not seeing any signs of them, he had come back. *Same, p. 86.*

February 17, [1700]. About 7 o'clock this morning the **horse-kopers arrived** here **with four horses** for the . . . Company, . . . also with four for the plantation "Hoog en Droogh."

February 21, [1700]. In the forenoon there arrived the Company's **horse-kopers,** whose paddlers, having been paid their wages, again set out up the river in order to fetch the remaining horses down. *Same, p. 87.*

March 14, [1700] There arrived here from the Upper Cuyuni the Company's old negro traders Anthonij and Ceesje, bringing with them **three horses,** and reporting that one had died on the way. *Same, p. 90.*

September 12, [1700] . . . **Some old negro horse-dealers,** as well as some white ones, also **arrived** to speak to the Commandeur concerning the journeys they were about to commence; . . .

September 13, The above-mentioned old negro traders came here again, and trading wares for the purchase of the above-mentioned merchandize were given and dealt out to them.

September 14, The aforesaid horse-dealers came here, and after having been recommended by the Commandeur to take good care of everything, they took their leave and set out on their journey. *Same, p. 114.*

1701. Court of Policy.

The **horses from above are not** being any longer **brought down as formerly,** and this might get still worse in case of war. *V. C., II, 68.*

1706. British Counter Case.

Horses appear to have been **obtained up-country in Cuyuni** in 1706, although the trade seems to have subsequently fallen into the hands of the English, who supplied better animals. *B. C.-C., 66.*

1706. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Councillors and Master Planters of this Colony of Essequibo,

Are hereby informed by the order of the Governor that if any of you are inclined **to have some horses fetched** from the Upper Cuyuni, you should get your men and trading wares, etc., ready and come next Friday the 10th of this month to speak to his Honour the Governor thereupon. *B. C.-C., App., 159.*

NATURE OF TRADE—FOR HORSES—(Continued).

1707. [1897] George L. Burr.

In October, **1707**, the commandeur complained that they [horses] could no longer be got thus from above so conveniently and in such quantity as need required. It is the **last mention** I have found **of the importation of horses by this ronte.** *V. C.-C., II, 153.*

1723. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I likewise intend to send in the coming May, 1723, two buoy-canoes **to Orinoco, to get** from there **horses for the Company.** *V. C., II, 79.*

1731. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We have little fear that the English would bring no horses, if you did not also buy from them what they had intended to sell in the river; moreover, you are well aware that it is far **more advisable** for the Company **to foster the trade to Orinoco with the Spaniards than to favor this dealing with the English.** *Same, p. 83.*

1741. Court of Policy.

The scarcity and lack of horses being taken into consideration, it was resolved that the respective plantations should **send to Aguirre in order to barter for horses**, and that the trading wares therefore be advanced out of the Company's stores. *B. C., II, 35.*

NATURE OF TRADE—FOR VARIOUS INDIAN PRODUCTS.

——. Venezuelan Case.

Dutch trade into the interior. . . . Between 1680 and 1693, this trade seems to have been with the Indians and **confined principally to hammocks, balsam and other Indian products.** *V. C., 90.*

——. British Case.

[Before 1648] the Dutch carried on a large **trade in annatto dye**, . . . obtained from the Indians, with whom the Dutch [were] . . . in alliance and friendship during this period. *B. C., 13.*

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I am sorry about the low price of the annatto dye and sugar; **I shall . . . attempt to buy the dye from the natives at the lowest price possible without risk**, and to impress them, . . . with the danger of ruin to that trade. . . . if one did not proceed with caution . . . they . . . would plant no dye-trees hereafter. This would be the death blow to that trade. *V. C., II, 43-44.*

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

February 6, [1700] . . . About 4 o'clock in the afternoon there appeared here the negro trader Lieven, who had been sent out to Penony, bringing, in return for the trading wares taken with him, three parcels of provisions, twenty-seven baskets of bread, **twenty-seven quakes of annatto dye**, and no more. *B. C.-C., App., 85.*

1701. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

January 8, [1701]. There appeared here the Company's negro servant Samuel Stoffelsen, to whom some **trading wares** were dealt out **with which to** go up in Cuyuni and **collect some cattle and rare birds.** *Same, p. 135.*

NATURE OF TRADE—FOR VARIOUS INDIAN PRODUCTS—(Continued).

1710. British Counter Case.

In 1710 . . . **trade for balsam** was continued with Orinoco.

B. C.-C., 67.

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

With which [slave **trade**] are united other branches of commerce they have held **with the Caribs** in **balms** those countries produce, **such as marana or copaiba, carapa, anatto, cotton, hammocks, birds, wild animals, and** a small number of **horses.** *B. C.-C., App., 182.*

1750. Anonymous.

The trade they conduct **with** the aforesaid **Indians and Spaniards is, in substance, that the Dutch convey** for the consumption of the people of the river, white and blue cloths, Rouen linen, coarse britannias, white holland, striped stuffs for gowns, other common cotton goods and some hats; a large quantity of brandy, some white wine and implements, axes, picks, hatchets and cutlasses. And for the smugglers of the interior they convey spices, especially cinnamon and cloves in cases; fine new hats of good quality and first class white ones; velvets, silks, some lace, pieces of britannias and hollands, medium and fine; wax, flour, and wine. What **the Dutch take back** is **money** (usually in gold), **tobacco** from Barinas, **mules**, a few **heifers**; and a small amount in **hides, balsam** of copaiba, **hammocks**, and other similar goods. *Same, p. 195.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

The products mainly sought by this **trade** were such as could be furnished by the Indians, . . . alone: **the dyes and oils and precious woods of the forests**—annatto . . . letter-wood, carap oil, balsam copaiba.

V. C.-C., II, 82.

HOW CARRIED ON.

1724. Governor of Cumana.

News was frequently sent me that many foreigners, the Dutch from Surinam, came to these places trading, **in vessels**, and **penetrated more than 100 leagues up the Orinoco**, and more than 30 above Angostura, the Fathers lamenting the trade carried on with the Caribs, the sale of tools, stuffs, wine, spirits, guns, and other arms, which they exchanged for a large number of Indian slaves. *V. C., II, 280.*

1750. Anonymous.

The vessels engaged in this trade (except in that of mules) **are in general medium-sized schooners** of small draught, armed with swivel guns, blunderbusses, muskets and pistols, carrying from twelve to sixteen men besides the Aruac Indians who act as rowers. **Barges and launches also go up with cargoes** worth from five to seven or eight hundred pesos; but of their trade no accurate estimate can be formed, as it is greater in some years than others, but I think it amounts to ten or twelve of them going up yearly from Essequibo, and two or three from the other colonies.

For shipping mules bilanders are used (since schooners and barges are only able and accustomed, to take six, eight, or ten at most).

B. C.-C., App., 195.

HOW CARRIED ON—(Continued).

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

These **Postholders** (at Arinda) receiving little salary, their only **profit consists in buying** and exchanging **Indian slaves**, hammocks, cotton, &c., which, on coming down . . . they sell to the planters. *B. C., IV, 140.*

——. [1896] James Rodway.

Posts were established in the Essequebo from the time of its first occupation; in fact, the early settlements were nothing more or less than posts. As such they were centres where **bartering with the Indians of a wide area on every side was carried on.** . . . The first Postholders were traders and very little more. . . . To reach new markets these posts were at great distances from the centre of the colony. *V. C., III, 357.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

The means employed to this end [trade] by the colonial authorities were of two sorts, which must be clearly distinguished. . . . First, the **agents, whom they called outrunners.** These . . . **scoured, by canoe or on foot, the whole country, stirring up the Indians to bring in their wares and barter them at the fort** or themselves carrying into the wilderness the trinkets for exchange, and bringing back the Indian produce. . . . In addition to . . . outrunners . . . they came also to have their outliers. *V. C.-C., II, 82.*

It was somewhat more than half a century after the beginning of the colony when a beginning was made of this new method. . . . It is clear that these posts were few, definite, constant. . . . five were all. The location of these posts did not, indeed, always remain the same. . . . Yet each quarter had but its single post; however, for strategic or other reasons its site might vary, its relation to the colony remained the same. *Same, pp. 83-84.*

SPANISH TRADE TO ESSEQUIBO.

——. Venezuelan Case.

Before the middle of the eighteeth century **the Spaniards** themselves **were beginning to take this [Orinoco] trade into their hands.** By this time, too, and perhaps long before, these Spanish traders were making their way into the Dutch colony *via* the Cuyuni.

The Orinoco authorities found it easy to favor their own people in this competition by merely enforcing against the Dutch traders the Spanish laws and thus making the Orinoco too hot for them. Both to avoid this danger and to lessen the risk of smuggling on their own side, the Dutch West India Company and the Essequibo government made it, from the middle of the 18th century, their **settled policy to transfer this trade to Spanish hands.**

From about 1761 on, the trade was exclusively in the hands of the Spaniards; and from this time forward one scarcely hears of Dutch traders to the Orinoco; the current was all the other way; and the Spaniards were induced to come to the Essequibo to sell their products there.

By 1794 the Governor-General, though himself a son of the colony, was seemingly ignorant that this trade had ever been in other than Spanish hands.

By the end of the century the former trade relations of the Dutch with the Barima had become a mere tradition. *V. C., 112–114.*

SPANISH TRADE TO ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

Prior to the middle of the eighteenth century this trade was carried on mainly by the Dutch. But from 1761 it became the settled policy of the Company and of the colonial authorities to **transfer the conduct of this trade to the Spaniards.** So successful were they that from this time forward one scarcely hears of Dutch traders to the Orinoco. *V. C.-C., II, 86-87.*

——. British Counter Case.

The inclosure in the communication of the Duke of Lerma (1615), . . . is the **only indication that the Spaniards ever did more than visit Essequibo for trade.** For this purpose they depended on the goodwill of the Arawak Indians; but these became hostile in 1618, and . . . the visits of the Spaniards to Essequibo were finally put an end to in 1619. *B. C.-C., 31.*

1746. West India Company.

It might perhaps be that the **Spaniards,** who are very clearly **acting secretly** in the matter, are through those people **seeking trade with** those of **Essequibo** which it would be better to cultivate than to ruin. *B. C., II, 46.*

1748. West India Company.

It gave us especial pleasure to learn . . . how by the zeal you have shown the **trade of the Spaniards in** the river of **Essequibo begins to develop** more and more, and we hope that all further means will be put in operation to make it flourish there to perfection. *Same, p. 56.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Business with the Spaniards begins to grow better as time progresses, . . . I shall try, as far as lies in my power, to encourage the trade and to advance it, and as far as possible to make it general. *Same, p. 57.*

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Some profit ought at times to be made out of the Spaniards, . . . many Spaniards come and go out of the river without coming under my observation; . . . this occurring at the instance of some of the principal (planters), and also in order **not to frighten away the Spaniards, I have until now connived somewhat at this.** *Same, pp. 60-61.*

1750. Report of Committee on Commandeur's Report.

The Committee, were of opinion that . . . **in view of the increasing Spanish trade,** it was not unlikely that a reasonable profit might be made by it, especially so if it could be brought about that the Spaniards no longer, as heretofore, has usually happened, tarried with their wares and articles of trade among the private settlers living up the [Essequibo] river, but came with them farther down and as far as to the fort. *Same, p. 68.*

1752. Secretary in Essequibo.

It is very agreeable to me that my idea regarding the **not allowing the Spaniards to trade overland in cattle** with this Colony has your Honours' approbation. *Same, p. 75.*

SPANISH TRADE TO ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1761. British Counter Case.

The Dutch Director-General, in . . . 1761, . . . considered . . . it was best to send few or no boats to the Orinoco, and **to compel the Spaniards to come to the Essequibo.**

The Court of Policy reported that the [Orinoco] trade was a mere bagatelle, and also risky and precarious, particularly as England and Spain were said again to be at war, and Orinoco would probably soon be ruined for many years to come. Consequently the trade was purposely suspended by the Dutch.

B. C.-C., 80.

1761. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have always imagined that it was best for our inhabitants to send few or no boats to Orinoco, and so **compel the Spaniards to come here with their merchandize;** in this way our people would not be exposed to the least danger, and the arrangement began to work very well. *B. C., II, 198.*

1761. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Concerning the trade which is carried on from the Colony to Rio Orinoco. We beg you to consider whether it might not be possible, and more profitable for the Company, **to direct this trade** into such channels that it must be carried on **from Orinoco to Essequibo, by the Spaniards;** whereas it now, on the contrary, takes place from Essequibo to the Orinoco. *Same, p. 202.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Spaniards . . . come here **[to Essequibo] with mules, cattle, tobacco, hides, dried meat.** *B. C., III, 111.*

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **Spaniards who** had **come hither with tobacco, hides, and other things,** all have to **pass his** [Postholder of Moruka] **door,** and some of them rest at his place. *Same, p. 139.*

1776. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **Portuguese** are **trading above** in the river as **the Spaniards** here **below.** *B. C., IV, 176.*

SLAVE TRADE.

SLAVES—WHENCE AND HOW OBTAINED.

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

September 18, [1699]. Jotte the old negro, has set out for **the Upper Mazaruni . . . to bring down** four or five **slaves.**

September 22, [1699]. In the afternoon **Jotte,** the old negro, **arrived from Mazaruni, . . . bringing** with him four female **slaves,** two children, and a boy. *B. C., I, 216.*

1724. Governor of Cumana.

As soon as I arrived in this Government . . . news was frequently sent to me that many foreigners—the Dutch from Surinam and Berbice—came to these places trading, in vessels, and penetrating more than **100 leagues up the Orinoco,** and more than 30 above Angostura, the Fathers lamenting the **trade**

SLAVES WHENCE AND HOW OBTAINED—(Continued).

carried on with the Caribs, the sale of tools, stuffs, wine, spirits, guns, and other arms, which they exchanged for a large number of Indian slaves.

B. C., III, 78.

1727. Court of Policy.

On the 16th September last [1726] Jan Batiste arrived here from Orinoco and brought with him 200 stoops of balsam, two female slaves, and one child.

B. C., II, 6.

1733. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The outrunner, Van der Burg, who has been among the tribes up in Essequibo for more than a year altogether in order to trade, sent me in September last one creole, with two slave women and some copaiba balsam, writing that he would himself come down in November. *Same, p. 16.*

1734. King of Spain,

In the [Barima] creek . . . a Carib Chief . . . said . . . the whites of Guayana, . . . hindered him taking the Indians of the nations of the Orinoco and selling them to the Dutch. *B. C., III, 81.*

1734. Father Joseph Gumilla.

Both nations [Dutch and Carib] come up from the sea to rob and burn the villages of the Missions and carry off as many captives as they can, and sell them at Essequibo, Berbice and Surinam.

Many Caribs receive a great supply of arms, ammunition, glass beads, and other trifles, with the understanding that they are to be paid for within a certain time with Indians, which they must take prisoners on the Orinoco. And when the time has elapsed the Dutch creditors encourage and even oblige the Caribs to their bloody raids against the defenceless Indians of the Orinoco.

Same, p. 84.

1737. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Among the outgoing cargo are two half-kegs of fine dye, taken in exchange by Van der Burg up in Essequibo, where the necessary buildings have been made and a post established to extend trade through those regions, if possible, to the Amazon. . . . in view of the slave trade and the production of fine dye, this post remains of much importance, since, small as is this beginning, we become acquainted among the Indians further inland, and this trade may by degrees become considerable. *B. C., II, 24–25.*

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

They [Caribs] sail up the river [Orinoco] to seize Indians of other tribes, whom they sell, both males and females, as slaves to the Dutch, with whom they carry on this trade and that of horses, which are to the Dutch and French a source of vast profit and benefit. *B. C.-C., App., 186.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The inhabitants are very much aggrieved [at the planting by the Spaniards of a Post on the Cuyuni] and the Carib Indians a great deal more so since it perfectly closes the Slave Traffic in that direction from which alone that nation derive their livelihood. *B. C., II, 46.*

SLAVES—WHENCE AND HOW OBTAINED—(Continued).

1747. Ramon Santa Maria.

For this [**slave-selling**] **trip** [the Caribs] have, besides the navigation of the Orinoco and the channels of the Barima, a road on land which, crossing the Caroni above the Guajana Missions, reaches the Aquire river, and they go down by this river to near its mouth, when they act in concert with some vessel, which waits on this river, and when not, they enter the Yuruari and follow it down **to the Esquibo.** *V. C., II, 297.*

1747. ——

Inventory of stock [Indian trading goods] **at the Cuyuni Post. List of debts** of the Master of the Post.

Yriveno	owes.....	8	**slaves.**
Tucunuara	"	3	"
Arinamene	"	3	"
Marayacano	"	1	"
Aritamar	"	3	"
Carinare	"	4	"
Asavue	"	1	"
Arimanaca	"	2	"
Manarvay	"	4	"
Total.....		29	slaves.

Same, pp. 297-298.

1747. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Two of our rovers, . . . have been murdered in the **Upper Essequibo** by the Indians. . . . The loss of those people would not be a matter of very great concern were it not that . . . I fear that those tribes between the Amazon and this river, . . . being extremely embittered, and, fearing that vengeance will be taken for this murder, may perhaps raid our highest-lying plantations, . . . I have long foretold such a thing, and on that account have desired to close the River of Essequibo, but have met with much opposition on account of the profit which some draw from there through the **Slave Trade.**

B. C., II, 52.

1748. Minutes, Court of Justice.

His Honour, . . . undertook to charge the Postholders of the Honourable Company's trading-place Arinda with the recovery of the said outstanding **slaves [in the Upper Essequibo region].** *Same, p. 55.*

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.

All the itinerant **traders** which go **from there** [**Surinam**] in order to deal in slaves stop here, as all **go to Barima,** which is situated under this jurisdiction, to the great prejudice of the inhabitants, because they **pay more for the slaves than we usually do.** *Same, p. 61.*

1750. Anonymous.

The Dutch obtain **slaves from this river** [**Orinoco**], for when the Caribs go up to attack other tribes of Indians, they surround their villages by night, seize the boys (whom they call Poitos) and sell them for slaves in the colonies, which is a very sad thing. *B. C.-C., App., 196.*

SLAVES—WHENCE AND HOW OBTAINED—(Continued).

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

They [Caribs] navigate the Orinoco up to the mouth of the Caroni, enter it and pass its fall by night, and continue their course up the stream until they reach the islands mentioned, . . . where . . . they make a station for ingress into the interior. . . . They also go to Cunuri, Tupuquen, and other villages which were destroyed in 1751, and even to Miamo, **until they reach the woods . . . inhabited by Caribs** and other savage tribes, **where they capture their poitos or slaves**, whom they carry off to sell to the Dutch. *B. C., II, 109.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

It is by no means incredible that the **Dutch are in the Cuyuni buying slaves**, for they do not hesitate to carry on that illicit traffic nearer the Missions. . . . Captain Bonalde encountered a Dutchman, about a day's journey from the Mission of Miamo, buying slaves or Indians which the Caribs were selling him. Apart from this we know well how frequently the Dutch go to the Paragua, Caura, and head waters of the Caroni, so that they maintain their position there every year. *Same, p. 146.*

The Dutch and Caribs, . . . [in pursuit of slaves, ascend] the river Essequibo, and turning on the right up the river Aripamuri, . . . as far as possible, . . . the Rio Negro is reached. Descending the Rio Negro . . . they get to the Amazon, and, ascending the same river by turning to the right, they enter the Orinoco. . . . The Dutch, by means of the navigation of the Essequibo, communicate with Barinas, as well as with the Paragua, the head-waters of the Caroni, &c. . . . **Numbers of Dutch**, besides those who go to the Paragua, **remain in the places called Tucupo, Capi, and Paraman, to buy slaves. These places are in the interior**, some three or or four days' journey from the outermost Missions. . . . There are generally Dutch merchants in those places, for the Caribs bring them the slaves there. *Same, p. 147.*

1760. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

They have gone higher up **beyond the Falls of the rivers Paragua, Aroi and Caura**, considering them insurmountable to the efforts of the Spanish. Thence **they made war upon other nations, took slaves and sent them to Essequibo**, depopulating in this way the dominions of the King, whilst peopling the territories which the Dutch enjoy. *Same, p. 183.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

60 leagues from its [Orinoco] mouth . . . [there are] certain lofty ranges, peopled with numbers of **Indians, who are harassed by the Caribs, who capture the women and children** to carry off to the Dutch, and exterminate as many of the adult males as they can. *B. C., III, 62.*

By making incursions **along this river [Essequibo] and along the Mussaruni and Cuyuni**, protected by the Carib Indians, though not of this province, **to plunder the Indians, of whom they make slaves** just as they do of the negroes, whom they sell and employ in their plantations and farms. *Same, p. 64.*

SLAVES—WHENCE AND HOW OBTAINED—(Continued).

1769. Prefect of Missions.

The practice of these foreigners is now, as always, **to penetrate to the interior of this province in order to kidnap and enslave Indians,** your Majesty's vassals, and take them to their Colony; their practice is so common, as it is authorized by the Governor of Essequibo . . . from the licences and passports [given] . . . under his own hand, to the persons leaving the Colony for this traffic of enslaving Indians, until, without respect, they enter our Missions.

B. C., IV, 20.

In 1748 two white men from Essequibo came to our Mission of the Miamo with a passport from the Governor for the purpose of buying Indians. . . . The same year a mulatto woman from Essequibo was on the **savannahs of Cornmo,** buying slaves from the Caribs, and in the year (17)49 a soldier of our detachment caught one of these traffickers very **near our Mission of Miamo,** who had a licence of the Governor of Essequibo to come to buy slaves, and in that patent he styled himself Governor of Essequibo and mouths of the Orinoco.

In the River Aguirre there was a Dutchman domiciled with the Caribs more than eight years buying slaves from them. There were also **others in the same traffic in Puruey, Caura and Parava,** from where they used to send to Essequibo and Surinam parties of from twenty to fifty slaves, and they discontinued in alarm at the arrival of the Royal Commission in the Orinoco.

Same, pp. 20–21.

On the 20th of June, 1766, there arrived **at our Mission of Cavallapi** a negro and an Indian, **slave-buyers,** each with a licence from the Governor of Essequibo.

He, [a negro slave-trader from Essequibo] told me that he had been **three years on the Parava buying slaves** from the Caribs. *Same, p. 21.*

He [a **negro slave trader**] had come **from Essequibo to** the **Cuyuni, Yurnari, and the port of the Mission of Cavallapi,** with two canoes or barges. One of these was laden with firearms and iron for axes and knives, clothes and other trifles. He distributed these among the Indians of the said village, and of Miamo and Guascipati, who in return, as the Caribs said, were to give them young Indians. *Same, p. 22.*

1770. Don Manuel Centurion.

The constant **export of slaves from the interior of this province,** which the Dutch and Caribs carry on by the Rivers Apanoni, Sipo, Maseroni, and many others which flow into the Essequibo. *Same, p. 78.*

1771. Don Jose Solano.

By virtue of the new situation of the capital in the Angostura, and the lesser settlements **on the banks of the Rivers Caroni, Paragua and Caura,** the Caribs have been entirely subjected, and many tribes have thus been freed from their persecutions, the former being in the habit of **making prisoners among the natives,** and **selling them as slaves** in the Dutch Colonies of Essequibo and Surinam. *Same, p. 80.*

SLAVES—WHENCE AND HOW OBTAINED—(Continued).

1778. Government Journal at Essequibo.

July 13. I have provided one Veltman with a passport . . . **to purchase Indians in the upper rivers**; . . . (and) a letter of permission, in order to pass and repass the Post of Arinda.

July 15. A letter of permission, . . . to J. H. C. Klein, that . . . he might pass and **repass the Post of Arinda in order to obtain slaves** by barter among the nations in the river above. *B. C., IV, 189.*

1785. Diary of Commander of Revenue Cutter in Orinoco.

[Near Barima some Guarauno Indians informed me] that only some days previous some Hollanders **had come down with a few Poytos to the headwaters of the Barima**, and that they had taken them to Essequibo.

V. C.-C., III, 334.

[1788?] Council of the Indies.

The Dutch . . . **went to the interior** by this river [Orinoco], the Mazaruni and Cuyuni, protected by the Caribs, **to pillage and capture the Indians** of the . . . Province, frequently disturbing . . . the Missions of the . . . Capuchins. *V. C., II, 274.*

SLAVES—BY WHOM CAPTURED AND BOUGHT.

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

If the Essequibo correspondence may be trusted, the **Dutch slave traders** who infested these parts [Amacura and beyond] are **more likely to have been from Surinam** than from the western colonies. *V. C.-C., II, 142.*

1593. Antonio de Berrio.

[**Faxardo**] **stole** and carried off nearly **300 souls** [**Indians** of Moriquita], **whom he is selling like negroes.** *B. C., I, 3.*

1628. West India Company (the Nineteen).

Lastly, **the Company shall** take pains to **furnish** the colonists with as many **negroes** as shall be possible, on the conditions to be formulated. *Same, p. 69.*

1638. Corporation of Santo Thome.

The soldiers who came [to **help Santo Thome**] **would return enriched with** the number of **Indians which are given for slaves.** The Governor . . . promises that all those whom they shall take they shall carry away to your Government, or any other part that your Excellency may order.

Same, p. 104.

1656. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Colonists shall also **be at liberty to go to the coast of Africa and fetch** as many **negroes** as they shall have need of or may desire to offer for sale. . . .

This Chamber . . . shall do its utmost . . . to order negroes for the aforesaid coast. *Same, pp. 138–139.*

1657. Committee governing Walcheren cities.

There shall be equipped two ships, the one to the Wild Coast, . . . the other with a slave trader's cargo, **to the coast of Africa, to buy slaves** and carry them from there to the aforesaid Wild Coast. *Same, p. 145.*

SLAVES—BY WHOM CAPTURED AND BOUGHT—(Continued).

1686. British Case.

In 1686 the **enslaving of Indians by Dutch** subjects was made illegal, and **only those Indians might be bought as slaves who were in slavery to the Indians** with whom the trade was carried on. This measure in effect protected from slavery all the tribes that inhabited the territory now in dispute, as the Indians of that territory did not enslave one another, but treated as slave nations only certain tribes further in the interior. This law was strictly enforced, and had a great effect in promoting friendly relations between the Dutch and the Indians. *B. C., 85.*

1699. Official Dairy at Kijkoveral.

November 2, [1699]. There arrived at the Fort the Corporal, Joos Bacx, and Jan Debbaut, reporting that **the expected Company's ship** "Den Brandenburger," . . . **had arrived here in the river with 330** [*sic*] **negro slaves**, and during their voyage 130 of the 450 slaves shipped had died. *B. C.-C., App., 63.*

1713. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Red slaves have gone up in price fully one-half as compared with what they used to be . . . ten or twelve years ago. This has mainly been caused by the Surinam people, who . . , [are] trying . . . to get that trade into their hands. *B. C., I, 237.*

1725. Governor of Venezuela.

I informed your Majesty of the trade carried on by the **Hollanders** through the mouth of the Orinoco, **buying little Indians** from the victors for working on their plantations in the towns or fortresses of Surinam and Berbiz. *V. C.-C., III, 24.*

1726. Court of Policy.

On the 14th March [1726] **Jan Batiste and Hendrik van der Win** were sent to Orinoco . . . **to buy red slaves.** *B. C., II, 3.*

1726. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Directors of the . . . **West India Company,** having ordered us to **purchase** in Orinoco some **slaves.** *Same, p. 4.*

1730. Court of Policy.

Settlers are forbidden to trade for red slaves in the rivers Cajoene and Massereony, as for many years past **these two rivers have been kept for** the particular trade of **the Honourable Company.** *B. C., VII, 188.*

1735. Governor of Cumana.

Sustain themselves by waging war against the other Indians, whom they enslave and carry away to **sell to the Dutch** and other foreign nations; there being years in which the slaves sold by them are no less than from 600 to 700. Last year I deprived them wholly of this accursed traffic, and . . . also . . . this year, whereat they became desperate, as **they owed the Indians of Surinam some 700 head of slaves.** *V. C.-C., III, 42.*

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Carib nation would still bring slaves enough. *B. C., II, 68.*

SLAVES—BY WHOM CAPTURED AND BOUGHT—(Continued).

1758. Prefect of Missions.

I am unable to name all the **nations which the Caribs pursue with the object of enslaving them.** But the tribes dwelling on our frontiers, and the most generally known, are the Barinagotos, Maos, Macos, Amarucotos, Camaracotos, and Añaos, Paravinas, Guaicas, &c. *B. C., II, 147.*

1762. Prefect of Missions.

In the year 17[62] the Father President of the Mission of Supama advised me that a **Guayca Chief** of this Mission **had kidnapped some young Indians** from the same village, and had sold them to the Dutch and the traffickers.

B. C., IV, 21.

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

[In the Upper Orinoco] **the Dutch, chiefly, bought from the Caribs** and carried away all the Indians they could, for the establishment and cultivation of the plantations in their Colonies of Essequibo, Berbice, Surinam and Corentin.

B. C., III, 11.

Several expeditions have been sent out, and one of these surprised a stronghold, built by the Dutch on the River Cuyuni, where they had gathered all the **Indians** of other tribes **captured by the Caribs and sold to them for mere trifles.**

The Catalonian Capuchins have . . . closed the Orinoco to the inhuman commerce of the Caribs and of the said Dutch. *Same, p. 20.*

In none of the said provinces are foreigners any longer seen overrunning them and committing hostilities or exciting the Caribs, their allies, to do so, except **the Dutch,** who **purchase from them all the Indians that are not Caribs.**

Same, p. 35.

The Governor [of Essequibo] . . . **grants** them [Caribs] **letters patent to make slaves** of all the Indians whom they meet. *Same, p. 44.*

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

Mr. La Barre, the agent in Martinique of the Spanish Governors . . . has told me that . . . **strict** and well defined **orders had come** from His Catholic Majesty to those Governors **to sell no more slaves** belonging to subjects of France, England, or the State, but to detain the same and restore them to the owners, . . . nine French slaves coming from Cayenne to Orinoco had been sold by the Governor of Orinoco. *Same, p. 177.*

1794. Governor-General in Essequibo.

The present exorbitant prices of the **negroes will** again **be an obstacle to the progress of cultivation;** . . . aid should again be given here to the planters, and you be requested to exempt the planters there for five years from the payment of the poll-tax. *B. C., V, 153.*

SLAVES—SURREPTITIOUS CHARACTER OF TRADE IN.

1734. Father Joseph Gumilla.

To procure these [slaves, balsam and annatto] some **Dutch introduce themselves among the fleets of these Indians, painted according to the custom of the said savages,** by which they encourage them, and add boldness to the lamentable destruction which they work. *B. C., III, 84.*

SLAVES—SURREPTITIOUS CHARACTER OF TRADE IN—(Continued).

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

This expedient [**seeret support of revolted slaves**] . . . is a just satisfaction for what they [Dutch] are constantly practising in the reductions of the Orinoco, inciting and leading the Caribs to hostilities. *B. C., II, 86.*

1758. Stephen Hiz, Postholder in Cuyuni.

Asked if he had received any merchandize for the purpose of **buying slaves,** . . . he answered that . . . he **had** . . . **nothing whatever to do with such purchases.** *Same, p. 166.*

1760. Valdez and Coronado.

In regard to the half-breed, Jan Batista, who was well known, although in his confession he refused to give his name, and denied that he was a half-breed, saying that he was an Indian of the Aruak nation, and **having maliciously stained himself with annotto in order not to be recognized,** his Honour . . . ordered that he should be put in irons in the fortress. *Same, p. 196.*

1769. Prefect of Missions.

I also saw and recognized **a Dutch Mulatto** who came **disguised as a Carib,** to instruct and encourage the Caribs. His name, and he himself, is well known in these Missions. *B. C., IV, 21.*

SLAVERY—CRUELTIES PRACTICED

1663. Commandeur in Pomeroon.

A slave belonging to the late clerk, van Heijcoop, has cut the throat of his comrade and given him some fifty thrusts more while they were out on a journey with their master. After I had secured the culprit **I had him executed** by the hands of justice, **his head stuck upon the gallows and the four quarters at different places.** *B. C.-C., App., 36.*

The negroes, having suffered great want, made their appearance upon a plantation belonging to Indians and were delivered up to me; after I had examined them, and they had confessed their crimes, **I had them broken upon the wheel** by the hands of justice, **their heads and hands set up on a pole, and their bodies burnt.** *Same, p. 37.*

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

November 4, [1700] . . . the clergyman sent advice . . . of the desperate deed of **one of his negro slaves who had deliberately drowned himself,** . . . whereupon the Commandeur set out . . . and on arriving there he thought that the best thing to do under the circumstances was to have the **said drowned slave hung up on a tree as an example and terror to any other malicious negroes** who might have such intentions; and this was done. *Same, p. 122.*

December 27, [1700] . . . the Commandeur, accompanied by the sergeant and four musketeers, proceeded to the plantation "Poelwijck" in order to take the necessary measures there against the negro slaves who were rebellious, and to question them concerning the runaway negro Gerritje, who had run away with his wife and children into the woods. *Same, p. 132.*

SLAVERY—CRUELTIES PRACTICED—(Continued).

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

About 6 o'clock the former foreman of the plantation "Poelwijck" arrived here bringing a report . . . that the two children of the above-mentioned negro had been found cruelly murdered by their father, also that he had heard from two negroes who had found the said children, and who were looking for the said negro with a dog that they had with them, and which ran on before them into the wood, that they had heard the dog howl, and the runaway negro had thrown a chopper at it, but that they had not found him.

December 28 [1700]. The Commandeur . . . returned . . . reporting that **the runaway negro,** together **with his children, had been found, but all killed** in the following manner: **The children with their throats cut, and he himself having also hanged himself,** with his entrails out of his body and a pollution between his legs.

The negrêss, however, had escaped with a knife-thrust running downwards, and not fatal, and had fallen into our hands. For the rest, all was in good order upon both the plantations "De Hoop" and "Poelwijck." *B. C.-C., App., 132.*

1720. [1763] Don Jose Diguja.

In . . . 1720, . . . the Dutch, English, and French, . . . with the Caribs, overran . . . the Province of Guayana [and others] **enslaving and slaughtering all the Indians, other than Caribs,** whom they could seize, and burning the Mission villages and Spanish settlements established in the said provinces. *B. C., III, 34.*

1743. Commandeur in Essequibo.

There were brought me the hands of the two still absent creoles Ariaen and Fortuyn, who, having run away from the head miner had been unwilling to come back on pardon. **They were** finally **made an end of by the Indians of Waini.** *B. C., II, 40.*

1744. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I . . . spared no promises or threats to obtain either alive or dead the three remaining (deserters), by all of which means I moved the Indians of Barima at last with much trouble to make an attack; . . . they were successful and under command of the Jew, Moses Isaakse de Vries, **broke their necks and brought their hands here, which I caused to be nailed to a post, as a warning to others.** *Same, p. 42.*

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Of the **runaway slaves** from the new plantation, . . . five have been brought back . . . but two are still wanting . . . these having been **slain by the Carib Indians, by whom also the last one brought in was wounded.** *Same, p. 63.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

In view of the multitude of young Indians which the Caribs, with the Dutch, daily carry to the foreign Colonies, . . . it will not be too much to say that **the Caribs sell yearly more than 300 children, leaving murdered in their houses more than 400 adults,** for the Dutch do not like to buy the latter because they well know that, being grown up, they will escape. Indeed, we know this, as some fugitives were seen in the Missions, and could be recognized by the brands of their masters, which many of them have on their bodies—for the Essequibo Company have ordered that the Indian slaves shall be branded on pain of losing them. *Same, pp. 146-147.*

SLAVERY—CRUELTIES PRACTICED—(Continued).

1758. Prefect of Missions.

This **slave trade has so completely changed the Caribs that their only occupation is constantly** going to and returning from war, **selling and killing the Indians** of those nations already mentioned. And not only the Caribs of the forests, but even those of the Missions, participate in these wars. *B. C., II, 148.*

1761. Don Jose Diguja.

The Dutch . . . go by this river [Orinoco], and those of Mazaroni and Cuyuni, protected by the Carib Indians, pillaging and capturing the Indians that are not Caribs, from this Province, and reducing them to slavery, in the same way as they do with the negroes, and sell them and employ them in their plantations and farms. In order to seize them they employ every device that tyranny and avarice can suggest, keeping in close friendship with the Caribs, a ferocious and warlike tribe overrunning all this extensive Province . . . in persecution of other Indians, on whom the Caribs hold control, on account of their peaceful and gentle character, being continually assaulted in their ranches or grounds; **the old Indians are killed, and the young and the women captured to be reduced to slavery.** . . . **The native Hollanders** of those Colonies, who accompany the Caribs, teach them how to manage the arms, and they **are even more inhuman than the Caribs themselves.** *V. C., II, 342–343.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

In order to obtain these poor Indians they [Dutch] adopt every method which their greed and tyranny suggest, . . . with the Caribs, . . . in search of the other Indians, over whom the Caribs have the mastery . . . **the men are slain and the women and children made prisoners,** for these are the ones of whom they make slaves. *B. C., III, 64.*

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Chief of the Acuway nation above Demerary **has come down with two negro girls and three hands of negroes,** bringing information that he had made a night attack upon the plantation De Savonnette, in upper Berbice, and **killed fifty-five negroes, men, women and children.** *B. C., II, 227.*

1783. Dutch Administrator of Essequibo.

They [slaves] exhibited to me **the flogged Bomba, the negro Jamis, who had been shot, and the girl Dede, who detailed her miseries** while they themselves there extracted the gun-shots and tied them up. *B. C., V, 12.*

1786. Director-General in Essequibo.

The good effect . . . of the Post of Maroco becomes daily more felt. A deserter from here and two runaway negroes . . . having been captured there. . . . One of these negroes has drowned himself, the other has by the Court here been sentenced on the 26th September last to be **flogged, branded, and has had his ears cut off, and put in chains for his life.** *Same, p. 44.*

1794. Jan Van Eersbeek.

Having also brought with us one Indian and **the right arm of that negro.** *Same, p. 157.*

SLAVERY—ITS STATUS AND IMPORTANCE.

——. British Case.

To prevent escape [**of slaves**] . . . **the Dutch** to a great extent **relied on the Posts** in the Upper Essequibo and the Cuyuni. *B. C., 92.*

1706. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Thirteen young negro creoles, whom I made use of as traders for the Company . . . **have run away** up above the falls in Cayuni. . . . I have . . . sent after them the sergeant. . . . I have also sent a free Malack, named Jan Pietersen, . . . said Jan Pietersen has again come down, reporting that he has found four of the runaways overland in Penoeny, . . . the others have traveled further up the Cayuni, also to the savannah. *B. C., I, 228–229.*

1707. Commandeur in Essequibo.

If the **indigo succeed** the **Slave Trade will have** a considerable **stimulus**. *Same, p. 229.*

1708. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The successful attempting of sugar-cane demands an undeniably **greater number of slaves**, . . . As regards **the importation of slaves** for this river, . . . in this grievous war-time private individuals have no desire to cumber themselves with more slaves. *Same, p. 230.*

1728. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I . . . [take] the liberty to inform you that **several slaves** belonging to the inhabitants of this Colony **have** dared to **run away** and **to remain under your protection in the River Orinoco**, refusing to return to their duty; . . . I beg most earnestly, Sir, that you may be pleased to return by the bearer of this all the slaves who deserted from this Colony. *B. C., II, 9.*

1729. Secretary Gelskerke in Essequibo.

For some years past **your Lordships' slaves**, as well as those belonging to the colonists, **run away to Orinoco** as soon as they think they have any grievance. **There the Spaniards keep them**, and will not give them up when we have claimed them. **This makes them** so **insolent** that measures have been devised to provide against this. *Same, p. 8.*

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

Some years ago a number of **rebellious negroes fled from** their [Dutch] Colony of **Surinam**, whom, so far, they have been unable to reduce although for that purpose a large body of European soldiers were brought out. *Same, p. 86.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

This **Indian slave trade** is **of great utility to the Dutch**, as the said slaves cultivate their lands, and fetch as high a price as negroes. *Same, p. 118.*

1769. Remonstrance of States-General.

This **desertion** [**of slaves**] **unless checked, might** in time **cause the complete ruin of Essequibo.** *B. C., IV, 32.*

1769. Ex-Prefect of Missions.

The Colony of **Essequibo is going visibly to its ruin since the gate has been closed for** the illicit traffic which it previously carried on in Orinoco, and the poitos or **slaves** have found that of their liberty open, so that they can escape thence. *Same, p. 50.*

SLAVERY—ITS STATUS AND IMPORTANCE—(Continued).

1772. Director-General in Essequibo.

The numbers of the **runaways increasing daily**, this matter will end in the **total ruin** of a great many plantations, unless efficacious remedies be adopted.

B. C., IV, 100-101.

1773. Director-General in Essequibo.

A still more ruinous occurrence for the Colony occurred a few days ago . . . eleven negroes, five negresses and one child made off in a boat to **Orinocque**, which has **now become a refuge for these people.** Unless your Lordships be pleased to adopt efficacious means most speedily, and demand early redress from the Sovereign, we shall, I fear, hear before long of a large and increased number of similar occurrences, resulting in the **total ruin of the Colony** . . . If no treaty can be concluded with the King of Spain by which our runaway slaves may be restored to us . . . then I foresee . . . that our Colony, which is now beginning to flourish, will in less than ten years suffer irremediable ruin. *Same, pp. 108–109.*

1774. Director-General and Courts of Justice and Policy.

We again take the liberty of entreating your Lordships to be pleased to make an alliance or contract with the Court of Spain . . . **to restore and to send back** our deserting soldiers or **runaway slaves** . . . If . . . not, . . . the whole Colony will some day come to total ruin. *Same, p. 123.*

1774. Director-General in Essequibo.

Unless your Lordships are enabled to adopt efficacious measures most speedily . . . in the matter of the **slaves running away to the Spaniards**, we shall all be totally ruined here some day. *Same, p. 128.*

1775. Memorial to Director-General and Councillors of Essequibo.

The Undersigned, wishing to prevent the total ruin of this Colony, humbly request your Excellency and your Honours to be pleased to bring this matter, which is one of threatening danger, most speedily to the notice of their Lordships, so that we may be ensured against further ruin and the loss of all our possessions, both by the establishment of a few forts in the direction of Orinoco and by positive orders from the Court of Spain for the **restitution of our slaves.** *Same, p. 129.*

1775. Courts of Policy and Justice.

It were desirable that the remonstrances made by their High Mightinesses to the Court of Spain concerning the desertion of the soldiers and the **ruuning away of the slaves** had had better results, . . . we fear with reason that this matter may one day be of evil consequence for the Colony. *Same, p. 137.*

1776. Director-General in Essequibo.

If the Governor (of Orinoco) does not **restore our slaves**, the Colony, in a short time, will suffer irretrievable damage. *Same, p. 166.*

1783. Dutch Administrator of Essequibo.

It is to be wished that . . . something may be done with the Court of Spain that this **heavy loss of slaves** to their neighbouring domain could be restored, and the total ruin of this land be prevented. *B. C., V, 12.*

SLAVERY—ITS STATUS AND IMPORTANCE—(Continued).

1783. Dutch Administrator of Essequibo.

I, being at Demarara, saw the present Government dispatch a barque to Oronoque to bring cattle for the garrison manned by the best slaves of the plantations and of the (military) train, but until now I have seen none of them appear, and if they or others may do this they will be in a better position to teach the rest the road thereto, and the language of that fatal place, and come themselves to take away their families, that they may still be here, in order never to return. *B. C., V, 12.*

1784. Commandeur in Demerara.

This matter [**escape of slaves**] **is of the greatest importance** to this Colony [Demerara] and **to Essequibo.** There passes no week without runaways of one plantation or another going thither, and the neighborhood is deprived of all possible means of being able to bring them back as long as there are no uitleggers or a good strong occupation Post erected on the boundaries of Oronoque. *Same, p. 23.*

1784. West India Company (the Ten).

The chief **reason which induces the slaves to run away** is their idea that as soon as they arrive there [in Orinoco] they will be exempted from their slavery, and it is a fact that, directly upon their arrival, they are baptized by a priest and declared free, but then they are starving, to prevent which they are given, on behalf of the King, their food and drink, or 5 stivers per day.

In return for which they must work at the fortifications or in the mines fully as hard as they ever had to do during their slavery, and if they show the least inclination to go back again, chains are put on their legs in order to keep them there. *Same, pp. 24–25.*

1785. Director-General in Essequibo.

This [as to the Moruka Post] is all subject to your Honours' approval, and to save as far as may be possible the Colony from ruin, caused through the **desertion [of slaves] to Oronoque.** *Same, p. 36.*

Everything here is in good order, only there remains the **desertion of the slaves** of our inhabitants to Oronoque, which always continues, and proves a great drawback to the welfare of this Colony. *Same, p. 39.*

1786. Director-General in Essequibo.

Now that we are . . . possibly about to become allies of Spain we may obtain a Cartel with [her] . . . for the **extradition of our slaves who desert** . . . then would the inhabitants, particularly those of Essequibo, fast begin to enjoy rest. Then we should be able to open Bouweron without danger. *Same, p. 41.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

The Caura [river] **deserves most attention,** on account of its abundance of wood and the fertility of its soil and arable lands, in which the Indians cultivate produce of first necessity; and **a beginning has been made** of some small plantations of cotton **by the fugitive negroes from Essequibo.** *Same, p. 56.*

1790. Director-General.

For an **exchange of runaway slaves** to the Orinoco and other Spanish possessions. *Same, p. 74.*

SLAVERY—ITS STATUS AND IMPORTANCE—(Continued).

1790. Lopez de la Puente.

The **rebellious negro slaves,** which at present numbers **12,000 more or less,** . . . are independent, and recognize no superior. . . . They have always resisted the yoke of foreigners, but particularly that of the Dutch, and have beaten the large expeditions . . . sent for the purpose of reducing them; . . . **the Dutch** now **pay them a large sum** in kind **so that they may refrain from raiding their settlements.** *B. C., V, 120.*

1791. Treaty of Aranjuez.

The reciprocal surrender of white or black fugitives is agreed upon between all the Spanish possessions in America, and all the Dutch Colonies, and particularly . . . between all the Spanish establishments on the Orinoco and Essequibo and Demerara, Berbice and Surinam. *Same, p. 128.*

1792. A. Backer to Spanish Governor-General.

Whereas . . . the General States of the United Netherlands have, on the 23d of June of the past year, made an **agreement in Aranjuez** with . . . the King of Spain, **with regard to the extradition and surrender of fugitive slaves** . . . we hope that the bearer of this letter will receive from Your Excellency all the facility and aid to recover several negro slaves who have fled last year from Essequibo and Demerara to Orinoco.

We are disposed, on our part, to strictly fulfill the above-mentioned Agreement. *V. C., II, 482.*

SLAVERY—ABOLITION OF BY BRITISH, ITS EFFECT.

1794. Governor-General in Essequibo.

A plantation without slaves is a body without soul; it is only too well known that our trade on the coast of Guinea is in great decay; still, the agricultural Colonies must not for that reason be made to languish. . . . **this Colony will** now, we hope, . . . daily **grow and flourish, if permitted freely to import slaves.** *B. C., V. 154.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

This same year of **1807 saw the abolition of the African slave trade,** the first of those steps which in 1838 resulted in the total abolition of slavery from the Colony. . . . this . . . came as **a severe blow to the struggling planters** whose dependence upon their slaves was complete. The blow itself came at a most inopportune moment. It came **when the colony was already in a moribund condition.** *V. C., 173.*

The effect of this final emancipation was almost the ruin of the Colony. *Same, pp. 174–175.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **abolition of the slave trade, the subsequent emancipation of the negroes,** and the resulting loss to the planters, this **had no effect upon the area which Great Britain continued to occupy.** *B. C.-C., 112.*

SLAVERY—ABOLITION OF BY BRITISH, ITS EFFECT—(Continued).

1807. [1893] James Rodway.

The abolition of the African trade in 1807 was naturally a great shock to the planters. The old system of buying new laborers to open up and extend the plantations then came to an end, and enterprise in that direction received a check from which it has never since recovered. *V. C., III, 325.*

1810. Court of Policy.

[As to the **Caribs**] having formerly been of great use to the Colony . . . this certainly was the case at the time it was lawful to employ the other classes of Indians as slaves, when these Caraiban Indians were very **useful in procuring them, but could not be applicable at this moment, when that trade was prohibited.** *B. C., V. 195.*

1849. Earl Grey.

It is most melancholy to learn, that while the **difficulties** of the planters have continued **since the abolition of slavery** to become more and more severe, until now their ruin appears to be almost complete, and the depreciation of property once of such great value, has reached a point which involves in the deepest distress great numbers of persons both in this country and the colony; at the same time the negroes, instead of having made a great advance in civilization as might have been hoped during the fifteen years which have elapsed since their emancipation, have, on the contrary, retrograded rather than improved, and that they are now as a body less amenable than they were when that great change took place, to the restraints of religion and of law, less docile and tractable, and almost as ignorant and as much subject as ever to the degrading superstition which their forefathers brought with them from Africa. *V. C., III, 327.*

1894. James Rodway.

The **emancipation act** had been passed on the 24th of August [183–] and was published in the Colony on the 19th of October. *V. C., III, 325.*

Under the **emancipation Act** the slaves were classified as predials and domestics, the former being bound to remain as apprentices until 1840, while the latter would be entirely free in 1838. *Same, p. 326.*

It is undoubtedly true that **emancipation meant a serious reduction of the estimated capital** and, as a natural consequence, of all the advantages of its possession. Only about a third of the value of the slaves was received, so that every owner was mulcted in the amount of the other two thirds, leaving him in so much the worse position as a borrower. From all that can be gleaned, the human property on an estate was always of more importance than the acreage in cultivation, and was therefore its prop and mainstay in all financial difficulties. *Same, p. 326.*

It was undoubtedly true that there was **great distress in the Colony at this time.** Lieutenant Governor Walker reported to the Secretary of State [Earl Grey], on the matter, giving a sad picture of the Colony. *Same, p. 327.*

A commission was appointed, in January, 1850, to enquire into the state and prospects of the Colony, which reported on the 28th of December of the same year. **This report** is most exhaustive, **proving beyond a doubt that the colony in general was virtually ruined.** *Same, p. 327.*

DUTCH FISHERIES.

1681. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have obtained little food from them [natives] and this want has been supplied by the sea-side and again two canoes have gone there, one of them **to Amacura to salt manatees** and wild hog's flesh. *B. C., I, 185.*

1699. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Our barque which we sent **to Waini . . . to salt fish** and to trade . . . arrived here . . . with a very bad catch, and without having done any trading.

We thought it to be the interest of the Company to let the said yacht [Rammekens] make a short **cruise to Waini to salt fish,** wherein the desired success was not achieved. *Same, p. 214.*

1699. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

July 31, [1699]. Daniel Henderson came to the fort from Demerary . . . **to go salting up the river.** *Same, p. 215.*

October 27, [1699]. The yacht "Rammekens" has gone **down to the River Wayni for the salting of provisions.**

November 11, [1699]. The yacht "Rammekens" again dropped down stream **to go and salt in the River Wayni,** as has already been mentioned. *Same, p. 216.*

1710. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Having learned through the creole Jan, whom I had sent **to Mazaruni to salt for the fort.** *Same, p. 234.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

This Colony from its very beginning having been in the possession of that [Orinoco] fishery, and never having suffered the least hindrance or opposition from the Spaniards, this [seizure by the Spaniards, of a Dutch fishing boat] appears to me to be a kind of piratical act which cannot be tolerated. . . . The new Governor being due in Orinoco in February next, I shall send there to claim the boats and cargoes, but I am certain that such will be in vain. *B. C., II, 47.*

1747. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We hereby repeat . . . and also very earnestly recommend you herewith to aid in every possible way, and with all your might, in the **maintenance of the fishery [in the Orinoco region] and to help preserve the right thereof.** *Same, p. 49.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I shall also, as soon as a favorable opportunity occurs, **execute your Honours' orders . . . as regards the fishery.** I have brought the matter so far with the Commandant of Orinoco, that I believe myself that no further disturbances will occur, but I can obtain no satisfaction for the three canoes taken away because he pretends that this took place through a privateer of Trinidad, and thus out of his jurisdiction. *Same, p. 55.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

Spanish deserters have arrived in Essequibo, . . . They give the harsh treatment of the new Governor as a reason for deserting, . . . I do not trust the whole business, especially since commerce **with Orinoco** is entirely stopped, and **even the fishery is absolutely at a standstill, which has never happened before, and which is exceedingly embarrassing** . . . to the whole Colony. *B. C., III, 143.*

On account of the bad treatment received at the hands of the present Governor of Orinoque, all the Warouws, thousands of whom live on the islands in the mouth of the Orinoco, are fleeing from there, and that hundreds of them have already arrived in Barima. **Our fishery is therefore knocked on the head for some time,** unless that nation should resolve to exchange blow for blow; . . . but courage fails them, for . . . [they are] most afraid of firearms.

Same, p. 144.

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

They [Spaniards] are not content with most unreasonably keeping our runaway slaves and with **hindering us from carrying on the fishery in Oronoco,** which we have always been free to do, but they **now wish to prevent us from salting along our own coasts,** and will in this manner end by closing our river, and no boats will dare to go out any more. *Same, p. 181.*

1768. British Case.

The Dutch had for many years [before 1768] enjoyed the maracot fishery in the mouth of the Orinoco. It was much hindered by the Spaniards, but always upon the plea that the vessels were not fishing but smuggling. *B. C., 52.*

1769. British Counter Case.

The **Dutch fishery in** the mouth of **the Orinoco** . . . had been **enjoyed by the Dutch for a long period, and their right** to it was **never denied by the Spanish authorities till 1769.** . . . All the captures of the Dutch fishing craft before that year were either acts of piracy, disavowed by the Spanish Commander, who, in many cases, procured redress for the owners, or were justified only on the grounds that, under pretence of fishing, contraband trade was being carried on with the Spanish possessions. There is nothing to show that the Dutch fishery was permanently abandoned after 1769. *B. C.-C., 87–88.*

1769. Remonstrance of the States-General.

That . . . the people of the Orinoco had some time ago not only begun to dispute with the people of Essequibo about the **fishing rights** in the mouth of **the Orinoco** and thereupon to prevent them by force from enjoying the same, notwithstanding that the **people of Essequibo** had been for **many years in peaceful and quiet possession of that fishery,** . . . but . . . the people of Orinoco were beginning to prevent, by force, their fishing upon the territory of the State itself, extending from the River Marowyn to beyond the River Wayne, not far from the mouth of the Orinoco. *B. C., IV, 31.*

1769. West India Company.

Concerning the . . . **hindering of the fisheries** . . . we have made a very full **remonstrance** to the States General. *V. C., II, 212.*

1769. Secretary of State for the Indies.

It is necessary for me to ask information from the Governors of . . . Guayana and of Cumana concerning the facts which are reported, and to forward the said memorial [Dutch remonstrance of 1769] to the Council of the Indies, in order that His Majesty may be informed . . . about **the right claimed by the Republic to the fishery at the entrance to the River Orinoco . . . a thing** as **new to me** as that the Carib tribe of Indians is conceived of as the ally of the Dutch. *V. C., III, 381.*

1770. Commandant of Guayana.

The fishery in the mouths of the Orinoco was never less disputed by the Spaniards to the Dutch than at present, for the Dutch do not fish there, and in the three years that the privateers for this river have been in service by my orders they have taken twenty-three foreign vessels, but no fishing boat, nor have even seen any, nor has it come to my knowledge that the Dutch have had such fishery . . . And I have only been able to find one case in which the Spaniards had met with and taken in the year 1760 a small Dutch schooner and two fishing-boats, in the mouth of the Orinoco and River Barima . . . I am of opinion **this pretended fishery should be denied to them and prohibited.** *B. C., IV, 72.*

1785. Council of the Indies.

In 1769 the **Ambassador of Holland appeared, . . . presenting . . . a memorial** . . . that the Spaniards had commenced some time back, to dispute their **right to fish at the mouth of the Orinoco, and in the stretch of territory between the Marewigui river and** the other side of the **Wayne,** belonging to the State, . . . and that they had been disturbed in their fishing by force, notwithstanding the long time they had enjoyed it quietly and peacefully, and that it was of great profit to them by reason of the abundance of fish to be found there. *Same, pp. 274–275.*

The Governors of Guayana and Cumana . . . reported (justifying the same). *Same, p. 275.*

That they could not found such pretensions upon the tacit or express permission that the Commandants of Guayana and Orinoco may have at times given them to fish at the Boca de Navios and the Barima and Aquire rivers; on the huts they may have built to salt and dry their catch, nor on the navigation which may have been furtively allowed them as far as Guayana or farther up. *Same, p. 277.*

The matter remained in this condition up to the year 1785, when, the brief having been made by the Relator, and the Record returned to the Attorney-General . . . he stated in his reply of May 27 of the same year [1785] that at that time there was no action required, since more than fifteen years having passed without any pressure being brought by the Minister of Holland in the premises, it was natural to believe that **the Republic better apprised of the want of just reasons for the demand** it had **made, had desisted therefrom.**

Same, pp. 279–280.

CHAPTER III.

BOUNDARIES.

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO GUIANA AS A WHOLE.

——. Venezuelan Case.

Spain was the **first nation to discover South America**, to explore it, and to take formal possession of it. *V. C., 221.*

——. British Counter Case.

That Spain was the **first to discover** South America **is admitted**, but her exploration of it was very limited. *B. C.-C., 130.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Spain was the **first nation to discover and explore Guiana.** *V. C., 221.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is **admitted that Spain was the first nation to discover Guiana.** It is untrue that except to a very limited extent she explored that country. All the important explorations in that part of the territory now called Guiana were made by the English and Dutch. *B. C.-C., 130.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Spain was . . . the **first** and only nation **to take formal possession of,** and to occupy, **Guiana as a whole.** *V. C., 221.*

——. British Counter Case.

At no time did she [**Spain**] **take formal possession of** and occupy **Guiana as a whole**; the acts of the Dutch and the Spaniards wholly rebut any such contention. *B. C.-C., 130.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

Spain herself, **from first to last, proclaimed her sole right to the whole of Guiana** south of the narrow fringe of Dutch, French and English settlements along the coast. The Orinoco and the entire coast region as far east as the Essequibo she always regarded as her own. *V. C.-C., 29.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

Spanish claim, of any formal, official sort, as **to the boundary** in Guiana, I have **nowhere found in the Diplomatic correspondence** preserved in Dutch archives. . . . The Dutch remonstrances of 1759 and 1769, which alone from the Dutch side seem to have asked Spanish attention to the question, never received a formal answer. *V. C.-C., II, 209.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO GUIANA AS A WHOLE—(Continued).

1615. King of Spain.

It has been understood that **in the region of Guayana the enemy have made some settlements** in which they are planting a very great quantity of tobacco, and to which ships go very commonly to be laden therewith, and on the way they traffic and do all the other injury they are able.

The said Governor is commanded to try to dislodge [them] from there, by taking from them the said settlements, and by taking the necessary measures to **extirpate the enemy from every point of that island on which they have taken footing.** *B. C., I, 54.*

1637. Don Juan Desologuren.

Each new settlement which they [**Dutch**] found is a source of present advantage to them, and though it may seem an error of judgment to scatter their strength in so many places, it is not so in them, because **by these means they divert His Majesty's arms and are not molested by his power,** as they would be if their settlements were few, **and they can thus advance upon the mainland** in whatever part is most convenient to them. *Same, p. 78.*

The **coasts** being as they are, **infested with** pirates and **foreign settlements,** it would be rashness for those in authority to send help even if they were commanded to do so; . . . I will not dilate here on the extent to which the **coasts and islands are infested with enemies.** *Same, p. 81.*

1637. Don Pedro de Vivero.

On the mainland in the jurisdiction of this Royal Audiencia and of the said Government and port of Guayana, **English, Irish, and others,** with negro slaves, **have established and settled** themselves, from Cape North up to the mouth of the River Orinoco. *Same, p. 110.*

The **said pirates want to seize this New Kingdom of Granada, and the ports** and islands **of** Margarita, Trinidad, and **Guayana,** in the Government of Caracas and Venezuela, as they have done in Pernambuco and Brazil and other ports, which your Royal person and your Royal Council of the Indies have defended with such care and vigilance, so that the said pirates should not seize the said ports. And those who are therein have foreseen that upon ejecting them therefrom, they will doubtless proceed to take possession of the said Guayana on account of the great tobacco trade, the mines of gold and silver and the other products. *Same, p. 111.*

1638. Royal Audiencia of New Kingdom of Granada.

The Governor of Guayana . . . wrote to us in the month of August of last year, 1637, that he was besieged by the Dutch enemies who have generally infested those coasts, . . . representing the injuries that would follow **if these enemies should take possession of those provinces.** *Same, pp. 105–106.*

1662. Governor of Trinidad.

These [settlements on the Wild Coast] are composed of companies, and many of them with permission of the States of Holland, and **from the way they divide these lands, they appear to be theirs.** *Same, p. 152.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO GUIANA AS A WHOLE—(Continued).

1662. Spanish Council of War.

For the said assistance [to Santo Thome and Trinidad] accrues to the defence of the New Kingdom and of the Province of Barinas, to which parts the enemy have an entrance through the mouths of the River Orinoco **if they become masters of the said coast.** *B. C., I, 160.*

1676. Spanish Council of War.

[Spanish claim to all Guiana.] In view of the time and season, it does not appear advisable at present to bring the proposed complaint [against a proposed Dutch colony at Cape Orange between Surinam and the River Amazon] before the States-General. *Same, p. 176.*

What the Dutch are now desirous of attempting is more absolute, for their object [in planting a Colony at Cape Orange] is to increase plantations in the Indies . . . and to extend them along the coasts of the mainland in order to get the trade more into their hands, to the serious loss and prejudice of the inhabitants of those ports, and the evident **risk of the Indies being lost through** the numerous **settlements which the Northern nations have made** in those provinces. *Same, p. 178.*

1737. Marquis de Torrenueva.

In view of the fact that the Dutch are established within this demarcation and limits, on the continent of the Province of Guayana, and occupy with their cities and mills, the territory which stretches from the Orinoco [according to the map cited below this should read Essequibo] to the before-mentioned Surinam, a distance of 5°, from 318½° to 324° of [east] longitude, [according to Delisle's map of 1703, *U. S. Com. atlas, map 37*] . . . The opinion which I gave at the Council of State in reference to the disputes with Portugal . . . in which is also treated of what may and ought to be done to check . . . **the Dutch** on the River Orinoco [Essequibo according to latitude and longitude cited above] who **are trying** by these rivers **to establish themselves in our dominions.** *B. C., II, 41.*

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

The Dutch are **established on the mainland,** to the **east of** the Great Mouth of the **Orinoco,** and in the position marked out in the plan which he has sent. They are divided into the three Colonies which are called Essequibo, Berbice and Surinam. In order **to dislodge them from all these Colonies** a large number of **troops and war vessels,** well equipped, **are necessary,** as they are strongly fortified and garrisoned, and especially so in the ancient settlement of Rio de Surinam. *B. C.-C., App., 185.*

1743. Marquis de Torrenueva.

Equal attention is due to **the object with which the Dutch established themselves to the windward of the River Orinoco,** in 5° north latitude, and 325° nearly of [east] longitude, according to Delisle [*V. C. atlas, map 37*] to leeward of the Island of Cayenne, and in 6° north latitude, and 320° 40′ longitude, with the two forts with the name "Zeelandeses" between the rivers named Surinam and Cupenam. And this could be no other than **to get nearer** to the mouth and banks of the said [Orinoco] river, and to found thereon plantations, which might facilitate their traffic with the new kingdom, and enable them to penetrate by that part to those places and districts which their avarice might dictate **until they**

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO GUIANA AS A WHOLE—(Continued).

made themselves masters of the mouth of the Orinoco, . . . it being necessary to preserve this mouth as a safeguard of that kingdom, it is no less necessary to restrain the Dutch from approaching its banks either by land or water, keeping in view with this object the Vth and VIth Articles of the Treaty of Peace with that nation of 1648. The mouth of the River Essequibo offers facilities for carrying out those designs, being situated, according to this geographer, in 6° 40′ latitude, and 318° 10′ [east] longitude, and its source in 1° nearly of north latitude, and 316° of [east] longitude, thus the whole course of the river forms a large extent of country, . . . it contains within its limits tribes of Indians to be reduced, many who would then serve as a barrier so that the Dutch might not pass to the west of this [Essequibo] river. *B. C., II, 41.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

A wanderer of the name of Pinet having gone **up the** River **Cuyuni** . . . has made report to me that **the Spaniards** had not yet undertaken the building of any forts or Missions as had been their intention lower down, but that they cruelly **ill-treated the Indians subject to us,** continually taking them by surprise in their dwellings and carrying them off, with their wives and children, to send them to Florida; that he had spoken to **the Chief of the Spaniards,** . . . but that the latter had **replied that the whole of America belonged to the King of Spain,** and that he should do what suited himself, without troubling about us. *Same, p. 58.*

1753. Portuguese Secretary of State to Spanish Ambassador.

The project of hindering the Dutch from penetrating, as they have endeavored to do, **into the heart of the dominions of** the two crowns [**Spain and Portugal**] . . . appeared as justifiable as it is in conformity with the law of natural defence . . . that nation . . . reduced within their own proper limits, cannot subsist on the continent in which up to the present **they have tried to usurp the dominions of others,** except by bringing forces from Europe. *Same, p. 82.*

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

No other means [than giving support to revolted slaves] offers itself to discover **the secret invasions** they [**Dutch**] **are carrying on in our dominions.** *Same, p. 86.*

In respect that **all the territory** comprised **between** the Rivers **Marañon and Orinoco unquestionably belongs to** the two Crowns [**Spain and Portugal**] any establishment of the other foreigners in that place is to be looked upon as a usurpation of their rights, and they cannot show that we have formally recognized that dominion as theirs. *Same, p. 87.*

Although the two Courts [Spain and Portugal] have not considered it convenient to attack them [**Dutch in Guayana**] with open force, nevertheless they are agreed in the scheme of doing so by intrigue, . . . both nations have resolved to take measures to **hem them in,** each on its own side, the Spaniards by that of the River Orinoco, and the Portuguese by the Marañon . . . in order **that they may not penetrate the interior,** seeking better establishments and a more profitable commerce. *Same, p. 88.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO GUIANA AS A WHOLE—(Continued).

1760. Confidential Report to King of Spain.

In the public report we appear to ignore the place which the rebel negroes maintain against the Dutch. . . . **as Spain, by the Peace of Utrecht, is not bound to maintain the Dutch in the said Colony, she may** in good conscience and Christian policy, consent and **contribute to their expulsion by the negroes,** . . . these negroes . . . are about 30,000 in number, and though they were only 6,000, that number of resolute spirits would be sufficient to eject the Dutch from their colonies.

These negroes have retired into the dale left by the small mountain range which borders the coast on the limits of this province, and runs, . . . as far as Cape North, and thus their territory or colonies lie between the southern limits of the Dutch, and the northern limits of the French, which they call Cayenne, . . . Your Majesty will understand how strong is the territory held by these men, and how difficult it is for the Dutch to reduce them by force of arms, and how conducive it would be to your Majesty's interests to acquire it.

B. C.-C., App., 205–206.

1761. Don Jose Diguja.

This Province of **Guayana** has as **boundaries: On the east, all the coast on which are situated the Dutch colonies** of Esquivo, Bervis, Demerari, Corentin and Surinama; **and further to windward, Cayenne,** belonging to the French; on the north, the banks of the Orinoco, which, separating the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fe and Popayan, forms a half circle, running back east to seek its head-waters in Parima Lake; on the south, the dominions of the Most Faithful King in Brazil, the frontiers of the latter, and the said Province of Guayana being unknown. *V. C., II, 273.*

1761. Don Jose Solano.

Guayana is the most eastern province of the dominions of your Majesty in the northern part of South America; its **boundaries** are the western ocean **on the east,** on the coasts of which (? are **the Colonies of the French**) **at the mouth of the Amazon and those of the Dutch at Surinam and Esquivo, near the Orinoco;** on the south, the Portuguese, . . . and on the west and north the Casiquiari, . . . and this great river [Orinoco]. *B. C., II, 204–205.*

1769. Prefect of Missions.

The territory of this Mission of **the Capuchins** . . . **is from Angostura of the Orinoco to the Grand Mouth, in a straight line, on both sides, to the** Marañon or **Amazons.** This, together with the protest, . . . of the Governor of Essequibo, makes me doubt if it be permitted to us to penetrate to the interior in future for the purpose of reducing Indians of the before-mentioned parts, Barima, Moruca, Cuyuni, and even of the coast; and as it is a matter so necessary to the practice of the reductions, it appears to me well to lay before your Majesty my doubt. *B. C., IV, 23–24.*

1769. Report to Council of Indies.

The Province of **Guayana** is situated on the other side of the River Orinoco. Its **limits are:—**

On the east all the coast on which are the Dutch Colonies of Esquibon, Berbis, Mesari, Corentyne, and Surinam, **and further to the windward Cayenne,** which belongs to the French;

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO GUIANA AS A WHOLE—(Continued).

On the north, the banks of the Orinoco, which divide the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Santa Fee, Caracas, Barinas, and Popayan, and form a semi-circle, bending to the east up to its source in the Lake of Parimas;

On the south, the dominions of Brazil, the boundaries between which and the Province of Guayana are unknown, as also is the extent of the interior. This Province has for its Capital Santo Thome de Guayana. *B. C., IV, 43.*

1779. Don Jose de Abalos.

The said Dutch Colony of Essequibo, and the others which the States-General possess on that coast, are all in general on the banks of the rivers, close to the sea-shore, and do not penetrate far into **the interior** of the country, and, consequently, at the **back of** Essequibo and the other **Dutch possessions,** . . . the land is in part free from them and only occupied by heathen Indians and . . . negro slaves, fugitives. . . . The commissioners shall endeavor to occupy the said lands as **appertaining to Spain, their first discoverer, and not afterwards given up nor occupied at the present time by any other Power, neither has any other Power a title thereto.** *Same, p. 195.*

The occupation of **the lands in all these countries** must be taken up as **part of the same Province of Guayana,** and in the name of the Governor and Commandant thereof as its Chief and Head, by grant and appointment from his Majesty. *Same, p. 196.*

1790. Governor of Guayana.

My care has been compelled by the fact that **the Dutch, French and Portuguese have occupied** the greater part of this vast extent of **our territory, and** that from day to day they **are advancing** their possessions, **particularly** the **Dutch, by the River Essequibo.** *B. C., V, 82.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO ESSEQUIBO.

1637. Jacques Ousiel.

The Governor set forth that immediately after the conquest of Tobago he had resolved to carry his victorious arms against **Essequibo, a fort lying in his province of Guayana.** *B. C., I, 86.*

1737. Marquis de Torrenueva.

In view of the fact that **the Dutch** are established within this demarcation and limits, on the continent of the Province of Guayana, and **occupy** with their cities and mills, **the territory which stretches from the Orinoco** [according to the map cited below this should read **Essequibo**] to the before-mentioned Surinam, **a distance of 5°, from 318½° to 324° of** [east] **longitude** [according to Delisle's map of 1703, *V. C. atlas, pl. 37*]. . . .

The opinion which I gave at the Council of State in reference to the disputes with Portugal . . . in which is also treated of what may and ought to be done to check the French on the Mississippi and the Dutch on the River Orinoco [should be *Essequibo* according to longitude above cited] who **are trying by these rivers to establish themselves in our dominions.** *B. C., II, 41.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

Your Majesty may order the chief or commander who will be in charge in Orinoco to request the Governor of **the** nearest **Dutch** settlement **not to advance further towards** the mouths of **the Orinoco,** and marking out the limits of the place where they are stationed, to take care that they do not advance further.

B. C.-C., App., 185.

1760. Confidential Report to King of Spain.

The circuit of **Guayana** with its two districts, one **extending to Essequibo** and Caura, . . . and the other should . . . extend as far as the French settlements and the Portuguese frontier, both to the South of Guiana, **and** in this sense **if other Dominions** did not, and **had not intervened, Guayana would extend to the mouth of the Amazon,** . . . and would be an extensive island, comprehending what is shown on the general map from the ship's mouth to the mouth of the Marañon or Amazon.

To return to the extensive district of Guayana belonging to your Majesty's dominion, . . . the country is wild, with mountains and woods, as far as Cape North, uncultivated, unknown, and inhabited by innumerable nations of wild Indians of whom the missionaries of Guayana make use for their villages, the French for their missions, and the Dutch for labour. *Same, p. 207.*

1769. Councillor in Essequibo.

Pedro Sanchos has come **from Orinoco** with the bad news that in a month or six weeks two boats will come . . . as far as in Pomeroon to carry off the Indians, and then, I fear, plantations will surely be pillaged; for **this Governor sets his boundaries as far as the** bank of **Oeno,** [in the mouth of the Essequibo] where James Fenning lives. *B. C., IV, 42.*

1769. Director-General in Essequibo.

That Governor bragged considerably to this man, and **said that the land belonged to His Catholic Majesty as far as** to the bank of **Oene** [in the mouth of the Essequibo], and that he would come and seize those plantations which lay on Spanish territory. *V. C., II, 197.*

1779. Don Jose de Abalos.

The said **province of Guayana . . . begins,** on its eastern side, **to windward** of the outflow **of the** River **Orinoco** into the sea **on the border of the Dutch Colony of Essequibo,** it shall be one of the first cares . . . in making the new settlement to go as near as possible to the aforesaid Colony . . . for founding the first settlement. *B. C., IV, 194–195.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

Besides the advantages which, in the matter of settlement, may be expected **from founding on the** said hill of Bauruma (**Pomeroon**), . . . the result will be that with four or five villages **the very banks of the** River of **Essequibo will be reached,** and when this has been done the Dutch will be deprived of communication, not only with the various tribes of Indians lying to the south of Essequibo and all the creeks of the Orinoco, but likewise with all the Parime [Barima].

B. C.-C., App., 253–254.

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO ESSEQUIBO—(Continued).

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

The portion of this country [**Guiana**] **belonging to Spain is bounded on the east by the Dutch Colonies of Essequibo,** Demerari, Berbis, and Surinam, and by the French Colony of Cayenne; on the south by the Portuguese Colonies of the Amazons and Rio Negro; and on the west and north by the Upper and Lower Orinoco. *B. C., V, 52.*

1788. Don Fermin de Sancinenea.

The River Essequibo, which **is between our possessions and those of the Dutch.** *V. C., III, 400.*

1814. Venezuelan Case.

At the time of the acquisition by Great Britain of the colony now known as British Guiana, **the territories belonging to** or that might lawfully be claimed by the Kingdom of **Spain comprised the entire territory between the Orinoco and Essequibo rivers.** *V. C., 235.*

1814. British Counter Case.

It is wholly untrue that at the time of the acquisition by Great Britain of the Colony now known as British Guiana, **the territories belonging to,** or that might lawfully be claimed by the King of **Spain, comprised the entire territory between the Orinoco and Essequibo Rivers.** *B. C.-C., 141.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO ALL THE COAST.

——. Venezuelan Case.

From the Orinoco to the Essequibo the Spaniards claimed dominion They also exercised exclusive control there. *V. C., 135.*

1614. Antonio de Muxica Buitron.

It would be **well to free our coasts of them** [**Dutch**] entirely, for, from the River Marañon [Amazon] to the Orinoco there are three or four more [in addition to the one on the Corentine destroyed in 1613] of their settlements, and their plantations are very considerable. *B. C., I, 36.*

1615. Report of Council to Spanish King.

By allowing Foreign nations so ill-affected to Spain to have settlements in **territory which belongs to your Majesty,** we suffer in reputation. *Same, p. 44.*

1662. Report of Spanish Council of War.

He [Governor Viedma] says that he had sent a person to reconnoitre the settlements and towns which the foreigners have there, who found that **on the coast of Terra Firma (jurisdiction of his Government** 20 leagues to windward of the River Orinoco) there are **two settlements; one of 150 Dutch, and another of 280.** *Same, p. 159.*

1761. Don Jose Diguja.

In the geographical **description . . . by** its Governor, . . . **Diguja,** in 1761 **. . . this Province of Guayana has as boundaries: on the east, all the coast on which are situated the Dutch Colonies** of Esquivo, Bervis, Demerari, Corentin, and Surinama; **and further to windward, Cayenne,** belonging to the French; on the north, the banks of the Orinoco, which, separating the Provinces of

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO ALL THE COAST—(Continued).

Cumaná, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Sante Fé and Popayan, forms a half circle, running back east to seek its head-waters in Parima lake; on the south, the dominions of the Most Faithful King in Brazil, the frontiers of the latter, and the said Province of Guayana being unknown. *V. C., II, 273.*

1769. Director-General in Essequibo.

My opinion always has been that they [Spaniards] would gradually acquire a foothold in Cuyuni, and try to obtain the mastery of the river, as they now practically have done at the end of the past year. But I should as soon have expected Heaven to fall, as that **they**, in so high-handed a manner, openly, (as if in open warfare), in breach of the right of nations, in breach of all Treaties of Alliance with His Catholic Majesty, should attack us from another side, and have the audacity to **go to work as if they were Sovereigns of this whole coast.** . . . They have captured and taken away all our people that were on the sea-coast. The salter of Luyxbergen has luckily escaped them, but his Indians, his vessels, two large canoes and three single canoes, which he had got by barter, they have taken away. *B. C., IV, 6–7.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO THE POMEROON-MORUCA REGION.

——. Venezuelan Case.

Over by the **Moruca and Pomeroon** they [Spaniards] had made their presence effectively felt, and **Spain claimed both of these rivers as her own.** *V. C., 105.*

——. British Counter Case.

No division, assignment or **claim** had **ever placed Moruka** within **the province of the Capuchin Fathers.** *B. C.-C., 89.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

From the first Dutch occupation of the Pomeroon, in 1658, down to late in the eighteenth century, the claim of the Dutch to that river seems to have been unquestioned. . . . In 1769, for the first time, we hear in Dutch records of a counterclaim: the Spanish **Governor of Orinoco** is said to have **declared** that the **territory** was **Spain's as far as** the bank of **Oene, in the mouth of the Essequibo.** During the years which followed, though Spain and Holland were at peace, there was more than one Spanish incursion into the Pomeroon; but, though ravages were committed along the coast and Indians abducted from the interior, there was no attempt actually to take possession of the river. Of the *Instruccion* of the Spanish Intendant-General of Venezuela, in February, 1779, for the occupation and settlement of Guayana," to the borders of the Dutch colony of Essequibo," the Dutch authorities seem to have known nothing; but of the reconnoisance later . . . by . . . Inciarte . . . they knew; . . . but the Director-General having assured himself that they were "all gone without having done any harm" to the post or to the Indians, evinced no disquiet about the matter, and no steps seem to have been taken toward protest or further investigation. *V. C.-C., II, 96.*

1662. Report of Spanish Council of War.

[Governor Viedma] says that he had sent a person to reconnoitre the settlement and towns which the foreigners have there, who found that on the coast of Terra Firma (**jurisdiction of his Government 20 leagues to windward of the River Orinoco**) there are **two settlements; one of 150 Dutch, and another of 280.** *B. C., I, 159.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO THE POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

1757. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

If they [**Dutch**] **be permitted** to-day **in Moruca**, they will pass some other day to Barima, which flows into the mouth itself. *B. C., II, 137.*

1769. Certificate of the Capuchin Fathers.

We certify that **by mandate of our Superior and permission of the** Honourable **Commandant-General of** the River **Orinoco**, Don Manuel Centurion, **we have passed into Maruca in search of the Indians belonging to the Missions** of the Capuchin Fathers of Catalonia, and out of regard for the Postholders we give these presents the 28th day of February, 1769. *B. C., IV, 9.*

1775. Moruca Postholder.

He [**Spanish Captain**] further **said** that his lord and master would shortly set a guard in the creek of Weena, called the Barmani, and that **the whole of Maroekka** also **belonged to the Spaniards**, and I thereupon answered that the river Barima belonged to the Swede, and Weene, as well as Maroekka, to the Dutch, and they said that it was not so. *Same, p. 138.*

[1778]. Council of the Indies.

[The Commandant of Guiana wrote in 1778] **between the Guayne and Moruca (a territory contiguous to the Orinoco, and never occupied by the Dutch).** *V. C., II, 278.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

At a quarter of a league before reaching the aforesaid **Dutch post** [**Moruca**] the rivulet forms a small bay . . . and this bay could serve as a port.

It would be convenient in my opinion to found a town close to this bay or port, as besides the advantages offered by the produce of the land, the communication which the Dutch have with the Orinoco by means of the inside branches could be prevented.

The passage of the river Moruca could easily be prevented by erecting a fort with four or six guns in the aforesaid small bay.

As for protecting the town against the attacks of the Dutch or any other enemy, this can be obtained by erecting a fort on one of the small heights.

Same, pp. 435-436.

Having embarked and continued **up the** said Bauruma, [**Pomeroon**] we arrived . . . opposite the rancherias of the aforesaid Piache [an Arawak Indian doctor]. . . . Having asked me, through an interpreter, with what object I had come to these parts, I told them . . . that my chief reason was to ascertain whether . . . the Dutch were enslaving them and making Poitos of them while they had been declared free by our Sovereign. At this reply most of them became angry and spoke with harshness and contempt of the Dutch, and reproached me because the Spaniards, although owning the lands, and being their relatives, did not go thither to settle, and said they wanted to live in a village with their relatives the Spaniards. Having told them that everything would be done as they wished, they became very happy. . . . Directly I had looked at the farms they made me fire a shot at a tree, telling me that it was in token **of having taken possession of those lands in the name of . . . the King** . . . for they belonged to him and to no one else. *B. C.-C., App., 235.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO THE POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

1779. [1897] George L. Burr.

The elaborate reconnoissance . . . in 1779 by . . . Inciarte, was attended by no breach of the peace; and his report in favor of Spanish establishments on both these rivers, although it resulted in a royal order for the erection of a Spanish village and fort in the **Moruca** at the site of the Dutch post, seems to have led to no practical results. [Nothing of all this is known to the Dutch records except the presence of the Spanish party in Pomeroon and Moruca.] **Whatever claims to the river might be made by the Spaniards, I cannot learn that the Dutch were ever actually disturbed in the possession of their post.** There was, indeed, as we learn from other sources than the Dutch, an unsuccessful Spanish attack on the Post in 1797, while the Colony was in the hands of the English; but this was in time of war. *V. C.-C., II, 109.*

1780. King of Spain.

Inciarte is to return . . . for the purpose of occupying and settling the places specified in his . . . Report . . . and making the provisional fortification which he considered needful, ejecting the Dutch from the Post or advance guard-house, which they have built on the road of **the River Morueca,** . . . If the . . . Governor of Essequibo should complain thereof, the answer is to be given that the proceedings . . . are in accordance with the general laws and instructions . . . which do not permit such intrusion of foreigners **in the Spanish dominions**, for this is the reply that will be given here if any complaints or claims should be lodged by the States-General of Holland. *B. C., IV, 212.*

1783. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

As regards the settlement of the eastern part of the Lower Orinoco and the frontiers of the Colony of Essequibo, for which I hold a commission, I will refer to what . . . I remitted . . . to his Excellency . . . de Galvez . . . the 27th November, 1779; but as during the war the French took possession of the Colony of Essequibo, **the Dutch have abandoned** the advanced Post they held on the banks of **the River Morueca, which** position it is important **we should occupy** . . . it appears to me . . . advisable to fortify this Post . . . and to found a village with the Indian natives, who inhabit its vicinity, and to send two missionaries . . . and in this manner to **prevent the** inhabitants of the said Colony from **penetrating into the lands lying between them and the Orinoco.** *B. C., V, 20.*

1786. Director-General in Essequibo.

Meanwhile there had, . . . been spread a rumour . . . that **the Spaniards** had **threatened** if the tobacco were not restored that they would raid the [**Moruka**] **Post which they alleged was on their territory.**

Same, p. 45.

1786. Minute on Report of Jose de Abalos.

Placing the said . . . **fort** . . . in the same creek of the said **River Morueca** to prevent the passage of all hostile vessels, and **ejecting the Dutch** from the said Post or advanced guard-house which had been built there. . . . If the Governor of Essequibo should complain of this action he was to reply that he had proceeded in accordance with the general laws and instructions . . . which do not permit such **intrusions of foreigners in Spanish dominions** as those are. *Same, pp. 47–48.*

L. of C.

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO THE POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

1804. Lieutenant-Governor Myers.

It [colony of Essequibo and Demerara] is separated from Berbice by the Abari Creek. **The boundary** with the Spaniards is disputed. According to Dutch, it is a line running north and south from Cape Brama or Brem; and **according to the Spaniards it is the Morucco Creek,** a little to the westward of Cape Nassau. *B. C., V, 186.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

The South American Colonies . . . claimed the banks of the Rivers **Moroco and Pomaroon** . . . from this point across the savannahs . . . first south-west and then south-east towards the confluence of the River Cuyuni with the Massaruni . . . and . . . along the western bank of the Essequibo as far as . . . the Rupununi. *B. C., VII, 4.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO BARIMA AND ORINOCO MOUTH.

1637. Governor of Guiana.

If they [Dutch] **attain their object in possessing themselves of the Orinoco** and destroying Guayana [Santo Thome] whereby they will become masters of the best land in the Indies. *B. C., I, 107.*

1638. Governor of Guiana.

If the enemy should seize this river [**Orinoco**] they could avail themselves of food for as many of their fleets as come, and for anything else they might design. *Same, p. 101.*

1719. Commandant at Santo Thome to Commandeur in Essequibo.

I beseech you **not to allow your soldiers** to come **to trade with the Indians of this river** [**Orinoco**], **because it is contrary to what has been stipulated,** and a thing which must not be permitted. *Same, p. 251.*

1734. Commandeur in Essequibo.

His Honour [**the Spanish Governor,** Don Carlos de Sucre] . . . has **brought** some **troops to the Orinoco,** and that he expects ten or twelve barques more with militia, whereof His Honour informs me, . . . giving as reasons for this sending of so many troops to these frontiers, that **he was persuaded** by advices (received) **that the Swedish nation was intending to found a Colony in the River of Barima,** lying between the Orinoco and your Honours' Post at Wacquepo, and he could not persuade himself that the Dutch nation would tolerate in their neighborhood so proud and haughty a nation as the Swedes.

After the departure of Captain Laurens Brander (. . . in the year 1732, . . .), a rumour spread in this Colony that the said Captain Brander would again return in order **to take possession in the River Barima of a tract of land which the King of Spain is said to have presented to the deceased Elector of Bavaria,** who was Governor of the Spanish Netherlands, and which the Elector had again presented to the King of Sweden. *B. C., II, 18.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO BARIMA AND ORINOCO MOUTH—(Continued).

1734. King of Spain.

The . . . President of . . . Santa Fe . . . having communicated . . . with respect to **the settlement which the Swedes were attempting to make in River Barima, . . . I . . . command** that . . . **you** take all proper measures **to prevent** the settlement attempted by the Swedish nation from being established. *B. C., III, 82.*

1737. Governor Don Carlos de Sucre.

He [Governor Sucre] finds himself again compelled to have recourse to your Majesty . . . especially as the northern nations have begun to settle at the mouth of the river [Orinoco], and sundry families of **Swedes** are **expected to** come and **settle in** the Cañon of **Barima**, within the river of that name. **This may result in the loss of those provinces** and of that of Carácas, and in the ultimate blocking of the road to Santa Fé de Bogotá. *B. C., II, 26.*

1758. Military Commandant in Essequibo to Spanish Commandant in Orinoco.

He [Director-General in Essequibo] has ordered me to send you the enclosed **map [by M. d'Anville]**, on which you will be able to see them [the boundaries of the territory] very distinctly, and these, in accordance with the inviolable duty of his office, he hopes to be able to maintain. *Same, p. 173.*

1760. Judicial Report as to Attack by Spaniards on **Dutch settled in Barima.**

Since it conduces to the service of God our Lord and of His Catholic Majesty . . . to **keep the Dutch** of the said Colonies [Essequibo and Surinam] by chastisement **within their own possessions** (if so be that they hold them lawfully) **and** to **deter them from pressing into these dominions of the King** through the intersecting rivers. *Same, p. 187.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

Discussion for the last sixty years, about the **fortification of** this most important river [**Orinoco**], so as **to** prevent its navigation by foreigners, and **secure the whole of these provinces**, to which it affords ingress. For this only three places have been considered adequate. . . . Angostura, . . . the Island of Faxardo, . . . and the fortress of Guayana. *B. C., III, 29.*

1764. British Case.

In 1764 the settlement of **Santo Thome** was **removed to Angostura**, on the Orinoco, above the mouth of the Caroni. The forts, however, remained at **the old site** which **was treated as the effective frontier of the Spanish possessions.** *B. C., 16.*

1768. Judicial Proceedings.

First notice [of sale]. I ordered . . . the first announcement should be given **of the goods** and utensils . . . that were **seized** . . . **from the foreigners clandestinely settled** for commerce and traffic **in** the creek called the Creek of **Barima, jurisdiction of this province.** *B. C., III, 168.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO BARIMA AND ORINOCO MOUTH—(Continued).

1768. Judicial Proceedings.

Declaration of First Witness. Francisco Cierto, Captain . . . of the coast-guard which protects the ports of this said province, . . . declared: That **the Commandant-General . . . having received information that in the** creek called the **Creek of Barima** which is close to the great front of the River Orinoco and falls into it, **sundry Dutch families were established, dispatched** him [Cierto] with instructions **to warn them** once, twice and thrice **to quit the whole of that territory because it belonged to the said province.**

B. C., III, 170.

We . . . Centurion . . . and . . . Oleaga . , . having seen the "Autos" drawn up on the expedition made . . . against the Dutch foreigners who had unlawfully established themselves, for clandestine trade in woods and other products, in **the Creek of Barima, jurisdiction of this province,** . . . and in view of the way in which they took to flight without endeavoring to defend themselves, leaving their implements . . . and goods . . . and in view of the sale . . . made of the articles brought back, the amount thereof being paid into the Royal Treasury . . . we . . . command that . . . the division and distribution of the total amount of this matter be carried out in the form and manner following. *Same, p. 174.*

1769. Royal Accountant in Guayana.

I . . . declare that . . . Captain . . . Cierto, with the two cruising launches of this river, sent by the said Señor Don Manuel Centurion, arrested the foreigners that were established on the **Barima Channel, jurisdiction of the** same **Province,** two boats and several tools and agricultural implements, which . . . were . . . declared confiscated. *V. C., II, 367.*

1771. Don Jose Solano.

The Dutch of Essequibo, who had extended their settlements to the Orinoco, and established themselves in the Grand or Ships' Mouth, **I have forced to retreat to their legitimate possessions.** *B. C., IV, 80.*

1784. Captain-General of Caracas.

Settlement should be commenced by Lower Guiana. . . . From here it will not be difficult to extend them **to the frontier of Essequibo and Demerara, to restrict the usurpations of the Dutch, . . . and to occupy all the principal creeks of the Orinoco,** with a view of impeding the contraband trade carried on by them.

If the work of settling the land is begun in the vicinity of Essequibo, and the proposed fort built there, etc. *B C., V, 21.*

1786. Anonymous.

An order was given to the Intendente of Caracas, on the 20th October, 1778, **to settle the most suitable places on the frontier.**

13th April, 1779, he obtained approval of the foundation of a village at no great distance from the banks of the Orinoco, not far removed from the capital of Guayana, . . . On the 9th of March, 1780, all the measures were approved which he had taken for new settlements (of which, up to this time, not one has been carried out). *Same, p. 46.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO BARIMA AND ORINOCO MOUTH—(Continued).

1788. British Case.

In a scheme of Governor **Marmion** of 1788 for the settlement and fortification of the frontiers of Guayana, it was **proposed to abandon the country on the south bank of the Orinoco for twenty leagues upward from Point Barima**; and to commence drawing **the line to be effectively held from the Creek of Curucima**, or the point of the chain in the great arm of the Imataka Mountains, and thence following those mountains to the Cuyuni. *B. C., 16.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

Taking as chief base the said **creek of Carucima, or the point of the chain and ridge in the great arm of Imataca, an imaginary line will be drawn running to the south-south-east** following the slopes of the ridge of the name which is crossed by the Rivers Aguire, Arature, and Amacuro, and others, in the distance of 20 leagues, direct to Cuyuni; from there it will run on to the Masuruni and Essequibo, parallel to the sources of the Berbis and Surinama; **this is the directing line of the course which the new settlements and foundations proposed must follow.** *B. C., V, 61.*

[1821]? Anonymous.

It has already been observed that it is of **vital importance to defend the mouths of the Orinoco**, and to this end the first thing to be done is to found a considerable settlement in the lands in their vicinity. *Same, p. 220.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO CUYUNI, MAZARUNI AND THE INTERIOR.

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

It appears that we have no reason to doubt that the Rivers Marañon and Orinoco communicate by means of others intermediary, which flow **through the centre of the Province of Guayana** . . . as also that **such communication may, some day or other, be prejudicial to His Majesty's dominions**, the King wishes that, . . . you will observe and determine the sites where some Spanish settlements may be formed, which would hinder that communication being made use of by foreigners. *B. C., II, 86.*

1758. Commandant of Guiana.

For the purpose of **putting a stop to** these prejudicial troubles [arising from the slave trade], and in order that the good intentions of His Majesty may be attained, by preventing any extension of **the claims which the Dutch are every day advancing further in this part of his dominions**, I ordain and **command** Don Santiago Bonalde as Commandant, and Don Luis **Lopez de la Puente** as Second, **to proceed** this day **to** the interior, and . . . **to the** said **Island of Curamuenru** for the purpose of apprehending the said Dutchman [Jacobs], and any other person that may there be found, . . . **and bring them as prisoners**, well guarded, **to this fortress.** *Same, p. 150.*

1758. Governor of Cumana.

Carrying on the unjust traffic of slavery among the Indians, in **the dominions of the King my Sovereign.** As **this same river Cuyuni and all its territory is included in those dominions**, it is incredible that their High Mightinesses the States-General should have authorized you to penetrate into those dominions,

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO CUYUNI, MAZARUNI AND THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

and still less to carry on a traffic in the persons of the Indians belonging to the settlements and territories of the Spaniards. I therefore consider myself justified in approving the conduct of this expedition. *B. C., II, 169–170.*

1758. Counsellor Padilla y Moron.

The Counsellor . . . says that . . . **the** foreigners [**Dutch at Cuyuni Post**] . . . **were apprehended,** whilst acting as a guard, by order of the Governor of the Colony of Essequibo, **within the limits of the jurisdiction of this Government** for the purpose of apprehending fugitive negro slaves deserting from their masters. *Same, p. 170.*

1758. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

It was discovered that **the Dutch of Essequibo were continuing their usurpations on the River Cuyuni,** and although they were dislodged, . . . we fear they now intend to recover the lost Posts. *Same, p. 171.*

1758. Nicolas de Castro.

The Commandant of Guiana has sent me . . . a letter which you have written to him, demanding the delivery of **the two Dutch prisoners,** a negro, and a creole, with their children, and of all that was **found** by the guard in command there **on an island in the River Cuyuni, which is, with its dependencies, a part of the domains of the King,** my master, and on which these prisoners publicly kept up an illicit trade in Indian poitos, although it is incredible that their High Mightinesses should have authorized you to enter the said domains, and still less to purchase Indians from his villages and territories, in order to make slaves of them. *Same, p. 179.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Commandant of Orinoco, . . . maintains, . . . that the River Cuyuni is Spanish territory, and refuses to give back the imprisoned Postholder, settler, and creoles. *Same, p. 171.*

1769. Prefect of Missions.

On the 20th of June, 1766, **there arrived at** our Mission of **Cavallapi** a negro and an Indian, **slave-buyers, each with a licence from the Governor of Essequibo.** . . . They were detained and their canoes taken by the Father of the Mission, and he then sent them to me by land to the Mission of Guacipati. . . . I took the **passports** from them, which are in Dutch, and which I now inclose. . . . They were taken prisoners by the soldiers. . . . This same negro, at the end of (17)65, had come again to the Mission of Cavallapi and Guacipati with a passport. . . . I prevented him from going further. *B. C., IV, 21.*

1770. Governor of Cumana.

Accordingly, they daily hinder the progress of the Gospel and the conversion of the Gentiles, which was especially the case when **these Dutch crossed the borders of their Colony and came to take possession of territory and establish themselves,** for the better security of the above-mentioned traffic, **in the dominions of His Majesty, in the neighbourhood of the last Missions on their frontiers.** This is shown by the fact that **they established, . . . a Post . . . in the River Cuyuni, in the territory of the Missions,** . . . for this river has never belonged, nor been held to belong, to the Colony of Essequibo. *Same, p. 75.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO CUYUNI, MAZARUNI AND THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

1770. Commandant of Guiana.

We should restrain within their own limits the Dutch of Essequibo, Berbice and Surinam, . . . being always on the watch **to stop the usurpations which they are constantly making in these our dominions**, and which at present we cannot prevent, at the same time assuring to the king the possession of this valuable and extensive country, and in a short time giving to the Crown a valuable province and many subjects. . . . **Nothing is wanting but the help** we expect **from your Excelleney . . . to occupy** these eighteen strongholds at **Parime** and the surroundings. *B. C., IV, 78.*

1771. Commandant of Guayana.

The famous **Lake Parima (the centre of these provinces).** *Same, p. 83.*

On the **River Parime** . . . the said officer shall cause a small fort to be built in some narrow pass or advantageous place, that the guns of the said fort may close the passage of the river to our enemies. . . . At El Dorado itself, or some site . . . best fitted to close the entrance of **Lake Parime** . . . a stronghold shall be built. *Same, p. 98.*

Should any European foreigners be found in those parts outside the Colonies allowed them, as . . . the Dutch on the coast of Surinam, Berbice, Essequibo, of the Atlantic Ocean, his Majesty's order shall be intimated to them that they quit those his royal dominions forthwith, and if, after the first remonstrances, they do not withdraw to the former settlements allowed them, abandoning the territory they have usurped, **they shall be driven out by force of arms.** *Same, p. 99.*

1788. British Case.

It is clear . . . that at this date [1788] Marmion treated the junction of the Uruan and Cuyuni as the limit of the Spanish territory in that direction, and considered that by holding the mouth of the Uruan the Spaniards would secure not only all the territory which they then held, but all that they could hope to settle. *B. C., 59–60.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

Although all **the land** which lies **beyond the Cuyuni up to the sources of the Parime** and Curaricara, having now been more explored, is found not to be of nearly such extent as was imagined, it may be expected . . . that it **will be advantageously occupied within a few years by the spread of villages and cattle farms**, the breeders extending their enclosures, the planters and settlers their plantations and the missionaries their reductions; mutually supporting one another and continuing their settlements **on the other side of the Cuyuni in the great savannahs and margins of the rivers which run to the south.**

It is also a reason for not giving **the Dutch, who have already too far penetrated on the Cuyuni**, an opportunity, by continually extending their Colony, of taking possession of those more advanced districts and villages, and of **rendering it necessary for us to oppose them with forces** which would be required for the defence of the other approaches to the Orinoco. *B. C., V, 62.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—TO CUYUNI, MAZARUNI AND THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

1792. Don Miguel Marmion.

To the south of Cuyuni and bearing to the east, **in the rear of the Dutch settlements,** he [Lopez de la Puente] is to report whether he knows how many days' journey distant the dwellings of the negro fugitives from Essequibo and Surinam are situated. *B. C., V, 142.*

1792. Governor of Guiana.

You should assure yourself of the information . . . **that in an island . . . below the mouth of the Mazaruni there are various nations of Indians armed with fire-arms and a stockade.** . . . there is more reason for distrust when, as you tell me, they are provided with fire-arms in contravention of the general ordinances which govern us, . . . these vagrant nations . . . if . . . not protected by . . . more civilized ones could not be provided with such armament **on the frontiers of our possessions, or rather, within our own.** *V. C.-C., III, 340–341.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—BASIS FOR AND SPANISH VIEWS OF DUTCH CLAIMS TO SAME.

——. British Case.

The Dutch were recognized as having . . . rights in the districts of the river Massaruni. Spanish Indians, coming from the Spanish Missions, asked for the permission of the Dutch Commandeurs to settle in that locality. *B. C., 113.*

1757. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

The request they [Dutch] make in writing **to the Commandant of Guayana,** that he may permit their Aruacas **to pass higher up the river** when they come for the turtle-fishing, though necessary to their interests, **is hardly in conformity with the title of Governors of Essequibo and Orinoco**; and I am positively assured that not only does the Commandant condescend to grant it, but he goes so far as to protect with his licences the vessels going up for that purpose. On these occasions Aruacas, Caribs, and Dutchmen come disguised, so as not to be detected. *B. C., II, 137.*

1757. Don Jose Solano.

Some fourteen years ago he [**Iturriaga**] saw a Protection or Patent executed in Latin by the Governor of Essequibo in behalf of a Carib Captain, who lived within the Orinoco river; . . . and he **ascertained that the States-General in their Patents to the Governors of Essequibo add the title of Governors of Orinoco**; and that it is a matter of fact that these Governors call themselves of Essequibo and the Orinoco in the licences issued by them. . . . **He adds that he does not quite approve of the title** of Governors of Essequibo and of Orinoco, but deems needful for their benefit the request that they make by writing, to the Commandant of Guayana, that their Aroacas who come to fish for turtles be allowed to pass higher up. *V. C.-C., III, 66.*

1758. British Case.

Fray **Benito de la Garriga** . . . in 1758 . . . say[s] . . . that **he had seen documents from Essequibo, according to which the jurisdiction of that Government extended to the mouth of the Aguirre,** and the boundary

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—BASIS FOR AND SPANISH VIEWS OF DUTCH CLAIMS TO SAME—(Continued).

was a line drawn south from that point, skirting the outmost savannahs of the Missions of Miamo, passing Tucupo and Curumo, and reaching Aripamuri, by which name he referred to Rupununi. A study of the whole letter shows that the Dutch were supreme not only in the Barima district, but also in all the forest region between the Orinoco and the Cuyuni. *B. C., 116.*

1758. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

Moyo, . . . on coming from Essequibo, . . . told me he had brought many **papers from Essequibo,** and among them an official document **in which the jurisdiction of the Governor** was marked down. This, according to what he said, **extends to the mouth of the Aguirre,** and from that mouth a straight line due south shows the division of the jurisdiction of his Governor, so that the said line extends to the margins of the outermost savannahs of our Missions of Miamo, etc. The said line passes by Tucupo and Corumo, and crosses to the before-mentioned Aripamuri. I consider, **if this news be true** which the said party gave me, that **they have cut the stolen cloth to suit their taste.** And it must be true, for it is proved by the fact that the Governors sometimes give permits in which these boundaries are marked. *B. C., II, 149.*

They clearly show the object of **those foreigners,** and give reason to think that they **want to appropriate the whole of the River Cuyuni if their passage is not stopped.** And so we shall never have the Caribs in subjection, with proper authority to prevent the people of Surinam from passing along that river to purchase slaves, if they establish those posts. *B. C.-C., App., 203.*

1758. Don Jose Solano.

Iturriaga adds . . . **that the people of Essequibo** declared **openly** and **maintained that the extent of the Dominion of the States-General reaches to the "Boca de Navios"** or great mouth of the Orinoco, and they even go far into the interior to make the most of their fishery.

These four letters having been referred to . . . Don Joseph Solano, . . . **he [Iturriaga] fails to find on what basis they make their claims,** unless it be the passiveness wherewith the Commandants of Guiana have allowed them to fish in "Boca de Navios" and Barina and Aguire rivers, and extend their navigation up to Guayana. That they thereby stretch their dominion to the great mouth of Orinoco. *V. C.-C., III, 67.*

1761. Don Jose Solano.

The third and fourth **letter of** . . . **Iturriaga,** dated . . . 1757 and . . . 1758, **treat of the pretensions on the Orinoco openly put forward by the Governors of the Dutch Colony of** the River Esquivo, on the ground that the titles that they have from the States-General give them this jurisdiction; notwithstanding I do not know that they have reclaimed the vessels which the Trinitarios and Guayanos took from them in the course of this river. *B. C., II, 203.*

Nor do I know on what they [**Dutch**] **could found their claims**; for though, by the Vth article of the **Treaty of Munster,** the dominion of the countries, fortified places, factories, etc., was conceded to them which they at that time possessed in America, on the Orinoco neither they nor any others but the Spaniards alone, ever held, or have since held, castles or forts.

Same, p. 204.

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—BASIS FOR AND SPANISH VIEWS OF DUTCH CLAIMS TO SAME—(Continued).

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

To the east, and **on the coast of this province [of Guayana], are situated the Dutch Colonies,** Essequibo, Demerary, Berbice, Corentin, and Surinam. According to reports obtained by Don Juan de Dios y Valdes, . . . the Colony of Essequibo consists of sundry sugar estates, which the Dutch have planted, to the distance of 30 leagues, on the banks of the River Essequibo, beginning at its mouth, and also of some islands formed by the said river, which offer land for plantations. *B. C., III, 62–63.*

1769. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

From this I infer how much they [**Dutch**] **are endeavoring to procure new sites, and thereby allege possession,** and cause a dispute in time, if a stop be not put to them, for **they now imagine that they hold as theirs the River Cuyuni,** when before their guards did not go beyond its mouth, as is proved by the patent of orders issued to the Postholder of the Cuyuni. **And even the Governor claims it as territory of the Colony,** as shown by the protest he sent to the Commandant of the Fort. **And in like manner he claims the Rivers Moruca and Barima,** upon which he now founds his complaint against the said Commandant-General, charging him with insults and outrages, because he dislodged them, as already noted, from the advanced Post of Barima.

B. C., IV, 23.

He declared that **the Dutch are not, nor ever have been, in possession** of the rivers or creeks which flow into the sea from the Essequibo exclusively, **up to the mouth of the Orinoco;** that **they have only been permitted to have in that part a small guard** of two Europeans and some Indians, in a lodge which they call the Post, on the eastern bank of the River Moruca, which the Dutch call Maroco; and that this settlement has not existed from time quasi-immemorial, because the whole of the Colony is not so, and we know that it began in the year 1659. *Same, pp. 47-48.*

It is untrue that the Dutch have held, or do hold, **possession of the River Cuyuni,** . . . for having established thereon a guard and lodge like that of Moruca, in the year 1747, to facilitate the inhuman traffic and seizure of Indians whom they enslave surreptitiously in the dominions of the King our Lord . . . directly it came to our notice, in the year 1757, they were dislodged therefrom; and so neither on the Cuyuni, Maseroni, Apanoni, nor the other rivers which have their outfall in Essequibo do the Dutch hold any possession, nor is it permissible that they should hold it.

The only place wherein the Dutch are tolerated and established **is on the** banks of the River **Essequibo,** which runs from S. E. to N. W. almost parallel to the sea-coast, the eastern boundary of this Province of Guayana, and leaves the interior thereof free to the Spaniards, its legitimate possessors. *Same, p. 48.*

It is an equally **false** statement **that they [Dutch] have also been prevented by the Spaniards from** carrying on the said **fishing in the** territory which Gravesande calls **territory of the State itself,** which, he says, extends from the river Mareguiñe up to this side of the Guayne very near the mouth of the Orinoco, which supposition, . . . is an insufferable error. *Same, p. 49.*

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—BASIS FOR AND SPANISH VIEWS OF DUTCH CLAIMS TO SAME—(Continued).

1769. Secretary of State for the Indies.

It is necessary for me to ask information from the Governors of the new village of Guayana and of Cumana concerning the facts which are reported, and to forward the said memorial [Dutch Remonstrance of 1769] to the Council of the Indies, in order that His Majesty may be informed of **the extension of those boundaries, and about the right claimed by the Republic to the fishery at** the entrance to the river **Orinoco—a thing as new to me as that the Carib tribe of Indians is conceived of as the ally of the Dutch.** *V. C., III, 381.*

1770. Commandant of Guayana.

In . . . the Missions of the Catalonian Capuchins, . . . the Caribs . . . have been settled to the number of 5,000 for over twenty years, without our knowing until now that this numerous tribe belongs to the Dutch, as Gravesande says, nor still less that **these forests** are a part of the Republic, for they **have always been the nursery for the reductions of the Catalonian Capuchin missionaries** of Guayana. *B. C., IV, 71.*

The Post which Gravesande states the Spaniards took, near a rivulet to the south of the River Wayne, between this and the Povaron, where he states the Company has had from time immemorial a trading settlement, and which also belonged, without contradiction, to the territory of the Republic, I imagine will be **the one the Dutch abandoned when they intruded in the river Barima,** in 1768, as soon as they learned from their friends the Caribs that our privateers were visiting that river, as one of the most considerable which flows into the Orinoco, although he wishes to make little of it by calling it a rivulet; and the Director of Essequibo does not dare name it, least he thereby declare himself an usurper; and consequently he shows himself of very weak memory by stating that this **settlement** was there **from time immemorial,** when it is **scarcely two years old.** *Same, p. 72.*

1778. Council of the Indies.

The Commandant of Guayana, Don Manuel Centurion, [stated that] Gravesand had endeavored to arouse the States-General against the proceedings of the Spaniards, erroneously supposing that the Dutch had ever been in possession of the rivers or rivulets that empty into the sea from the Esquibo to the Orinoco, because they had there no establishment other than **a straw-thatched hut on** the eastern bank of **the Moruca,** or Maroco, which had been **tolerated for forty years back, intended to prevent the desertion of their slaves.** *V. C., II, 277.*

That neither were they [Dutch] in possession of the Maseroni and other rivers that emptied into the Esquibo on its southwestern bank, . . . because the Esquibo flowing, approximately, parallel with the sea-coast . . . until it emptied into the sea forty-five leagues east of the mouth of the Orinoco, all the rivers having their sources in the furthest interior of the Province of Guayana and flowing towards the coast lying between the mouths of the Corentin and Esquibo came in contact with the latter; . . . so that if, as the Dutch supposed, the territory embraced by the rivers feeding the Esquibo (and they are the Cuyuni, Maseroni, Mao, Apanoni, Putara, and other minor ones, with their

CLAIMS BY THE SPANISH—BASIS FOR AND SPANISH VIEWS OF DUTCH CLAIMS TO SAME—(Continued).

branches) belonged to the dominion of the Republic they would have in the Province of Guayana more than the Spaniards; the case being, as appeared from the map he annexed, **that the Dutch could only claim possession of the** Surinam, Cupernam, Corentim, Bervis, Demerara, **Esquivo, and Powaron rivers.**
V. C., II, 278.

That **the Post** which Gravesand stated the Spanish took possession of near a rivulet south of the Guayne river, where he supposed the company had from time immemorinl a trading-place depending beyond contradiction upon the Republic, **must be,** without doubt, **the one which the intruding Dutchmen upon the Guarima River abandoned** in the year 1768, so soon as they learned that our cruising launches were patrolling that river, one of the largest emptying into the Orinoco, notwithstanding that Gravesand made it out a rivulet, without venturing to name it, so as not to declare himself a usurper. It is equally **strange that he should call this an immemorial establishment, when it had existed barely for two years.** *Same, p. 279.*

That they [**Spaniards**] had **never** up to that time **disputed the right of the Dutch to the fisheries at** the mouths of the **Orinoco because they did not fish there,** as is proved by the fact that, having armed during the last three years some cruising launches for this river, they had seized thirty-three foreign vessels, but none of them engaged in fishing, nor was there even any information that the Dutch were in possession of such fishing grounds. *Same, p. 279.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO THE POMEROON-MORUCA REGION.

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

From the first Dutch occupation of the Pomeroon, in 1658, down to late in the eighteenth century, the claim of the Dutch to that river seems to have been unquestioned. . . . In 1769, for the first time, we hear in Dutch records of a counterclaim: the Spanish governor of Orinoco was said to have declared that the territory was Spain's as far as the bank of Oene, in the mouth of the Essequibo. During the years which followed, though Spain and Holland were at peace, there was more than one Spanish incursion into the Pomeroon; but though ravages were committed along the coast and Indians abducted from the interior, there was no attempt actually to take possession of the river. Of the *Instruccion* of the Spanish Intendant-General of Venezuela, in February, 1779, for the occupation and settlement of Guayana "to the borders of the Dutch colony of Essequibo," the Dutch authorities seem to have known nothing; but of the reconnoissance later . . . by . . . Inciarte . . . they knew; . . . but the Director-General having assured himself that they were "all gone without having done any harm" to the post or to the Indians, evinced no disquiet about the matter, and no steps seem to have been taken toward protest or further investigation. *V. C.-C., II, 96.*

1703. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Governor of Surinam . . . shows himself ill-disposed because his traders **here in our district,** namely, Essequibo, **Baumeron** and Demerary were not permitted to trade. *B. C., I, 226.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO THE POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

1737. Commandeur in Essequibo.

We ought . . . to keep up **this Post** ["**the post of Waeqnepo and Mornka**"] because it was **established for the maintenance of your Honour's frontiers** stretching toward the Orinoco. *B. C., II, 25.*

1747. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have discharged Pieter de Laet, the Postholder of **Mornka**, on account of his bad behaviour, and since **that Post is of great importance, and it is essential to the Colony to keep up the same**, I have appointed [etc.]. *Same, p. 50.*

1755. Postholder in **Waeqnepo**.

Concerning what you write, that if they will not come of their own free will you would come and fetch them with violent measures, I do not think that you meant this seriously, but that you only said so to frighten the Indians.

Because I cannot believe that you would undertake to violate in such a manner **the jurisdiction of their High Mightinesses**, my Sovereigns.

Same, p. 122.

1757. Secretary in Essequibo.

Two [mules] died through the great drought, the lack of fresh water, and above all, the getting grounded in **a certain** canal, called **Itaboe**, and **situated under the Company's Post Moruca.** *Same, p. 139.*

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have been obliged to send a detachment of four of the best soldiers to the Post of Maroco as quickly as possible because the **Spaniards are beginning to put their horns out again. . . . They also threatened to deal with the Post in Maroco** ere long in the same way as they had done with that in Cuyuni. *Same, p. 197.*

1769. Postholder in Moruca.

I . . . report . . . that . . . **a Spanish vessel came into Marocco and to the Post**, there being upon it two Fathers, twelve soldiers and a party of Weykiers with small canoes (the vessel was provided with eight swivel guns, and on the forecastle a four-pounder piece) coming **to fetch Arowaks and Waronws; and they have caught a whole party in Wayne and Maroco.** . . . We knew of nothing until a Father came to the Post. He, however, did nothing to us at the Post, and **I spoke to the Fathers, saying that such acts were not permitted on Dutch ground and territory.** They stated, in reply, that they did not know that, and that they had orders from their Governor. They in the evening departed, . . . but . . . they came up stream again . . . with a noise, . . . and . . . asked where were the Indians whom they had seen. . . . They seized immediately one maid. . . . They have taken my two female slaves with their children, two free maids—one boy of mine is still missing. . . . They have gone with more than a hundred guilders' worth of my goods, that they found outside; but in the house they touched nothing. According to the report . . . they will come again to come and fetch the Indians of Pomaroon. *B. C., IV, 8-9.*

1769. [1897] George L. Burr.

But, in 1769, another remonstrance to the Spanish Court, drawn by the Zeeland Chamber of the West India Company, urged by the Stadhouder, and adopted

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO THE POMEROON-MORUCA REGION—(Continued).

by the States-General, stated or implied definite claims as to territorial boundary in Guiana. **On the coast the Dutch territory is represented as stretching to beyond the Waini**; in the interior, to a point between the Dutch post on the Cuyuni and the nearest Spanish Missions. This is the one document known to the diplomatic correspondence of the two countries which suggests the place of the boundary. *V. C.-C., II, 190.*

1786. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **threats to raid the Post Maroco** appear only to be a popular rumour concerning which I deem it better not to write to the Government of Oronoque, . . . it . . . being very probable that the Government never thought of it.

By writing to them about it, **we should** either offend them or show fear, and thereby, **perhaps, inspire them with a desire to do something of which they would not otherwise have thought.** At the same time, it would be well to be on one's guard. *B. C., V, 46.*

1790. Report of Commissioners on condition of Essequibo and Demerara.

More lands here could be brought under cultivation if the vicinity of the River Orinoco did not prevent it, for the **Spaniards** there sometimes **come** with armed boats . . . **as far as Morıca,** and carry away by force the Indians who dwell there . . . **The Colonies of Demerara and Essequibo, THEREFORE, form a stretch of 24 (Dutch) miles along the coast of Guiana.**

Same, p. 79.

1794. Governor-General in Essequibo.

We went on as far as **the Creek of Moruca,** which **up to now has been maintained to be the boundary of our territory with that of Spain,** upon what basis I do not know. It will be of the utmost necessity to define that boundary-line once for all. *Same, p. 147.*

1802. Anonymous [Dutch] Memorial.

From the Creek Abary (being the boundary between the Colony of Berbice and Demerara) to the River **Pomeroon,** which **belongs to the Colony of Essequibo,** that extent amounts to fully 25 hours' march. *Same, p. 176.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO WAINI.

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

Permission to cut timber [in the Waini] . . . was . . . repeatedly and formally granted by the Essequibo Court of Policy in the name of the West India Company; though, owing to the river's unnavigable entrance, this permission remained unused. *V. C.-C., II, 115.*

1753. Director-General in Essequibo.

In a short time everything will have been granted, and there will be no more land remaining. Wherefore, I have sent away Pilot J. Grotendorst to measure the Rivers **Waini and Pomeroon.**

A rumour is current here that Emissaries of Sweden have arrived in Surinam in order to make inquiry respecting the River Barima lying between Oronoco and this river, in order to bring over a Colony there. *B. C., II, 77.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO WAINI—(Continued).

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

According to the reports of the Indians, there are between Orinoco and here two or three very rich silver mines, by no means at or near the River Orinoco, but far south of it **on our side, and even, in my opinion, south of the Waini,** and in the chain of mountains commonly called the Blaauwenberg, which forms a whole long line of mountain chain, . . . what shall I do? . . . It is even impossible for me . . . to detach eight or ten men to garrison and defend as far as possible the Post of Moruka, which will, I fear, bear the brunt.

B. C., II, 93.

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

The possession of that river [Cuyuni], as far, too, as this side of the **Wayne,** which is **pretended to be the boundary-line** (although I think the latter ought to be extended as far as **Barima**) cannot be questioned . . . and your Lordships' right of ownership is indisputable. *Same, p. 180.*

1761. Secretary in Essequibo.

I respectfully reply that the aforesaid boats, having been seized by those pirates between the rivers of Barima and Waini, were absolutely on the Company's coast, for this is certain (not to enter upon the various opinions which exist about the limits of the Company's domains) that **the river of Waini indisputably belongs to the Company.** *Same, p. 200.*

1762. Secretary in Essequibo.

If we may not go as far as **Weyne, which is your lordships' river as much as this one,** I do not know what to do in future to get food for the slaves.

Same, p. 215.

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

Had both been captured in the mouth of the River **Wayni (indisputably the territory of the Honourable Company).** *Same, p. 216.*

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

The first [of the four Posts or so-called trading places of the Company] is Maroco, situated between this river and Orinoco, **under the direction of which are** the rivers of Pomeroon and **Weyni.** *Same, p. 226.*

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

A Spanish privateer from Orinoco, cruising along our coast, made an attempt to capture your Lordships' salter before the River **Waini (indisputably the Company's territory),** and fired very strongly upon him. The latter was cautious enough (not being able to escape otherwise) to run his boat high and dry upon the bank, so that he could not be reached by the privateer who, having continued to fire upon him for some time, and seeing that he could do nothing, finally departed.

They [**Spaniards**] are not content with most unreasonably keeping our runaway slaves and with hindering us from carrying on the fishery in Orinoco, which we have always been free to do, but they now **wish to prevent us from salting along our own coasts,** and will in this manner end by closing our river, and no boats will dare to go out any more. *B. C., III, 181.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO WAINI—(Continued).

1769. Remonstrance of the States-General.

The Spaniards had begun to carry off the Indians from **Moruca,** and had made themselves masters of the Company's Post there, being a small river or creek south of the Weyne River, situated between the latter and the Pomaroon River, **where from time immemorial the Company had** also **a trading place and a Post, and which** also **incontestably belonged to the territory of the Dutch.** *B. C., IV, 30.*

1769. [1897] George L. Burr.

In the formal **remonstrance,** addressed in **1769, . . . by the States-General** to the Spanish Court, **a** definite **claim was made** as **to the boundary on the Guiana coast.** The territory of the Netherlands, according to this document, stretched from the river Marowyn **to beyond the river Waini.**

So far as appears in the diplomatic correspondence of the Netherlands, no answer to this claim was ever made by Spain. Spanish aggressions, however, did not cease. *V. C.-C., II, 114.*

The Dutch claim to the ownership of the Waini was officially enounced to Spain in the remonstrance of 1769, and was (however forgotten in the interval) still a basis of action for the Dutch Colonial authorities in the period immediately preceding the final loss of the colony. *Same, p. 115.*

1775. West India Company, (Zeeland Chamber).

He [Spanish Captain] . . . said that his lord and master would shortly set a guard in the creek of Weena, called the Barmani, and that the whole of Maroekka also belonged to the Spaniards, and **I** thereupon **answered that the river Barima belonged to the Swede, and Weene as well as Maroekka, to the Dutch,** and they said that it was not so. *B. C., IV, 138.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

Having arrived within musket-shot of the said [Moruka] Post, I hoisted the Spanish flag. . . . Thereupon, two white Dutchmen appeared, without any other people. Having arrived opposite the said Post and moored the vessels in front of it, . . . the said Dutchmen came on board. . . . Having reproached him, as though the lands where the Post was situated belonged to the Prince of Orange, with not replying with the Dutch flag to that of our Sovereign, he answered that he had no flag, nor knew to whom the said lands belonged, but that in Essequibo **the** said **Director-General assured him** verbally **that** the said lands of Moruca, and those included **in the whole Creek of Guiana belonged** in ownership **to the** High and Mighty Estates of the **Dutch Republic.** *B. C.-C., App., 229.*

It is also to be noted that Paul Fernero, formerly Corporal of the said [Moruka] post, and at present a soldier therein, said that the former Director-General of Essequibo told him in a letter, that the lands and **rivers of Moruca and Guiana belonged** in ownership **to the Dutch,** and the creek of Barima and its lands to Sweden. *Same, p. 255.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Dutch . . . recognized neither the mouth of the River **Pomaroon nor** that of **the Morocco . . . as the limits of their territory.** *B. C., VII, 4.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO BARIMA AND ORINOCO MOUTH.

——. British Case.

The Essequibo Dutch had made friends with these Caribs by the end of the [17th] century, and **the Barima** district was **theneeforward considered as within the sphere of the Postholder of Pomeroon.** *B. C., 115.*

The **Barima** district . . . was treated by both the **Dutch** and British Governments successively **as within their territorial jurisdiction.**

Same, p. 118.

——. British Counter Case.

The Barima continued to be generally **regarded,** in accordance with the belief and practice of **more than a century, as within Dutch jurisdiction.**

B. C.-C., 91.

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I wish their Honours would **take possession of that river [Barima]** as well, which has been done by me provisionally in order to see what revenue it will yield, since **I am of opinion that the** Honourable **Company has the right to trade and traffic there in an open river** as much as other private persons.

B. C., I, 185–186.

1734. Commandeur in Essequibo.

If the **Swedes** undertake to try to establish themselves **between** the **Orinoco and this Colony, on your Honours' territory,** I should be obliged to try to prevent it. *B. C., II, 18.*

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.

All the itinerant traders which go from there [Surinam] in order to deal in slaves stop here, as all go to **Barima,** which is **situated under this jurisdiction,** to the great prejudice of the inhabitants, because they pay far more for the slaves than we usually do. *Same, p. 61.*

1758. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

Those of Essequibo publish and **sustain that the dominion of the States-General extends to the Ship's Mouth** or Great Mouth **of the Orinoco,** and they even enter well inside that river to enjoy its fishery. *Same, p. 141.*

1758. [1897] George L. Burr.

In 1758, the Governor of these Dutch colonies addressed to the Governor of Spanish Guiana a remonstrance against Spanish aggressions, in which he **claimed for the Dutch the boundary laid down on the map of D'Anville.** This claim was made, however, without authority from the West India Company or from the State, and was not urged in the remonstrance [1759] addressed on this occasion at the instance of the Company by the States-General to the Court of Spain.

V. C.-C., II, 190.

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

They [Spaniards] also took some canoes on **this side of Barima, and thus within the Honourable Company's territory.** *B. C., II, 197.*

1761. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The new outrages of the Spaniards in seizing the boat of Mr. Persik and the five canoes, which were busy salting, have greatly surprised us. . . . **We** still **hope to receive** these, and the earlier the better, together with **the reasons why you deem that everything which has happened on this side of Barima must be deemed to have occurred on territory of the Company.**

Same, p. 198.

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO BARIMA AND ORINOCO MOUTH—(Continued).

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

The whole **jurisdiction of the Company, from Abary to Barima.**

B. C., III, 105.

1764. Shareholders of West India Company.

The Colony of Essequibo comprises the district of the north-east coast of South America lying between the Spanish Colony, the Orinoco, and the Dutch Colony, the Berbices, and . . . the same **is crossed** not only **by the** chief river, the Essequibo, but also by several small rivers, such as **Barima**, Waini, Moruka, Pomeroon, and Demerary, from which it takes the name of the Colony of Essequibo and the rivers belonging thereto, though in the whole of the aforesaid district—at least, as long as it was under the direction of the West India Company, until the year 1750, no other river than the chief river of Essequibo was inhabited or populated. *Same, p. 116.*

1766. Court of Justice, Essequibo.

Resolved . . . that . . . the following proclamations should be made:—

All dwelling or sojourn in Barima is forbidden to all colonists, all upon penalty of being further punished according to the exigencies of the case, **but those who still have some timber cut there are permitted to fetch away the same.** *B. C.-C., App., 209–210.*

1803. G. A. W. Ruysch—proposed Charter by.

As **in** Pomeroon, Waini, and **Barima,** there are still found well stocked forests, **the inhabitants** who wish to devote themselves to lumbering **will be granted** a certain extent of forest, wherein they shall be at **liberty to fell timber,** upon payment of certain dues to the Republic. . . . **The ownership of the land remaining** reserved **to the Republic,** unless the petitioners should subsequently desire to establish plantations there, in which case the Governor and the Court of Policy, . . . shall grant letters of pre-emption and recommendation. *B. C., V, 183.*

1804. Lieutenant-Governor Myers.

It [Colony of Essequibo and Demerara] is separated from Berbice by the Abari Creek. **The boundary** with the Spaniards is disputed. **According to Dutch,** it **is a line running north and south from Cape Brama or Brem;** and according to the Spaniards it is the Morucco Creek, a little to the westward of Cape Nassau. *Same, p. 186.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

They [**Dutch**] **had** even **occupation of** the eastern banks of the . . . **Barima** [before . . . 1666] . . . **which** military outpost **they considered to be their western boundary.** *B. C., VII, 4.*

The Dutch West India Company considered the **mouth of the Orinoco** to be the limit of their possessions.

[Humboldt says] **The Dutch,** far from recognizing the Rio Pomeroon or the Moroco as the limit of their territory, **placed the boundary at Rio Barima,** consequently near the mouth of the Oroonoko itself, when they draw a line of demarcation from N. N. W., to S. S. E. towards Cuyuni. *Same, p. 32.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO BARIMA AND ORINOCO MOUTH—(Continued).

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

The **mouth of the Orinoco** had always been **considered** to form the **western boundary of the former Dutch possessions.** *B. C., VII, 37.*

1844. Earl of Aberdeen.

The mouth of the **Orinoco always claimed by the Dutch as their western boundary.** *Same, p. 90.*

1875. Governor Longden.

The boundary claimed by the old Dutch Colony, namely, a **line from Point Barima.** *B. C., VI, 212.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO AMACURA.

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

It was even believed among the [Spanish] missions **that the Dutch Governor of Essequibo claimed jurisdiction as far as** a line running due south from the mouth of **the Aguire.** This was told their prefect by a fugitive slave, who claimed to have brought from Essequibo an official document in which this was shown; and a Dutchman from Essequibo told the same prefect that the Mission of Curumo had been destroyed because it lay east of this line. The slave-traders are even said to have once presented a passport in which the Essequibo governor styled himself "Governor of Essequibo and the mouth of the Orinoco." But all this **is unknown to the Dutch records,** and was certainly never reported to the home authorities. *V. C.-C., II, 142.*

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

Register of the Colony of Essequibo, Demerary, and the dependent districts.

Situated on the north coast of South America, at about 7° latitude north and 42° longitude; from the creek Abari on the east **to the river Amacura** on the north, and comprising the rivers Demerary, Essequibo, Pomeroon, Weyne, and the large creeks Maykouny, Maheyka, Wacquebo, and Maroco, being a stretch of land along the sea-coast of about 120 (Dutch) miles, of 15 in 1°.

Belonging to the Honourable General Chartered West India Company of the United Netherlands, under the administration of the Chamber of Zeeland.

B. C., II, 212–213.

1762. Muster Roll.

Directory of the Colony Essequibo, Demerarij, and dependent districts:

Situate on the north coast of South America . . . from the Creek Abari on the east **to the River Amacura** on the north, including the Rivers Demerarij, Essequibo, Powaron, Weijne, and the large Creeks Maijkounij, Maheijka, Wacquepo, and Maroco.

Belonging to the . . . West India Company. *B. C., VII, 164.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

Register of the Colony of Essequibo, Demerary, and dependent districts.

Situated on the north coast of South America, at 7° north latitude and 42° longitude from the Creek Abari on the east **to the River Amacura** on the north, comprising the Rivers Demerary, Essequibo, Pomeroon, Waini, and the great Creeks Maykouny, Maheyka, Wacquepo, and Moruka, being a stretch of land along the sea-coast of about 120 [Dutch] miles of 15 in 1° belonging to the Chartered West India Company. *B. C., III, 118–119.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO AMACURA—(Continued).

1765. Muster Roll.

Directory of the Colony Essequibo, Demerarij, and dependent district:

Situate on the north coast of South America . . . from the Creek Abari on the east **to the River Amacura** on the north, including the Rivers Dimmerarij, Essequibo, Powaron, Weijne, and the large Creeks Maijkounij, Maheijka, Wacquepo, and Maroco.

Belonging to the . . . West India Company. *B. C., VII, 165.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

When . . . in the possession of **the Netherlands** . . . its **limits were considered to extend** from Punta Barima . . . **to the mouth of the River Amacura**, following the Caño Cuyuni . . . to its source, from whence it was supposed to stretch . . . towards the River Cuyuni, . . . and from thence southward towards the Massaruni. *Same, p. 4.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO CUYUNI, MAZARUNI AND THE INTERIOR.

1741. Storm van 's Gravesande, Secretary in Essequibo.

He [Nicolas Hortsman] had considered it necessary to remain **above** [up the Essequibo] **where he had planted the flag** and cleared a bread garden.

B. C., II, 32.

1741. Commandeur in Essequibo.

It is fully two months ago since **Jacques Donacq** (who attended to the Post in Essequibo in place of the deceased Jacobus van der Burg) **came to me to report how an Indian** had arrived at the Post, and had **informed him,** by order of the Surgeon Hortsman, **that he had planted the flag of your Honours by the Lake of Parima, and had taken possession of the land,** had cleared a cassava garden there, and had dispatched Christiaen Reijs over sea to give a further account of the journey which had succeeded according to his wish. *Same, p. 35.*

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Having written to the Governor of Cumana that, **if** he **persisted in** the design of **founding a Mission in the River Cuyuni, I should be obliged to oppose myself thereagainst** effectually, he has replied to me that such was without his knowledge (not the founding of the new [Mission], but the site), and that it should not be progressed with, as in reality nothing has been done. On the map your Honours will find the place marked, as also the site of the one already established.

The discoveries made in our neighborhood by the Spaniards in the year 1748, [1747 on his map] a copy . . . whereof . . . I have been able to obtain cognizance of, is also of no small advantage for us—that notorious **sea of Parime** . . . having now at last been discovered and found, and even, according to the map, **situated within our jurisdiction.** *Same, p. 63.*

1754. Court of Policy.

I had the honour some years ago to inform your Honours that they [Spanish] had located a Mission in the **Creek Mejou,** which flows into the Cuyuni, . . . this Mission was **so absolutely and indisputably on our territory.**

Same, p. 93.

These two Missions are not in the Creek Mejou, but some miles lower on the River Cuyuni itself. *Same, p. 94.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO CUYUNI, MAZARUNI AND THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

1758. British Case.

The Director-General of Essequibo addressed to the Commandant at Guayana a letter of remonstrance as to this raid [on the **Cuyuni** Post in 1758]. In this letter the **claim of the Dutch** to the territory is **assumed as indisputable.**

B. C., 49.

1758. Director-General in Essequibo.

That the Post of your Lordships' Company was on Spanish ground, which **is** utterly and indisputably untrue. . . . It is my opinion that this river [**Cuyuni**] **is of the greatest importance to your Lordships,** much more so than any one of the others, **and** also that **it is perfectly certain and indisputable that they [Spaniards] have not the slightest claim to it.** If your Lordships will . . . look at the map of this country, drawn by Mr. D'Anville, . . . your Lordships will clearly see that this is so. Our boundaries, too, are defined in a way which proves that the compiler was very well informed. *B. C., II, 144.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

There **not** being **the slightest** difficulty or **doubt concerning the ownership of this portion of Essequibo,** most undoubtedly belonging, as it does, to the West India Company, this unexpected and unheard-of act [destruction of the **Cuyuni Post**] is a violation of all existing Treaties—a violation even of the universal law of nations, and as a matter of the greatest importance it demands your Lordships' attention and vigilance. *Same, p. 172.*

1759. Resolutions of the States-General.

Remonstrance of the Directors of the **West India Company,** . . . setting forth that they . . . **have been from time immemorial in undisturbed possession,** not alone of the aforesaid River Essequibo, but also of all the branches and tributaries . . . and especially of the northernmost arm **of the** same river, called the **Cuyuni.** . . . They, . . . in virtue of that possession, **have always considered the said River Cuyuni as a domain of this State.** *Same, p. 176.*

1759. Ambassador of States-General at Madrid.

[The States-General] have been from time immemorial in undisturbed possession of the River Essequibo, and all the little rivers which flow into it, and especially of the right arm of the said river, which flows northward, and is called **the Cuyuni;** that, in virtue of the said possession, his masters **have for a very long time considered the whole of the said river as a domain belonging to them,** and have consequently caused to be constructed . . . an outpost as to which the Spanish Governors have never raised any objection, or made the least complaint, understanding that such outposts are absolutely necessary to us for the maintenance of the peace of the Colony against the raids of the savages, and are constructed with noother object. *V. C., II, 135.*

1761. Director-General in Essequibo.

There can be no dispute about it with the Court of Spain, it being **only too clear and evident that the [Cuyuni] Post not only stood upon the . . . Company's territory, but that that territory extends much farther.**

B. C., II, 199.

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO CUYUNI, MAZARUNI AND THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

[An Indian scout reports] that preparations are being made to establish a new Mission **between Cuyuni and Mazaruni,** that is, in **the middle of our land.** *B. C., III, 121.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

If no redress can be obtained at the Court of Spain, to use reprisals against **the Missions, situated on our frontier, even on our territory;** I think they would then be brought to reason. *Same, p. 143.*

1767. West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber).

The natural meaning of the expression "Essequibo and adjoined or subordinate rivers" is not that which the Zeeland Chief Participants attribute to it, (namely, that all the places which are situate on the mainland of the so-called Wild Coast, between the boundaries which the Chief Participants themselves have . . . defined as extending from Moruka to Mahaicony, or from Rio Berbice as far as the Orinoco, are "adjoined, subordinate to, and inseparable from" the Colony Essequibo), but, on the contrary, only **this,** that under that description are comprehended **the various mouths and rivers, originating from Rio Essequibo or emptying into it,** which are marked on the map, **such as,** for instance, **Cuyuni, Massaruni,** Sepenouwy, and Magnouwe. *Same, p. 147.*

1769. [1897] George L. Burr.

But, in 1769, another remonstrance to the Spanish Court, drawn by the Zeeland Chamber of the West India Company, urged by the Stadhouder, and adopted by the States-General, stated or implied **definite claims as to territorial boundary in Guiana.** On the coast the Dutch territory is represented as stretching to beyond the Waini; **in the interior, to a point between the Dutch post on the Cuyuni and the nearest Spanish Missions.** This is the one document known to the diplomatic correspondence of the two countries which suggests the place of the boundary. *V. C.-C., II, 190.*

1769. Remonstrance of the States-General.

A Spanish detachment coming from the Orinoco had come above that Post and had carried off several Indians, threatening to return at the first following dry season and visit **Masseroeny,** another arm of the Essequibo, lying between that and the Cuyuni River, and, therefore, also **unquestionably forming part of the territory of the Republic,** . . . and then to descend the River Masseroeny, ascend the Cuyuni and visit the Company's said Post in Cuyuni. *B. C., IV, 29.*

1776. Director-General in Essequibo.

It is a pity that that **boundary line,** if I may call it so, **lies so far up the [Essequibo] river.** *Same, p. 140.*

1875. Governor Longden.

The boundary claimed by the old Dutch Colony, namely, **a line from Point Barima,** where an old Dutch post subsisted, **to the Dutch post on the Cuyuni,** (opposite to the ancient fort marked on the map as "the most easterly Spanish Post—Humboldt") is the boundary which I understand to have been always claimed by Great Britain. This boundary is indicated . . . on the large map of . . . Schomburgk's surveys . . . corrected . . . by . . . Chalmers and Sawkins . . . in 1872. . . . This line . . . includes both banks of the Amacura River. *B. C., VI, 212.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO ALL THE COAST.

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

No claim to the whole of this coast was ever made by the Dutch.

V. C.-C., 16.

——. [1897]. George L. Burr.

Thus, in 1669, the Dutch West India Company **conceded to** the German **Count of Hanau** a strip thirty Dutch miles broad, . . . the **grant** reads: . . . "A piece **of land** situated on the wild coast of America, between the river Oronoque and the river of the Amazons," adding the condition, "which His Excellency will be entitled to select provided he keeps at least six Dutch miles from other colonies there established or founded by the said chartered West India Company, or with its consent."

That the grant implies that the whole Wild Coast was counted by the West India Company open to Dutch colonization cannot be questioned. It seems to imply also that there were still on that coast unoccupied stretches of thirty Dutch miles in breadth lying at least six miles distant from the Dutch establishments of Surinam, Berbice, and Essequibo; and that such a stretch might by the Dutch be granted outright, even to a foreigner. But it **does not assert an exclusive Dutch right to colonize that coast**; and . . . Great Britain and . . . France were also freely granting patents of territory on the Guiana coast, and . . . there has been found no record of the slightest Dutch protest against it. . . . It should be added that the colony of the Count of Hanau was a flash in the pan, no attempt ever being made to establish it.

V. C.-C., II, 26–27.

From the terms of **these grants may unquestionably be inferred the assumption by the Dutch Government of a right to plant colonies,** either directly or through the West India Company, **in the** district known as the **Wild Coast. There is, however, in none** of them, **anything to suggest** that this was counted **exclusively a Dutch right; nor** is there in them **any claim of sovereignty over this coast as a whole.** *Same, p. 28.*

Of any claim by the Dutch to Guiana as a whole, or to any part of its western coast, there is thus far [1613] no intimation. *Same, p. 58.*

Neither in connection with the early trading expeditions to Guiana **nor** with the first projects for its colonization **is there now to be found in Dutch records a claim to definite territory** there. The most that is anywhere urged is that this region is not yet occupied by the Spaniards or the Portuguese, and is therefore open to trade or to settlement. *Same, p. 176.*

But **while there is . . . abundant evidence of a claim of the Dutch to plant colonies freely on the coast of Guiana from the Amazon to the Orinoco, I have found in Dutch records no claim,** as against other European states, **of an exclusive right thus to colonize Guiana**; and no protest at any time against the similar attempts which, throughout the greater part of this (18th) century, the English and the French were likewise making to plant colonies on this coast. *Same, p. 180.*

1. **The whole coast of Guiana was,** from the beginning of the seventeenth century, **looked on by the Dutch as open to colonization; but no exclusive claim to that coast, as a whole, seems ever to have been made by them.**

Same, p. 190.

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO ALL THE COAST—(Continued).

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

2. From 1621 to 1674 the right to colonize that coast on behalf of the Dutch was vested in the Dutch West India Company, which was empowered by its charter to settle unoccupied districts. That Company, while freely exercising this right of colonization, and granting lands for its exercise by others, has left on record no definition of the limits of its occupation in Guiana, and no claim as to a boundary on the side of the Spanish colonies. *V. C.-C., II, 190.*

1632. States-General.

None of the said **vessels shall be permitted . . . to sail to** the coasts of African or to New Netherlands, or any other place where the Company may trade; but shall be permitted to sail to the coast of Brazil; item, in the West Indies, to wit, **the River Oronocque westwards** along the coast of Carthagena, Portobello, Honduras, Campecho, the Gulf of Mexico, [etc.], . . . **in order to injure and offer hostility to the King of Spain.** *B. C., I, 73.*

1648. States General.

We [States General] annul . . . all . . . regulations according to which all ships . . . have been permitted to sail for private trade [etc.] . . . to a certain area within the Charter of the West India Company; . . . **we now decree . . . that** the **vessels** of the . . . inhabitants [of the Netherlands] shall henceforth **be permitted to sail** in the West Indies, to wit, **from the River Oronocque westwards** [etc.] . . . **without permission to go east along the Wild Coast, much less to the Amazon.** *Same, pp. 135-136.*

1669. West India Company.

The Directors of the . . . **West India Company . . . grant to** His . . . Excellency [Lord Frederick Casimir, **Count of Hanau**] **a tract of land situated on the Wild Coast** of America, between the River Orinoco and the River Amazon, which His Excellency, . . . shall be pleased to choose, provided they remain at least six Dutch miles from other Colonies, there erected and established by the . . . West India Company or with their permission, of about thirty Dutch miles in breadth along the sea and a hundred miles more as the aforesaid Colonists shall in the course of time be able to occupy and cultivate . . . on condition that the aforesaid district will have to be cultivated along the sea coast within a period of twelve years, or that what may then remain uncultivated along the sea-coast shall again be at the disposal of the Company.

The Company grants the aforesaid district to His Excellency **as a fief or fend** with all its prerogatives and rights. *B. C.-C., App., 353-354.*

1669. States-General.

There was heard the report of . . . deputies in charge of the West India Company's affairs, having, . . . investigated and examined **the petition** of the Directors of the . . . West India Company, requesting . . . approval of what they, the petitioners, have agreed to . . . with the present . . . Count of Hanau **concerning the establishment of** a considerable **Colony upon the wild coast of America** . . . being deliberated upon, it **was approved.** *Same, p. 357.*

1714. West India Company.

Although Orinoco, Trinidad, &c. is (*sic*) **under the power of the Spaniards, still it** also **lies within the Charter of the Company** where nobody has the

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—TO ALL THE COAST—(Continued).

right to trade except the Company and those to whom the Company gives permission to do so, so that it all is the territory of the Company, although we have no forts there. *B. C., I, 245.*

1757. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

About fourteen years ago I saw a passport . . . in Latin, granted by the Governor of Essequibo of that date to a Carib Chief who lived within the river Orinoco. On making inquiries . . . I came to learn . . . that the **States-General** in their commissions to the Governors of Essequibo also **give them the title of Governors of the Orinoco.** What is quite certain is that **these Governors style themselves of Essequibo and of the Orinoco** in the licences that they issue. *B. C., II, 137.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—BASIS FOR AND DUTCH VIEWS OF SPANISH CLAIMS TO SAME.

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

With the lower Orinoco in general, **and especially** with the **Aguire**, they [**Dutch**] **long maintained relations of trade, and in such sort as to make doubtful their recognition of Spanish sovereignty there.** *V. C.-C., II, 143.*

1599. Zeeland Estates.

In the matter of the request of the Burgomaster of Middelburg, Adriaen ten Heaft, setting forth how that in the preceding year, 1598, at heavy cost to himself, he caused to be investigated on the continent of America many different rivers and islands, and how that in this voyage were **discovered various coasts** and lands **where one could do notable damage to the King of Spain,**—and how that he is well minded to send out again two ships. *V. C., II, 12.*

1621. Cornelis Janssen Vianen.

If an attempt were made with superior force **to gain the land** there [on the mainland of America **between Brazil and the Orinoco**] and by such cultivation introduce products of Brazil and the West Indies, **the Spaniards would beyond doubt seek forcibly to prevent this.** *Same, p. 17.*

1758. Director-General in Essequibo.

That the [Cuyuni] Post of your Lordships' Company was on Spanish ground, which is utterly and indisputably untrue.

It is my opinion that this river is of the greatest importance to your Lordships, much more so than any one of the others, and also that **it is perfectly certain and indisputable that they [Spaniards] have not the slightest claim to it.** If your Lordships will . . . look at the map of this country, drawn by Mr. D'Anville, . . . your Lordships will clearly see that this is so. Our boundaries, too, are defined in a way which proves that the compiler was very well informed. *B. C., II, 144.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

Cuyuni being one of the three arms which constitute this river [Essequibo] and your Lordships having had for many years the coffee and indigo plantation there, also that the mining master, with his men, having worked on the Blue mountain in that river without the least opposition, **the possession of that river . . . cannot be questioned** in the least possible way, **and your Lordships' right of ownership is indisputable,** and beyond all doubt. *Same, p. 180.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—BASIS FOR AND DUTCH VIEWS OF SPANISH CLAIMS TO SAME—(Continued).

1759. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We still request you to lay before us everything which might in any way be of service in **proof of our right of ownership to,** or possession of, **the** aforesaid [**Cuyuni**] **river**; . . . For this purpose there might especially be of use to us a small map of the River of Cuyuni, with indication of the places where the Company's Post, and also the grounds of Oud Duinenburg, and of the Company's coffee and indigo plantations were situated, and, finally, of the so-called Blue Mountain in which the miners carried on their work. . . . We ask for this especially, because in your map of Essequibo . . . we can find nothing of all this. *B. C., II, 181.*

We see . . . that you extend the boundary of the Colony in the direction of the Orinoco not only as far as Waini, but **even as far as Barima. We should like to be informed of the grounds upon which you base this contention, and** especially your inference **that, Cuyuni** being situate on this side of Waini, it **must** therefore **necessarily belong to the Colony**; for, so far as we know, there exist no Conventions that the boundary-lines in South America run in a straight line from the sea-coast inland. *Same, p. 182.*

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

Although I am aware . . . that no Treaties have been made which decided that the dividing boundary in South America should run inland in a direct line from the sea-coast, as is the case with the English in North America, it still appears to me . . . to be an irrefutable fact that the **rivers** themselves, **which have been in the possession of your Lordships for such a large number of years, and** have been **inhabited by subjects** of the State **without** any or the least **opposition on the part of the Spanish, are most certainly the property of your Lordships.** *Same, pp. 184–185.*

1761. Director-General in Essequibo.

The latter [canoe] having been captured this side of Barima, I am of opinion that it was captured upon the . . . Company's territory, for, although there are no positive proofs to be found here, such has always been so considered by the oldest settlers, as also by all the free Indians. . . . Some very old Caribs . . . told me that they remember the time when the . . . Company had a post in Barima, . . . and then, lastly, because the boundaries are always thus defined by foreigners, as may be seen on the map prepared by D'Anville, the Frenchman.

These are the only reasons . . . upon which I base my opinions, because there are no old papers here out of which any information could be obtained. **It appears to me that the Spaniards are not ignorant of this,** else they would not have made so many complaints concerning the behavior of the depredators in Barima. **I believe that had they considered it to be their territory they would have found some means for stopping it,** especially since they dared to do so in such a violent manner in Cuyuni, when they were perfectly convinced that that place was beyond their own jurisdiction. *Same, p. 201.*

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

D'Anville's map . . . is not only the best but the only one in which this coast is exactly and truly given. . . . It was published in the year 1751. *Same, p. 211.*

CLAIMS BY THE DUTCH—BASIS FOR AND DUTCH VIEWS OF SPANISH CLAIMS TO SAME—(Continued).

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

They [Spanish] must have great and important reasons to make such attempts to obtain possession of this [Cuyuni] branch of our river, and I have not the least doubt that such is the case. *B. C., II, 211.*

——. [1764] British Case.

While claiming as Dutch all the territory up to the right bank of the Barima, the Director-General appears to have thought it inexpedient that the Dutch passes to traders should purport to include that river. In a . . . letter, said to have been sent by him . . . [in] 1764, to **the Governor of Surinam**, the latter **is requested not to name Barima in his passes, as that gave offence to the Spaniards.** The writer adds **that they maintained that that river was theirs, and expresses an opinion in their favour upon this point,** which, in one view, might be said to be inconsistent with the claim of the Director-General to the territory up to the right bank. *B. C., 51.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

The reasons that they [**Spaniards**] **had for** such unlawful proceedings [**destruction of Cuyuni** post of 1758] must be **best known to themselves, because they can have not the very least shadow of a claim to possession,** or it must have been the chimerical pretentions of the priests **in these parts** that the whole of America belongs to His Catholic Majesty, and that all other nations hold possession merely *precario*, and by permission. *B. C., III, 109.*

*Mentioning the **River Barima** in those passes causes complaints from **the Spaniards**, who, **maintaining that the river belongs to them, in which I believe they are right,** some of these passes have already been sent to the Court of Spain. *Same, p. 114.*

1770. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

As regards the Spanish rodomontades of which you speak, . . . of their **desire to** come and **take possession** of all the territory extending **to the bank of Oene,** which is situated on the west coast of Essequibo and below which there are several plantations, **under pretext that it belongs to his Catholic Majesty,** we believe that all these threats of the Spaniards . . . will disappear in smoke. *B. C., IV, 44.*

The Spaniards . . . **openly maintain that Powaron belongs to them as far as the bank of Oene, this being quite in our river,** several plantations lying below that bank. *Same, p. 45.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN COLONIAL RECORDS, CORRESPONDENCE, ETC.

1797. Captain-General of Caracas.

The Governor of Guayana, . . . reports, . . . that he has been informed **that the English have apportioned all the lands** which stretch **from** the Colony of **Essequibo to Barima, . . .** and that from one point to another they have **planted stakes,** on the top of which they have **affixed Notices,** explaining to whom that portion is allotted, with the name of the owner. *B. C., V, 164.*

---

* Note by editor of British Case. There is some reason to doubt the authenticity of this extract.

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN COLONIAL RECORDS, CORRESPONDENCE, ETC.—(Continued).

1797. Captain-General of Caracas.

Although this news is not as clear as an affair of so much importance demands, . . . I have dispatched Captain Don Manuel Astor, . . . to proceed at once to Point Barima, reconnoitre it, and make a scrupulous investigation into the truth of this matter, or obtain proof that it is unfounded.

B. C., V, 164–165.

1798. King of Spain.

The King has learned the news, sent to you by the Governor of Guayana, **of the distribution of the lands which they occupy between the mouth of the Essequibo and that of the Orinoco that has been made by the English,** and of the other matters to which your Excellency refers in the said communication, and the receipt of which I am commanded by His Majesty to acknowledge.

Same, p. 169.

1827. Lieutenant-Governor D'Urban.

The Boundaries of the Colony [of Demerary] . . . **are—**

On the north, the seacoast, from the mouth of the Abary to Cape **Barima,** near the mouth of the Orinoco.

On the west, a line running north and south from Cape Barima into the interior.

On the south, the Portuguese frontier, . . . generally defined by a line running east and west along the ridge which Humboldt calls the Cordillera of Parima, separating the two systems of rivers flowing respectively northward into the valleys of the Orinoco and Essequibo, and southward into that of the Amazons. *B. C., VI, 39.*

1834. Wm. Hilhouse.

A Post definitory of the jurisdiction westward is indispensable, and . . . **the Post of Pomeroon ought to be maintained** on a most respectable footing . . . all the other posts are decided public nuisances; . . . I would recommend their immediate abolition, the nearest burgher Captain being substituted in their charge as Protector. *Same, p. 53.*

1836. John Wadley.

The **extreme western boundary,** had been **settled at home to be at Point Barima** (east point of Orinoco). *Same, p. 60.*

1839. Rev. Thomas Youd.

I have visited the Indians who lie still farther south of Pirara, . . . and **between the Rivers Essequibo and Rupununy,** in the undoubted **English territory.** *Same, p. 64.*

1839. Governor Light.

The Columbian Government is desirous of ascertaining their [boundary] . . . **claiming more than** it will be **advantageous for Great Britain to allow.** *B. C., VII, 1.*

1840. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The [Venezuelan] gun-boat is on the eastern side of the **Barima River,** and which river **is our boundary.**

Some time ago the gun-boat did seize some corials, but these belonged to persons from the Orinoque, and were taken in the Barima, therefore I did not report the circumstance, it being beyond my jurisdiction. *B. C., VI, 99.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN COLONIAL RECORDS, CORRESPONDENCE, ETC.—(Continued.)

1841. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

May 12.—Accompanied Mr. Schomburgk and party to the entrance of the Barima and Amacura Rivers, where **Mr. Schomburgk planted boundary posts**; the one **at Barima**, in token of Her Majesty's right of possession, **and** the one **at Amacura** as claimed by Her Majesty as the boundary of British Guiana. Remained with the expedition at Barima Mouth.

Captain Cabborally . . . informed [me] . . . of a murder . . . **Although this murder was committed beyond what** [I] always **considered to be the limits of British Guiana, but within the assumed limits of Her Majesty's Commissioner of Survey** [Schomburgk], . . . felt it [my] duty to have the body exhumed, and accordingly held an inquest thereon.

B. C., VI, 112.

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

It has been my aim, with the limited resources which I have at my command, **to prove that the Orinoco was**, at the 17th century, politically recognized as **the boundary of the Dutch West India Company.** *B. C., VII, 35.*

Her Majesty's Government constituted an expedition to survey . . . the boundaries of **British Guiana, based upon the right** of primary possession, either of the English or their predecessors the Dutch.

That the mouth of the Orinoco had always been considered to form **the** western **boundary of the former Dutch possessions.** *Same, p. 37.*

1843. R. H. Schomburgk.

I consider that **Her Majesty has undoubted right to any territory through which flow rivers that fall directly, or through others, into the River Essequibo.** *Same, p. 50.*

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Indians of the more remote **parts of this** extensive **district** . . . residing in the Rivers **Winey, Barcema, and Amacoora.** *B. C., VI, 138.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Begs leave to **suggest now, as the boundary** of British Guiana **is defined,** and no likelihood of any interference by the Venezuelan Government, **that a mission** forthwith **be established on the Barcema** for the convenience of the Worrow Indians of that river, **and another on the Winey** for Accaways.

Same, p. 172.

1849. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Having . . . represented the . . . miserable condition of the Worrow Indians—especially those who inhabit the more **remote parts of this** extensive **district,** . . . I . . . proposed . . . the immediate establishment of a Mission on **Barima,** for the Worrow Indians. *Same, pp. 170–171.*

1850. Governor Barkly.

I have arrived at the same conclusion as Her Majesty's present Chargé d'Affaires at Caracas, that **that offer** [**of Lord Aberdeen**] **went far beyond any concession which the Venezuelans were entitled to expect,** and I would, with the utmost deference, **submit that** no overtures of a **compromise should** in

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN COLONIAL RECORDS, CORRESPONDENCE, ETC.—(Continued).

future meet the assent of the British Government, which **involve the surrender of Point Barima.**

I need add little to what . . . Schomburgk so forcibly stated . . . of the prospective importance, both in a military and a commercial point of view, of a site **which effectually commands the entrance of one of the mightiest rivers in the world.** *B. C., VI, 183.*

1875. Governor Longden.

The arrest of a criminal on the north-western **frontier** of this Colony, in territory . . . always . . . **claimed by Great Britain.**

Garrett was arrested on the banks of the **Amacura** river. . . . The **boundary claimed by the old Dutch Colony,** namely, a line **from Point Barima,** where an old Dutch post subsisted, to the Dutch post on the Cuyuni (opposite to the ancient fort marked on the map as the "most easterly Spanish post—Humboldt"), is the boundary which I understand to have been always claimed by Great Britain. This boundary is indicated . . . on the large map of . . . Schomburgk's Surveys . . . corrected . . . by . . . Chalmers and Sawkins . . . in 1872. . . . This line . . . includes both banks of the Amacura River. *Same, p. 212.*

1884. Governor Irving, Demerara.

The boundary between Venezuela and British Guiana **being unsettled, the** Colonial **Government has had to determine for itself the limits** of its jurisdiction. . . . **and** it **has taken** for the purpose **the line of** compromise suggested by . . . **Schomburgk** which . . . is considerably within the territorial claim of Great Britain. Although **that line has** never been officially recognized by both Governments, it has **for a long series of years been taken** for all practical purposes **as the settled boundary of the Colony.** . . . In criminal cases jurisdiction has been from time to time proved by showing that the crime occurred at a place on the British Guiana side of that boundary-line. *Same, p. 225.*

1884. Government Secretary, Demerara.

The boundary line at Amacura River . . . No rights can be acquired within this territory except under the authority of the Colonial Government, and . . . all persons coming within this territory will be amenable to, and will be dealt with according to, the laws of the Colony. *Same, p. 226.*

The whole of the territory . . . **between the Amacura and Moruca Rivers, is part of the Colony of British Guiana,** and the Colonial Government will maintain jurisdiction over this territory. *Same, p. 229.*

1887. Charles Bruce.

I . . . acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 5th instant reporting the arrival here on the 31st ultimo of the Venezuelan gun-boat "Centenario," having on board Señores Dr. Jesus Muñoz Tebar and Santiago Rodil.

I . . . refer you to the **notice** dated the 21st October, **1886,** published in the *London Gazette* by authority of Her Majesty's Government, of which a

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN COLONIAL RECORDS, CORRESPONDENCE, ETC.—(Continued).

copy is herewith enclosed, and to, state that the districts referred to in the official note enclosed in your letter are included within the limits defined by the terms of that Notice, and form part of the Colony of British Guiana. *V. C., III, 254.*

1891. Michael McTurk.

I explained to him (Gen. Bastidas) . . . that there was a dispute . . . between her Majesty's Government and that of Venezuela as to the right to the land on **the left bank of the Cuyuni** in that neighborhood (**near Yurnari mouth**) **but that we did not admit that there was any dispute as to the land on the right bank**, and which formed a part of the Colony of British Guiana, and over which the Government of that Colony exercised jurisdiction, and would enforce it if necessary; that it formed part of the district over which I was appointed Magistrate. *B. C., VI, 248.*

I warned all the Venezuelans who were living on the **right bank of the Cuyuni** that they were residing **within the Colony of British Guiana.** *Same, p. 253.*

By order of . . . the Lieutenant-Governor I have visited this part of my district [vicinity of the Ekereku Creek] for the purpose of warning such persons, of whatsoever nationality, that may be residing or prospecting for gold on the **right or southern bank of the Cuyuni River**, that such persons are resident **within the limits of the Colony of British Guiana.**

It is admitted that there is a dispute as to the right to a part of the land on the left bank of the Cuyuni River between her Majesty's Government and that of Venezuela, **but there is no dispute as to the right bank.** *Same, p. 254.*

1895. Robert Tennant.

The total **area of the colony** [British Guiana] is estimated at **110,000 square miles.** *V. C., III, 353.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN DIPLOMATIC CORRESPONDENCE.

1850. Belford Hinton Wilson to Vice-Consul Mathison.

The Governor has spoken of raising a fort at Point Barima, which is situated within the territory in dispute between Venezuela and Great Britain.

The . . . debates in Congress . . . and other reports . . . satisfy me of the desire and tendency in this country . . . to secure, by actual occupation, possession of Point **Barima**, the mouth of the **Amacura**, and all the territory **in dispute between England and Venezuela.** *B. C., VI, 180.*

1880. Lord Salisbury.

The boundary which Her Majesty's Government claim, in virtue of ancient Treaties with the aboriginal tribes and of subsequent cessions from Holland, **commences at a point . . . westward of Point Barima.**

Venezuela in . . . 1877, put forward a claim . . . to the . . . Essequibo . . . a boundary . . . which would involve the surrender of a province now inhabited by 40,000 British subjects, and which has been in the uninterrupted possession of Holland and of Great Britain successively for two centuries. *B. C., VII, 96.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN DIPLOMATIC CORRESPONDENCE—(Continued).

1881. Earl Granville.

Her Majesty's Government . . . are disposed . . . to **submit** . . . a line. . . . **The initial point to be fixed at a spot on the seashore 29 miles** of longitude due **east from** the right bank of the River **Barima.**

This boundary will surrender to Venezuela what has been called the Dardanelles of the Orinoco . . . and it yields about one-half of the disputed territory . . . in order to secure to Venezuela the undisturbed possession of the mouths of the Orinoco. *B. C., VII, 99–100.*

1886. British Foreign Office.

I submit . . . a notice published by the *London Gazette.*

Colonial Office, October 21, 1886.

Whereas the boundary line between Her Majesty's Colony of British Guiana and the Republic of Venezuela **is in dispute.**

And whereas it has come to the knowledge of Her Majesty's Government that **grants of land** within the territory claimed by Her Majesty's Government as part of the said Colony have been made, or purport to have been made, **by** . . . **Venezuela.**

Notice is hereby given, that **no title** to land, or to any right in . . . any land within the territory claimed . . . as forming part of the Colony of British Guiana . . . **will be** admitted or **recognized** by Her Majesty . . . and that any person taking possession of . . . such land . . . will be liable to be treated as a trespasser under the laws of the Colony. *V. C., III, 161.*

1887. F. R. St. John.

I am . . . instructed . . . to state . . . that the **request by the British Consul for the erection of** such **a lighthouse in 1836 was unknown to and unauthorized by the British Government of the day.**

B. C., VII, 124-125.

1890. Foreign Office to Senor Urbaneja.

Her Majesty's Government **could not accept** . . . **any arrangement which did not admit the** British title to the territory comprised within the **line laid down by** . . . **Schomburgk** in 1841. They would . . . refer to arbitration . . . certain territories to the west of that line. *Same, p. 135.*

1890. Foreign Office.

The claim of Great Britain . . . **to the whole basin of the Cuyuni and Yuruari is** . . . **solidly founded,** and the greater part of **the district** has been for three centuries **under continuous settlement by the Dutch, and** by the **British** as their successors.

Her Majesty's Government . . . **cannot admit any question as to** their title to territory within **the line surveyed by** . . . **Schomburgk** in 1841, and laid down on Hebert's map. . . . On the other hand, Her Majesty's Government do not wish to insist on the extreme limit of their claim, . . . and as an indication of good-will towards Venezuela they would be ready to abandon a portion of that claim . . . between the Schomburgk line and their extreme claim . . . and . . . to submit their claims to the arbitration of a third party. *Same, p. 137.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN DIPLOMATIC CORRESPONDENCE—(Continued).

Great Britain . . . [by] a . . . recognition of the right of Venezuela to the main stream of the Orinoco . . . including Point Barima and the adjacent district . . . would at once and unconditionally abandon a considerable portion of territory of which she is in actual occupation.

That territory . . . accrued to the Netherlands under the Treaty of Munster of 1648 by right of previous occupation. It was constantly held and claimed by the States-General in succeeding years. It was publicly and effectively occupied by Great Britain during the wars at the close of the last century, and the formal transfer of the country so occupied was effected by the Treaty of . . . 1814. *B. C., VII, 140.*

Her Majesty's Government . . . cannot consent to submit to arbitration what they regard as their indisputable title to districts in the possession of the British Colony.

Every fresh investigation tends only to enforce and enlarge that title.

Same, p. 141.

1893. Earl of Rosebery.

Her Majesty's Government consider that it is quite impossible that they should consent to revert to the status quo of 1850, and evacuate what has for some years constituted an integral portion of British Guiana.

Same, p. 143.

1895, Earl of Kimberley.

I reminded his Excellency [Mr. Bayard] that, although Her Majesty's Government were ready to go to arbitration as to a certain portion of the territory, which I had pointed out on the map, they could not consent to any departure from the Schomburgk line. *V. C.-C., III, 259.*

Great Britain has throughout been prepared to make large abatements from her extreme claim, although Her Majesty's Government have been continually accumulating stronger documentary proofs of the correctness of that extreme claim as being their inheritance from their Dutch predecessors.

Same, p. 260.

1895. Lord Salisbury.

The title of Great Britain to the territory in question is derived, in the first place, from conquest and military occupation of the Dutch settlements in 1796. Both on this occasion, and at the time of a previous occupation of those settlements in 1781, the British authorities marked the western boundary of their possessions as beginning some distance up the Orinoco beyond Point Barima, in accordance with the limits claimed and actually held by the Dutch, and this has always since remained the frontier claimed by Great Britain. *Same, p. 275.*

The claim which had been put forward on behalf of Venezuela by General Guzman Blanco in . . . 1877, would involve the surrender of a province now inhabited by 40,000 British subjects, and which had been in the uninterrupted possession of Holland and of Great Britain successively for two centuries. *Same, p. 280.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN DIPLOMATIC CORRESPONDENCE—(Continued).

1895. Lord Salisbury.

The Government of **Great Britain** have **from the first held** the same view as to the extent of territory which **they are entitled to** claim as a matter of right. It comprised the coast-line up to **the River Amacura, and the whole basin of the Essequibo River and its tributaries.**

As regards the rest, that which lies **within the so-called Schomburgk line, they do not consider that the rights of Great Britain are open to question.** Even within that line they have, on various occasions, offered to Venezuela considerable concessions as a matter of friendship and conciliation, and for the purpose of securing an amicable settlement of the dispute. If as time has gone on the concessions thus offered diminished in extent, and have now been withdrawn, this has been the necessary consequence of the gradual spread over the country of British settlements, which Her Majesty's Government cannot in justice to the inhabitants offer to surrender to foreign rule, and the justice of such withdrawal is amply borne out by the researches in the national archives of Holland and Spain, which have further and more convincing evidence in support of the British claims. *V. C.-C., III, 283.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN OFFICIAL OR SEMI-OFFICIAL MAPS.

1781. British Case.

In 1781 the British captured the Dutch Colony, and . . . surveyed . . . the coast to a point beyond the Barima, . . . A map was drafted by the officer in charge of this expedition and published in London in 1783. **Upon this map,** [*atlas, p. 30*] there is **a note which makes the western boundary of** the Colony **commence at the Barima, shown in the position really occupied by the Amakura.** *B. C., 57–58.*

1783. L. S. de la Rochette.

C. Barima, Cape Breme of the Dutch. **Western boundary of the Dutch according to their Claim.** *B. C. atlas, map 30.*

1798. Thomas Walker.

The boundary between the Spanish Government [**and British Guiana**] is a line running N. & S. from Cape Breme; which forms one of the mouths of the River Oronocco, & is about 60 or 70 miles to the N. W. of Morocco.

Same, map 34.

1798. Friedrich von Bouchenroeder.

Ancien poste Hollandaise **Snr les Limites des possessions Espagnoles.** [on east or right bank of the Barima River]. *Same, map 35.*

1801. British Case.

In 1801, the British Commandant was ordered to report on the extent of the Colony. His report was illustrated by a chart [*atlas, p. 37*] which **shows the boundary commencing at Barima** and includes the territories claimed by the Dutch in their Remonstrances. *B. C., p. 62.*

1839. Governor Light.

Mr. Schomburgk . . . having furnished me with the annexed memoir and map. [*V. C. atlas, map 82*]. *B. C., VII, 1.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN OFFICIAL OR SEMI-OFFICIAL MAPS—(Continued).

1839. Governor Light.

The views of Mr. Schomburgk can be **traced with accompanying map.** [*V. C. atlas, map 82.*] *B. C., VII, 2.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

[Map of] British Guiana to explain a memoir on its boundaries.

Shows the North-South boundary and also **boundaries claimed by Venezuela and by Brazil "by which, if acceded to, British Guiana would lose more than half its Territory."** *B. C. atlas, map 43.*

1840. Lord Russell to Governor Light.

But you will be pleased to adopt the spirit of those views in respect of any military occupation or any aggression upon the Indians **within the line which is assumed in Mr. Schomburgk's map as bounding the Colony under your government.** *Blue Book, Venezuela, No. 1, (1896) p. 189.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

Map's of the limits of British Guiana surveyed under Her Majesty's Commission by Robert H. Schomburgk—1st section.

The **limits between British Guiana and Venezuela. Drawn by Robert H. Schomburgk, colored by Edward Goodall.**

Shows expanded Schomburgk line. *B. C. atlas, map 44.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

Map's of the limits of British Guiana surveyed under Her Majesty's Commission by Robert H. Schomburgk.

General map No. 1. The limits between British Guiana and Venezuela **Drawn and coloured by Robert H. Schomburgk.**

Shows expanded Schomburgk line, with the note "Western limit of British Guiana as claimed under Her Majesty's Commission." *Same, map 46.*

1842. [1898] L. J. Hebert.

Map of British Guiana constructed from the surveys and routes **of Captn. Schomburgk, and other documents in the possession of the Colonial Department.** Drawn at the Military Depôt, Quarter Master Generals Office, Horse Guards, by L. J. Hebert, April, 1842.

Shows expanded Schomburgk line. *Same, map 38.*

"The Western Boundary of British Guiana on this Map from the Source of the Essequibo to the Boundary Post on the Cuyuni at the mouth of the Acarabisi is **the line proposed by Mr. Schomburgk to be determined by Survey."**

Same, map 39.

1842. Senor Fortique.

It ought to be observed that **the line** which has been **traced** is **not that deemed by her Majesty's Government to be the frontier** of English Guiana, **but that which** Commissioner **Schomburgk thought proper to lay down.**

B. C., VII, 80.

1846. H. Mahlmann.

Karte von **Britisch-Guyana** . . . vornehmlich nach den in den Jahren 1835–44 veranstalteten, im Colonial Office zu London befindlichen Aufnahmen des Sir Robert H. Schomburgk, 1846.

Shows north-south boundary. *Same, map 40.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN OFFICIAL OR SEMI-OFFICIAL MAPS—(Continued).

1873. Charles Barrington Brown.

Geological map of British Guiana.

The attached map [*this* map], containing the geological work of this survey, **is from tracings of Sir Robert Schomburgk's large map** (reduced one-half), **furnished by the Colonial Office.**

For the boundary, see V. C. atlas, map 4.

Reports on Geology of British Guiana, 8vo., London, 1875, p. 4.

We were engaged . . . in copying Sir R. Schomburgk's large map, to serve as a basis for our geological work **as directed by the Colonial office.**

Same, p. 31.

As far as **Otomong River, which forms the boundary line** between the Colony and Venezuela. *Same, p. 36.*

The boundary line of Venezuela **according to the map furnished us.**

Same, p. 44.

1875. Governor Longden.

The boundary claimed by the old Dutch Colony, namely, a line from Point Barima, where an old Dutch post subsisted, to the Dutch post on the Cuyuni (opposite to the ancient fort marked on the map as the "most easterly Spanish post —Humboldt"), is the boundary which I understand to have been **always claimed by Great Britain.** This boundary **is indicated by a line on the large map of British Guiana constructed from Sir Robert Schomburgk's surveys, and corrected to the present time by Messrs. Chalmers and Sawkins, and published in 1872.** *B. C., VI, 212.*

1875. Great Colonial Map by Stanford. *First Edition.*

Map of **British Guiana compiled from the surveys** executed under her Majesty's Commission from 1841 to 1844. And under the direction of the Royal Geographical Society from 1835 to 1839. **By Sir Robert Schomburgk,** K. R. E., Ph. D. Revised and corrected to the present time by Cathcart Chalmers, Esq., crown surveyor of the Colony, and James J. Sawkins, Esq., Director of the Geological Survey of the West Indies and British Guiana. With additions by Charles B. Brown, Esq. Engraved under the superintendence of William Walker, Esq., 1875. London.

Note. **The boundaries indicated in this map are those laid down by the late Sir Robert Schomburgk,** who was engaged in exploring the Colony during the years 1835 to 1839, under the direction of the Royal Geographical Society. But the boundaries thus laid down between Brazil on the one side and Venezuela on the other and the Colony of British Guiana must not be taken as authoritative; as they have never been adjusted by the respective governments; and an engagement subsists between the Governments of Great Britain and Venezuela by which neither is at liberty to encroach upon or occupy territory claimed by both.

B. C. atlas, map, 41.

[1886.] Same. *Second Edition.*

Above note omitted: *shows expanded Schomburgk line.*

Same, map, 42.

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN OFFICIAL OR SEMI-OFFICIAL MAPS—(Continued).

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

Schomburgk marked the boundary as conceived by him in a map, which, after lying unpublished for some 30 years, **formed the basis of the geological map published in 1873 by Charles Barrington Brown, and which was itself published in 1877** (though dated in 1875) under the auspices of the Government of British Guiana. Either this last published map or Brown's geological map may be consulted with a view to ascertain the **boundaries which seemed most suitable to Schomburgk.** *U. S. Com., II, 715.*

1897. George L. Burr.

I have again this morning studied most carefully, with glass and with naked eye, the final map—the so-called "**Physical Map**"— . . . **of Schomburgk, of 1844. There is** surely **on it no suggestion of boundary anywhere** and I cannot believe there ever has been. *V. C.-C., III, 303.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN CASES AND COUNTER CASES.

——. Venezuelan Case.

At the time of the acquisition by Great Britain of the colony now known as British Guiana, **the territories belonging to** or that might lawfully be claimed by **the United Netherlands were all located east of the Essequibo river.** *V. C., 234–235.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is not true that at the time of the acquisition by Great Britain of the Colony now known as British Guiana, **the territories belonging to,** or that might lawfully be claimed by **the United Netherlands, were all located east of the Essequibo River;** on the contrary, they extended as far as the Amakuru, and embraced all the territory eastward of the Schomburgk line, and a very considerable tract of territory to the westward and outside the Schomburgk line. *B. C.-C., 141.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The boundary line between the United States of Venezuela and the Colony of British Guiana, **begins at the mouth of the Essequibo** river; **runs thence** southward along the mid channel of said river **to its junction with the Cuyuni and Mazaruni** rivers; **thence** around the island of Kykoveral, leaving said island to the east; thence **along the mid channel of said Essequibo** river to the boundary line separating the territory of the United States of Venezuela from the territory of the United States of Brazil. *V. C., 235–236.*

——. British Counter Case.

The boundary to which Great Britain is entitled includes a considerable tract of territory to the westward, and outside of the Schomburgk line, and Great Britain is in any event entitled to all the territory up to the line drawn by Sir R. Schomburgk in 1841. *B. C.-C., 142.*

Recognizing, however, the fact of **the establishment of Spanish Missions** during the eighteenth century on territory south of the Orinoco, in the neighborhood of the river Yuruari, which Missions continued to exist up to the year 1817, the Government of **Great Britain has never actively sought to press its claim to that** portion of the **district** north-west of the Cuyuni, in which Missions were actually situated. *Same, p. 6.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN CASES AND COUNTER CASES—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

[The **Colony] of Essequibo** was for a long period the chief settlement, and besides the district of the Essequibo and its tributaries **included** the rivers and districts of **Pomeroon, Waini, and Barima** on the west. Subsequently, Demerara became the leading settlement and the seat of the Colonial Government has been at Georgetown in Demerara, Essequibo becoming the name of a county which included all the territory [in British Guiana] to the West of the Boerasirie Creek. *B. C.-C., 7.*

In 1840 . . . **Schomburgk . . . laid down a line which commenced at** the mouth of **the Amakuru**, followed that river to its source in the Imataka mountains, thence followed the crest of that ridge to the sources of the Acarabisi Creek, and descended that creek to the Cuyuni, **which** it followed to its source in Mount Roraima.

This line . . . **would have given to Venezuela a large tract of territory** north and west of the Cuyuni which was **never occupied by the Spanish Missions**, which was, on the other hand, **formally claimed by the Dutch.** *Same, p. 18.*

Prior to 1796 the Dutch, and, since that date, the British, have been **in possession of all the territory now in dispute.** *Same, pp. 18–19.*

From early in the eighteenth century down **to the present time, the Dutch** and their successors, the **British, have had political control over all the territory now in dispute.**

Neither the Spaniards nor the Venezuelans ever had possession of any of the territory in dispute.

Neither the Spaniards nor the Venezuelans ever exercised any political control over the territory now in dispute.

By the recognized principles of international law, **Great Britain is entitled to a territory far more extensive than that which she is at present claiming.** *Same, p. 19.*

In 1665 the **English** captured the [Pomeroon] colony, storming the Dutch fort of Moruka. The extent and importance of the settlement was such that **possession** of it was regarded as carrying with it the country **right up to the Orinoco.** *Same, p. 28.*

For the purposes of **militia organization and parochial division, no account** was **taken of territory beyond the Pomeroon . . . [but] British officers never regarded the Colony as so limited.** *Same, p. 108.*

The Barima district . . . was **treated by** both the **Dutch and British** Governments successively **as within their territorial jurisdiction.** *Same, p. 118.*

Schomburgk did not discover or invent any new boundaries. . . . He . . . ascertained the limits of Dutch possession, and the zone from which all trace of Spanish influence was absent. On such data he based his reports. *Same, p. 121.*

In 1836 a correspondence had passed between the Venezuelan authorities and the British Consul at Caracas . . . **[regarding] a beacon on Cape**

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—IN CASES AND COUNTER CASES—(Continued).

Barima . . . This correspondence **was in no way authorized by the British Government, and they had no knowledge of it until** it was communicated to them in **1842**. *B. C.-C., 122.*

——. British Counter Case.

Her Majesty's Government submit that, putting aside for the moment all question of a title derived from the Dutch, **Great Britain has, at this moment, and had, at the date of the Treaty of Arbitration, full and complete** political **possession of this territory**, and that the Venezuelan Case discloses no evidence of any facts sufficient to displace it. *Same, p. 124.*

That **this offer** [**of 1844**] **was extremely generous** cannot be denied, **and** it was prompted by Lord Aberdeen's desire to come to a speedy and amicable arrangement with a weaker Power whom Great Britain had so often befriended in the past, and was ready to help again. . . . Lord Aberdeen's proposal, when communicated some time later to the Government of British Guiana, **was found to be unnecessarily unfavourable to the Colony, even to the extent of interfering with settled districts**, . . . In fact, it was generally considered to have been made in a spirit of undue concession. *Same, pp. 124–125.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—ALLEGED BASIS FOR.

——. British Case.

The Dutch and the British have for centuries been in full possession of . . . both sides of the Essequibo below the point where it is joined by the Masaruni. . . . **This carries with it the right to the whole basin of the Essequibo and its tributaries**, except in so far as any portion of that basin may have been occupied by another Power. . . . Such right can only be rebutted by proof of actual occupation by another Power. There is not even a pretence of such occupation by Spain or Venezuela except as regards . . . the neighborhood of the Yuruari.

The title of the British to the basin of the Essequibo and its tributaries is greatly strengthened by the fact that **the only permanent means of access to** by far the greater part of **the upper portion of this basin is by these streams themselves.** *B. C., 161.*

The occupation and control of the coast would of itself carry with it, in the absence of any competing occupation, **the right to the basins** of the Rivers **Pomeroon, Moruka, Waini, and Barima; but the evidence also establishes actual possession** of the greater part **of these rivers.** The British are therefore rightfully in possession of the whole coast, . . . to the right bank of the Amakuru. . . . In the absence of actual occupation by any other Power **they are thus entitled to the whole hinterland** of this range of coast, extending to the watershed constituted by the Pacaraima range, of which Mount Roraima, where the Cuyuni rises, forms part, and further east by the Akarai range, in which the Essequibo has its source. *Same, p. 163.*

Towards the coast the Amakuru constitutes the natural boundary between the territory occupied and controlled by the British and that occupied and controlled by the Venezuelans. . . . **The Imataka mountains** and the range

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—ALLEGED BASIS FOR—(Continued).

of hills constituting **the water-shed between** the tributaries of the **Orinoco and** those of the **Cuyuni and Massaruni form the boundary** of the river basin to which Great Britain is *prima facie* entitled. *B. C., 163.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

There is no pretence that any new title has been acquired by Great Britain since 1840; and the definition of the present **boundary must**, therefore, **depend upon** the extent of Dutch and **Spanish rights in 1803.** . . . The Essequibo settlement was always, until very recent years, confined to the mouth of that river; and . . . Great Britain's present pretensions to territory west of that stream have not, in fact, as they could not have in law, anything in the history of the present century to support them. *V. C., 162.*

The **occupation by British** subjects or by persons under British protection, of the territory above described, . . . was **undertaken after due warning from the Venezuelan Government** that titles thus sought to be acquired would not be recognized, and after due notice from the British Government that persons so entering into said territory must do so at their own peril. *Same, p. 227.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is **inaccurate.** The **occupation by British** subjects, or by Indians under British protection, of the territory referred to, existed for **many years before 1880.** *B. C.-C., 135.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

A nation is bound to faithfully observe its **treaty engagements**; and no acts committed by it in violation of such engagements can be made the basis of title, especially as against the nation with whom such treaty was concluded. *V. C., 229.*

——. British Counter Case.

A nation is bound to faithfully observe its **Treaty engagements, but** it is **not true** that no acts committed by it, though in violation of such engagements, can be made the basis of title. In some cases title can be acquired by the exercise of hostile or adverse acts. *B. C.-C., 136.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Neither the early relations of the **Dutch** with Guiana prior to 1648, nor the establishment by them, prior to said date, of a trading post in the Essequibo river, gave them a **right to the soil, nor sovereignty** over the territory occupied. *V. C., 230–231.*

——. British Counter Case.

The relations of **the Dutch** in Guiana prior to 1648, and the establishment by them, prior to that date, of their settlements and Posts on the Essequibo and elsewhere, gave them, and were recognized by Spain as giving them, a **right to the soil and sovereignty** over the territory occupied.

The **Dutch**, from the time of the establishment of their Posts upon the Essequibo and elsewhere, were **entitled to extend their** Colonies and **possessions.** *B. C.-C., 138.*

1814. Venezuelan Counter Case.

[The British Case admits] that the sole title of Great Britain to British Guiana is the title conveyed to her by the Dutch in 1814. *V. C.-C., 13.*

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—ALLEGED BASIS FOR—(Continued).

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The fall Mecoro-Vussu. . . . It is not known to the Indians inhabiting these regions that white men had ever penetrated so far before . . . **I considered it of importance to trace** it [**Barima River**] **higher up, as,** by its western course on its ascent **every mile would add to the British territory.** *B. C., VII, 23.*

Great Britain has not undertaken the question of determinating the boundaries of British Guiana upon the principles of aggrandizement. She **does not wish more than belongs to her by justness,** . . . she is naturally anxious to settle the boundaries . . . **(as well out of political as philanthropical motives).** *Same, p. 38.*

1842. Earl of Aberdeen.

Her Majesty's Government will send instructions . . . to **remove the posts** . . . placed by Mr. Schomburgk near the Orinoco. But . . . Her Majesty's Government must not be understood to abandon any portion of **the rights of Great Britain over the territory** which was formerly **held by the Dutch** in Guiana. *Same, p. 80.*

1844. Combined Court of British Guiana.

Mr. Macrae: . . . They are **the aborigines** of the country, and **we inherited from them our possessions in this colony.** (Mr. Arrindell laughed aloud.) It appears to have excited the risible faculties of the honorable member, but I repeat that we do hold our title from them orginally. *V. C.-C., III, 181.*

Mr. Arrindell: . . . **The small portion of land which we occupy was obtained first by conquest, and then by treaty,** and we have nothing to do with the treaty. *Same, p. 184.*

1850. Belford Hinton Wilson.

The Ladronera party . . . have had recourse to the old political artifice of imputing to England a design . . . to seize upon the Province of Venezuelan Guayana.

I have considered it right and expedient to give at once a flat denial to this statement, and to show . . . that it is . . . the very reverse of the truth.

I have explained fully both to President-General Monagas and to the Minister for Foreign Affairs, . . . that these declarations . . . must not be understood as indicating in the slightest degree an intention on the part of the British Government to abandon any portion of the **rights of Great Britain over the territory** which was formerly **held by the Dutch** in Guayana. *B. C., VI, 178.*

1850. Governor Barkly.

Of the validity of that claim [Schomburgk line] as derived by conquest and cession from the Dutch, **I entertain not the slightest doubt. For were the historical evidence** as to the fortification of Point Barima by that people in the sixteenth century, and their formation of settlements high up the river altogether **wanting, no one travelling through the country,** as I did, **and tracing the still remaining effects of their influence over the Indian population, could resist coming to this conclusion.** Their Chiefs to this day bear the names of

CLAIMS BY THE BRITISH—ALLEGED BASIS FOR—(Continued).

Jan, Hendrick, or the like; **their intercourse with Europeans is still carried on mainly in the creole Dutch**; . . . even in their own dialects the Dutch names for things derived from abroad (rum, gunpowder, &c.,) are incorporated; whilst the enormous mango, orange, and other fruit trees, which crown each rising ground, are all associated with traditions of the same people.

In the State Atlas of Colonel **Codazzi** . . . the Venezuelan **boundary-line is** . . . **visionary** . . . not merely severing from this Colony Protestant Missions, for years supported by British liberality, and lands occupied by British subjects for half-a-century past, but still more strangely including Cartabo Point, of which the Dutch held uninterrupted possession from the sixteenth century to the capture by Great Britain, together with thousands of acres in the vicinity, long ago granted away, as recorded in the archives of this Colony, to Dutch settlers. *B. C., VI, 184.*

1851. Governor Barkly.

A very erroneous impression has existed, that prior to . . . Schomburgk's survey, no jurisdiction whatever, beyond the Morucca Creek, was claimed by the British . . . but I found abundant evidence to the contrary in every step of my journey, . . . **even** the few Indians . . . **on** . . . the **Barima itself** . . . having, till quite lately, been governed by a Chief holding his commission from Sir James Carmichael Smyth, who died . . . several years before that survey was dreamt of. *B. C.-C., App., 300.*

1887. Lord Salisbury.

The **British claim to** the . . . southern mouth of the Orinoco (including **Barima**) . . . is **derived**, . . . **from ancient Treaties with the aboriginal tribes, and** the subsequent **cessions from Holland.** *B. C., VII, 132.*

1893. Earl of Rosebery.

Great Britain claims certain territory in Guayana **as successor** in title **of the Netherlands, and (by right of conquest as against Spain).** *Same, p. 143.*

ADMISSIONS—BY THE SPANISH.

——. British Case.

The Spaniards recognized the Amakuru or the Barima as being **the** effective **frontier** of their possessions.

The Spanish authorities **recognized the junctions of** the Rivers **Uruan and Curumo** with the Cuyuni as being on **the frontiers** of their possessions. *B. C., 78.*

The area over which Dutch trade in Guiana **extended** . . . it can be shown from Spanish documents . . . was **regarded by** the **Spaniards as impressed** *de facto* **with** a **Dutch political character.** *Same, p. 82.*

1614. Antonio de Muxica Buitron.

They [Dutch] have possessed themselves of the mouths of these two rivers [**Amazon and Orinoco**], and are making themselves masters of the produce and possessions of the natives, which is a serious matter. *B. C., I, 36.*

ADMISSIONS—BY THE SPANISH—(Continued).

1637. Don Juan Desologuren.

Help sent from here to this end will be more useful under the command of the said Don Diego Lopez de Escobar than a much larger number sent from Spain, for the ends to be accomplished are only to be effected by strategem in the **settlements and retreats which the enemy possess by right of might.**

B. C., I, 79.

1638. Governor of Caracas.

With many gifts of articles of barter and clothing, which they give to the Indians, **they hold all the country on their side,** and **being thus united** and in particular **to the Caribs,** who are in great numbers. *Same, p. 101.*

——. British Counter Case.

The Settlement of **Pomeroon** . . . was **settled without** any **opposition** on the part **of Spain.** *B. C.-C., 55.*

The Dutch, in 1664, openly stated with regard to the West India Company, that it had been **empowered,** and still was empowered, **to establish Colonies** and Settlements of people on lands which were not occupied by others. This position was **never questioned by Spain,** though the establishment of the **Colony at Pomeroon** was . . . clearly brought to the knowledge of the King. *Same, pp. 56–57.*

In 1676 the **Spaniards admitted that the Dutch held the chief portion of the coast** from Trinidad to the Amazon. *Same, p. 58.*

No objection to the [**second**] **Settlement at Pomeroon** was suggested **by** the **Spanish Government.** *Same, p. 60.*

1676. Council of War.

Holland . . . resolved to establish a Colony on the coast of the mainland at Cape Orange, between Surinam and the River Amazon, where they [**Dutch**] **hold the chief portion of the coast** from Trinidad up to this river, **with settlements in** Barbiche, **Sequiebes** and Surinamte. *B. C., I, 176–177.*

1747. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

By these channels, without entering the sea, one can navigate with small vessels to **the blockhouse** called the Post, **which the Dutch** of Essequibo **maintain** with three men and two small cannon, **16 leagues from the Colony towards the Great Ships' Mouth.** And it is by this way that the Dutch make their voyages when they are returning from the Orinoco in small vessels. *B. C., II, 53.*

1755. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

I consider that in **these Missions** [Miamo and others] which **are more in the hands of the Dutch than those of their owner,** there exist [etc.]. *Same, p. 107.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

I answer what is known to all the religious of our Missions, but particularly to the Fathers President of **Miamo, Carapo, and Yurnary,** on account of **their immediate proximity to the frontiers.** *Same, p. 146.*

ADMISSIONS—BY THE SPANISH—(Continued).

1764. [1897] George L. Burr.

The remonstrance at this time [1764] addressed by the Essequibo Governor to the Governor of Surinam against mentioning **in . . . passes the name** of the **Barima** lest **umbrage** be given to the **Spaniards**, suggests by its silence that **no such umbrage was caused by the name of the Waini.** *V. C.-C., II, 113.*

1769. British Case.

From time almost immemorial the Dutch had been in possession . . . of the . . . Essequibo . . . of several rivers and creeks . . . all branches and streams which fall into Essequibo, and . . . of . . . the Cuyuni. **This claim the Spanish Government never denied** and never rebutted. *B. C., 54.*

1770. Commandant of Guayana.

In the vast Province of Guayana, so fertile and so advantageously situated, **all the coast is occupied by foreigners, and there only remains to us Spaniards, the mouth of the Orinoco** in one corner as an outlet to the sea. The Dutch possess the best and most useful parts of the coasts of this extensive territory for there many navigable rivers which traverse the most fruitful part of the far interior of Guayana flow into the sea. *B. C., IV, 73.*

1773. British Case.

Centurion, Commandant at Guayana . . . **stated . . . that the French and Dutch had occupied the whole sea-coast of Guiana.** *B. C., 57.*

1773. Commandant of Guiana.

On the confines or limits of the vast region of this province [of Guiana] **the French and Dutch have occupied the whole sea-coast** with their Colonies **—the French in Cayenne,** round the mouth of the Amazon, and **the Dutch in** Surinam, Berbiz, and **Essequibo, 55 or 60 leagues from** the Great Mouth of the **Orinoco.** *B. C., IV, 111.*

Our actual possessions are limited to a part of the Rio Negro, the whole of the Casquiari, **Upper and Lower Orinoco,** and the new settlements which we are founding in the interior of the country, along the rivers Caroni, Paragua, Aroy, Caura, Erevato, Padamo, Ventuari, and others running from the unexplored heart of Guaiana to the Orinoco. *Same, pp. 111–112.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **Spaniards did not dispute** the **Dutch right in** the **Essequibo.** *B. C.-C., 87.*

1803. Francis McMahon.

He [**Governor of Guiana**] **wished** that **our Government would let** two small **vessels cruise off Moroqua Post and Wynah River,** as the knowledge of their being there would perhaps **deter the negroes** from further attempts. *B. C., V, 184.*

1814. British Case.

In . . . 1814 . . . the **Colonies** of Essequibo . . . and Berbice were finally **ceded** to the British, who had been in possession of them since **1803. No question of boundary was raised by Spain, although** it had been reported to the Spanish Government that the English had apportioned the lands taken from the Dutch as far as **the Orinoco.** *B. C., 64.*

ADMISSIONS—BY THE SPANISH—(Continued).

1897. George L. Burr.

Though more than once visited by bodies of armed Spaniards, who forcibly abducted the Indians settled about it, **no Spanish attempt to take it [Moruka] into possession is known to Dutch records.** *V. C.-C., II, 109.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—DIRECT, IN GENERAL.

1599. [1897] George L. Burr.

Cabeliau . . . makes affidavit. It was the certificate demanded by the States-General, and its validity was conceded, for on October 19, 1599, the freedom of convoy conditioned upon it was . . . awarded by the States-General.

By these acts the supreme political authority of the Netherlands becomes a witness that the coast of **Guiana was theretofore unvisited by the Dutch.** An investigator of political titles may well be content with such evidence. Nor is there, so far as I can find, the slightest reason to question its truth.

V. C.-C., II, 44.

1683. [1897] George L. Burr.

Beekman, in 1683-4, **urge[d] the . . . occupation** of the **Barima.** . . . It is clear, then, that in the eyes of . . . Beekman, the Barima is not yet an actual possession of the Company. Yet it cannot be questioned that his prohibition of trade there is a distinct assertion of claim, as his statement that such trade is "to the prejudice of the Company" is the distinct assumption of a right—the claim and right, not of Holland in general, but of the Dutch West India Company.

After all, these were but the provisional acts of a subordinate. What did the Company answer? Directly, nothing. Neither the proceedings of the Zeeland Chamber nor those of the supreme board—the Ten—show any discussion of the matter. . . . In their long reply to Beekman's letter, there is from beginning to end no mention of Barima. *Same, p. 122.*

Whatever their reason, it is certain that **the** West India **Company never answered the suggestion** as to a Barima Post; **and Beekman** himself **never mentioned it again.** *Same, p. 123.*

Toward the end of 1683 the **Dutch Commandeur** in Essequibo **provisionally took possession of** that river [**Barima**] for the Dutch West India Company, by stationing there an employe to buy up Indian wares and by warning off other traders; and early in 1684 he had a shelter built there for occasional visits from the Pomeroon Postholder, at the same time **suggesting to the Company that it take the Barima into its possession** and establish there a permanent outlier's post.

The West India **Company wholly ignored these suggestions.**

Same, p. 137.

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

But while there is . . . abundant evidence of a claim of the Dutch to plant colonies freely on the coast of Guiana from the Amazon to the Orinoco, I have found **in Dutch records no claim,** as against other European States, **of an exclusive right** thus **to colonize Guiana; and no protest** at any time **against** the similar attempts which, throughout the greater part of this [17th] century, the **English and the French** were likewise making to plant colonies on this coast. *Same, p. 180.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—DIRECT, IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1694. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Most of the red slaves [Indians] come from the Rivers **Barima and Orinoco, which lies under the dominion of the Spaniard.** *B. C., I, 213.*

1701. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

All the lands where we carry on our horse-trade, are under the King of Spain, as we know by experience from the prohibitions we have already met in the trade to Orinoco. *V. C., II, 68.*

1702. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Great mortality of horses in this Colony, there being already almost 100 head dead through mange and other forms of sickness. That truly is a great loss to the Colony, the more so since the **Spaniards will no longer permit any trafficking for horses on their territory.** *Same, pp. 68–69.*

1703. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Owing to the present war, no horses are to be had above here as formerly, inasmuch as **those Indians think they stand under the crowns of Spain and France,** and this trade is thereby crippled. *Same, p. 69.*

1713. Commandeur in Essequibo.

[Order prohibiting trade] causes great regret among the free, who have several times complained to me about this, urging that they **did not intend to trade within the territory of the Company, but** only **asked for permission to do so on Spanish ground,** such as Orinoco, Trinidad, &c., . . . they claim that . . . they were promised free trade, . . . outside the jurisdiction of the Company. *B. C., I, 236.*

For a considerable time it has not been possible to carry it [the annatto and balsam trade] on, because of some dislike which **the Spaniards (on whose territory the copaiba is purchased)** have taken to our nation. They have also now been cruising after the Dutch boats which go thither, so that I have not dared to risk so greatly the Company's wares and other effects.

This trade [in balsam] **was permitted** to the free, **because it took place outside of the Company's district,** and was only carried on upon Spanish territory in the River Orinoco, where the Inhabitants of the Colonies Berbice and Surinam likewise trade. *Same, p. 237.*

1714. West India Company.

Although Orinoco, Trinidad, &c., is [*sic*] **under the power of the Spaniards, still it also lies within the Charter of the Company,** where nobody has the right to trade except the Company, and those to whom the Company gives permission to do so, so that it all is the territory of the Company, although we have no forts there. *Same, p. 245.*

1717. Petition of Free Settlers in Essequibo.

We [**free settlers in Essequibo**] **are restricted in a river,** which is **outside the territory of the** Noble **Company,** where the same has no more power than a private merchant, which is in Spanish possession.

Y. H. are also aware (or at present we suppose so) that **Orinoco** is a river which **is actually under the King or Crown of Spain,** which nation is consequently master there. *Same, p. 247.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—DIRECT, IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1732. Venezuelan Case.

In 1732 the **Swedes** conceived a project of settling **in the Barima.** This being reported . . . to Spain, a royal order enjoined prompt and thorough resistence . . . and a force of soldiers was gathered for the purpose of expelling the intruders, . . . **the Governor of Essequibo, . . . not only made no protest, but furnished supplies to the Spaniards;** and the . . . Company, . . . [upon] a request for instructions, did not so much as deign to reply. *V. C., 139.*

1735. West India Company,

We have decided hereby to give you [Commandeur in Essequibo] express orders that, . . . you . . . forbid each and every one . . . to take any hand-arms or material of war from the river to **Orinoco,** or to any other places **not under the jurisdiction of the States-General,** . . . if any one be found to do it a second time, that he be banished from the river all the days of his life.

We order that you henceforth cause to be examined all boats leaving the river which excite the least suspicion.

Considering that, perhaps, a way might be found for exporting arms from the Colony without using the river, you must also provide against this as much as possible; . . . we . . . authorize and order you to exercise strict supervision over all the ships which come into the river.

In case . . . anybody should undertake to export slaves from the river we order you to forcibly prevent this. *B. C., II, 19–20.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

A **nation of Indians** have come down from Orinoco and **have attacked the Caribs subject to us in the River Wayni.**

I have expressly forbidden him [the "Postholder of Wacquepo and Moruka"] to set foot upon the Spanish territory—not even to go below the River Wayni [Weijne]. *Same, p. 45.*

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

Cuyuni is not a separate river like **Weyne and Pomeroon (which last has been occupied by us,** and still contains the foundations of your Lordships' fortresses). *Same, p. 185.*

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

I shall write to the Governor of Orinoco concerning the state of affairs in Barima, which would become an absolute den of thieves, a ragtag-and-bobtail party of our colonists staying there under pretence of salting, trading, &c.

The west side of Barima being certainly Spanish territory (and that is where they are), I can use no violent measures to destroy this nest, not wishing to give any grounds for complaint; wherefore I think of proposing to the Governor . . . to carry this out hand-in-hand, or to permit me to do so, or as and in what manner he shall consider best. *B. C., III, 131.*

1766. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

You told us that the place about **Barima,** where some scum and offscourings of folk were staying together and leading a scandalous life, **was Spanish terri-**

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—DIRECT, IN GENERAL—(Continued).

tory, and that you intended to . . . submit some propositions to the Spanish Governor for the extirpation of that gang. And now you inform us of your having sent thither the Postholder of Moruka with positive orders, probably *propria authoritate* without any concurrence of the aforesaid Governor, . . . and we cannot quite make this tally with the other. If that place is really Spanish territory, then you have acted very imprudently and irregularly; and, on the contrary, if that place forms part of the Colony, and you had previously been in error as to the territory, then you have done very well, and we must fully approve of your course, as also of the Court's Resolution that henceforth no one shall be at liberty to stay on the Barima. But if the Court has no jurisdiction in that place, we see little result from that Resolution: *extra territorium suum jus dicenti enim impune non paretur.* *B. C., III, 137.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

Concerning the matter of Barima and the case of Rose, I shall have the honour to inform your Lordships that we, as well as the Spaniards, regard the River **Barima** as **the boundary division of the two jurisdictions,** the east bank being the Company's territory, and the west bank Spanish.

I have in two consecutive letters given the Governor of Guayana a circumstantial account of the matter, and asked him to send some men to help us clear out this nest.

His Honour did not answer those letters, but sent me a verbal message by . . . one of the principal colonists of Guayana, that it was impossible for him to send men on account of the great distance and the lack of boats, &c , and that the best thing would be to let those evil-doers fight it out.

Thereupon I sent the Postholder of Moruka my orders, but was careful to charge him to avoid the Spanish bank, but that he was not to avoid the islands lying in the river, because these were uncertain territory. He followed my orders faithfully, Rose having been apprehended on our shore. *Same, p. 141.*

1769. [1897] George L. Burr.

And in the remonstrance to Spain **in 1769 the Dutch** Government **described its territory as** extending, not to the Barima, but **only "to beyond the river Waini."** *V. C.-C., II, 136.*

1769. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The hindrances by them [Spaniards] caused to those of Essequibo, as well in **the fishery on the territory of the** Republic **as in the mouth of the River Orinoco.** *B. C., IV, 26.*

This and the other enterprises of the Spaniards, together with their hindering **the fishery on our own coasts and** their preventing **the fishery in Orinoco.** . . . have been brought . . . to the notice of the States-General. *Same, p. 28.*

Hindering of **the fishery** for those of the aforesaid Colony, **both on their own coast and also in the mouth of the River Oronoque.** *Same, p. 36.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—DIRECT, IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1775. Postholder in Moruka.

He [Spanish Captain] . . . said that his lord and master would shortly set a guard in the creek of Weena, called the Barmani, and that the whole of Maroekka also belonged to the Spaniards, and I thereupon **answered that the River Barima belonged to the Swede,** and Weene, as well as Maroekka, to the Dutch, and they said that it was not so. *B. C., IV, 138.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

One first finds an explicit claim to the Waini by a division of the West India Company itself. **The Zeeland shareholders,** . . . **describe the colony as "crossed . . . by the . . . Barima,** Waini, Moruca, &c." But, alas, the West India Company was at strife within itself, and a counter-memorial, . . . by . . . **the Amsterdam Chamber . . . scouted such claims** that these adjoining rivers were a part of the colony of Essequibo. It is even urged by these hostile critics that the Zeeland Chamber is not at harmony with itself as to the limits. *V. C.-C., II, 114.*

The claim to the **Barima** as boundary, though its mention by Hartsinck in 1770, its recognition on the English map published in 1783 from the observations of Thompson, and its adoption in 1798 by the map of Bouchenroeder must have kept it familiar, **finds for long no further mention in the records.** In 1801, however, the confidential envoy sent to represent the Dutch Council of the Colonies at the elbow of the Dutch plenipotentiary in the Congress of Amiens was instructed to see that the colonial boundary was there defined at the Barima, if it could not be fixed at the Orinoco; but, as he explained to the Council in a most suggestive letter, he found it unwise to mention the question there. The negotiations at Madrid suggested by him were never undertaken; and the only further mention of the river I have found among Dutch papers is in an unused and unpublished charter submitted by this returned envoy to his colleagues in 1803, wherein it is proposed that under certain conditions the colonists of Essequibo and Demerara shall be allowed to cut timber in the Pomeroon, the Waini, and the Barima. *Same, p. 137.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—THAT MORUCA WAS A FRONTIER POST.

1726. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

Knowing that the said Post [**Waequepo**] **lies** far **out of the ordinary course of boats which come hither** through the inland waters, it was his [the Commandeur's] intention to choose a fit place in the River of Marocco to which he might **transplant the house and Post,** since all vessels which come through the inland waters must pass that way. . . . they decided that **the fittest place was** where the horse-dealers from Orinoco generally moor their boats **in the River of Moruka,** called in the Indian language Accouiere, . . . The unfortunate state of affairs in Europe having been taken into consideration, it was **resolved to establish** the house and **Post of Waequepo upon the aforementioned site** as soon as possible, and thus have an opportunity of being kept well informed of the hostile boats that had any intention of coming to disturb this river. *B. C., II, 5-6.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—THAT MORUCA WAS A FRONTIER POST—(Continued).

1728. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

Resolved to reinforce the aforesaid Post of **Wacquepo** with two soldiers, and to direct Jan Batiste to have the necessary coast-guards posted, **so that we may receive the earliest information in case the Spaniards should send** any armed **vessels to this Colony** in accordance with the rumours afloat.

B. C., II, 7.

1728. Secretary Gelskerke to Postholder at Wacquepo.

You are ordered to have proper coast-guards posted, where such are necessary, so **that we may be informed betimes should the Spaniards** wish to **send any vessels to this Colony** to molest the same. *Same, p. 8.*

1730. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Commandant of the **Post** which I have **between the Orinoco and this river** [Essequibo]. *Same, p. 11.*

1735. [1897] George L. Burr.

[In 1735] the **French** still **traded in** the **Barima; nor is there** in the proceedings, as **reported**, or in the contemporary correspondence with the Company, **any questioning of their right to do so.** *V. C.-C., II, 127.*

1744. Court of Justice of Essequibo.

Two Spaniards on their way hither **from Orinoco** had been **arrested at the** Company's **Post in Wacquepo**, and [the Commandeur] asked if they would be allowed to arrive in the Colony or be sent back.

It was resolved to allow them to come here this time, but that this must not be taken as a precedent. *B. C., II, 43.*

1746. West India Company.

You will do well by driving away again **out of the Wacquepo and Moruka the Indian nation** which came down from far up in the Orinoco and tear down what you find they have made there, **and thus maintain the Company's territory.** *Same, p. 46.*

1747. Commandeur in Essequibo.

In Wacquepo and Moruka all is again still, as the nation which arrived there with the intention of killing the Caribs dwelling there was received by them reasonably, and thereupon they again retired back up the Orinoco. But the undertakings of the Spaniards go so far that, if proper measures be not taken against them, they may, in the course of time, lead to the total ruin of the Colony. *Same, p. 48.*

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.

This ship had been stranded at **Pechy**, and therefore **on the territory of Spain**, and I had no right to touch it.

Note by Prof. Burr.

In reporting the affair to the West India Company Storm van 's Gravesande had described the location of the wreck as "between Camoeni and Peche, **about 15 [Dutch] miles below** [*i. e.* **west of**] **the Post in Moruca.**" . . . The bay of Peche, according to the Bouchenroeder map, (*V. C. atlas, map 46*) is a little east of the mouth of the Waini. *V. C., II, 105.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—THAT MORUCA WAS A FRONTIER POST—(Continued).

1754. Court of Justice in Essequibo.

[Resolved] 2. That an **armed boat** be **placed at Moruka to keep guard**, . . . with instructions, at the first signs or suspicion of the approach of the enemy, to come and inform the Director-General as soon as possible.

[Resolved] 3. That . . . **a safe conduct** be sent **to** one . . . **Meyer**, . . . at present amongst the Indians **in Barima**, for him **to arrive safely here.** *B. C., II, 95.*

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have also sent order to Moruka to cause all inland waters and **passages to be closed**, so that they [Spaniards] may not be able to pass with small vessels. *Same, p. 96.*

Two small vessels are being made . . . **to keep watch between Moruka and Pomeroon**, and the Arawaks of the Post are spread along the sea-coast in corrials so as to be able to give timely warning. *Same, p. 97.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

A very good and fit **barque** of Mr. Dudonjon has also been **equipped to** go and **lie by** the angle of **the Pomeroon.** *Same, p. 98.*

1765. Memorial of Shareholders of Zeeland Chamber.

Demerara . . . is situated between the two most **extreme** trading-places or **posts** in Essequibo—namely, the one, to the north, on the River **Moruka, and** the other, to the south, on the River **Mahaicony**, both of which rivers, as well as the others situate between, pertain to that Colony—which of course, shows undeniably that Demerara is one and the same Colony with Essequibo. *B. C., III, 125.*

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

Having . . . inform [ed] your Lordships in one of my former letters of the barbarous mode of life of some of our colonists in Barima, and hearing that this was getting gradually worse, I charged the Postholder of Moruka, . . . to proceed thither in order to prevent all further mischief, and . . . to order the evil-doers to come to the fort.

[After convicting Rose] **the Court made a further order forbidding any one to stop in Barima, and charged the Postholder of Moruka to see that this was carried out**, because in time this would become a den of thieves, and expose us to the danger of getting mixed up in a quarrel with our neighbours the Spaniards. *Same, pp. 131–132.*

1767. West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber).

The natural meaning of the expression "Essequibo and adjoined or subordinate rivers" is not that which the Zeeland Chief Participants attribute to it (namely, that all the places which are situate on the mainland of the so-called Wild Coast, between the boundaries which the Chief Participants themselves have . . . defined as **extending from Moruka to Mahaicony, or from Rio Berbice as far as the Orinoco**, are "adjoined, subordinate to, and inseparable from" the Colony Essequibo), but, on the contrary, only this, that under that description are comprehended the various mouths and rivers, originating from Rio Essequibo or emptying into it, which are marked on the map, such as, for instance, Cuyuni, Massaruni, Sepenouwy, and Magnouwe. *Same, p. 147.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—THAT MORUCA WAS A FRONTIER POST—(Continued).

1777. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

There lies . . . on the frontier and in the direction of Oronocque, **a Post in the creek of Morocco and Wacquepo.** *B. C., IV, 184-185.*

1777. Commandant at Fort Zeelandia.

The objection might be raised here that, when **a post** [in Moruca] of soldiers is stationed so **near to those Spanish frontiers,** it is more exposed to desertion of those soldiers; . . . But the condition and life of the Spanish troops having been wafted over from Rio Orinoco to this river, by the testimony of those who have heretofore deserted, the desire to desert thither seems to have greatly diminished. *Same, p. 186.*

1778. Manager of Plantations.

But the **Post** lies far **in** the **Marouca,** so that I, in a fast row boat with an awning, manned by twelve oarsmen, was obliged to travel full six hours from the mouth before I could reach it. Thus almost **two days elapse ere tidings of** the **desertion can come to the Postholder . . . so that the runaways,** who presumably made all speed, **could be long in the Spanish territorial jurisdiction** before the Postholder ls acquainted thereof. *Same, p. 194.*

1779. Venezuelan Case.

This reconnoissance . . . of 1779, . . . by . . . **Inciarte . . . examined** the whole coast region . . . far into **the Pomeroon; . . . The Dutch** Governor of Essequibo was informed of the presence of the Spaniards in the Pomeroon, and even of his intention to build a fort there; but he not only **made no** effort to arrest him, but reported the matter to the Company without so much as a **protest;** and no protest was made by that body to the Dutch government, or through it to that of Spain. *V. C., 146.*

1784. West India Company (the Ten).

In order that . . . no occasion be given to the Spaniards to have much communication with our negroes in the Colony, it would be well to make the rule that when such **Spaniards** have any negroes as aforesaid, they **must bring them to the Post at Moruca,** and there hand them over, in return for payment of the established price, to a person to be appointed therefor. *B. C., V, 25.*

1790. Report of Commissioners on Condition of Essequibo and Demerara.

It behooves us to say a word here of **the** so-called **Postholders.** These are employés of the Company who **dwell on the various frontiers** in order to foster the good understanding with the Indians. *Same, p. 81.*

1794. Governor-General in Essequibo.

We went on as far as the Creek of **Moruca,** which **up to now has been maintained to be the boundary** of our territory **with** that of **Spain,** upon what basis I do not know. It will be of the utmost necessity to define that boundary-line once for all. *Same, p. 147.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—PASSES REQUIRED AT MORUCA.

1701. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

April 18, [1701]. . . . there arrived . . . Pieter Faull, and Abraham Baudaart, requesting the Commandeur to issue a **pass to Orinoco** for Mr. Aarnout van Groenewegen, which was granted and delivered to them.

B. C.-C., App., 151.

1719. West India Company.

We understand it to be necessary and just that satisfaction be given the Governor of Orinoco, but that, one free planter having wronged him, the trade to Orinoco should therefore be forbidden to all others, cannot receive our approval; on the contrary, we charge you to **grant passes** to all others, withholding them from the offender or offenders until the necessary satisfaction has been given. *B. C., I, 252.*

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have . . . sent an **order to the** [Moruca] **Post to let no Spaniards pass** this way on any account whatever, except a single one who might be the bearer of letters from the Government. *B. C., II, 197.*

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

In the Commission given . . . to . . . Lopez I have seen that the corsair had alleged that the boat which he took at the mouth and even in the River Demerary had no passport—a very frivolous excuse and an ungrounded one, since **passports** are **never given to boats going** from one plantation to another, and which are going to board vessels **in the Colony itself,** and since this is only done for boats which go from one country or from one colony to another.

On the other hand, . . . **the Company's boat** from which he took the salt fish **at the mouth of the Wayni,** and which he afterwards smashed, and that of our colonist, Andries Heyse, which he pillaged, were both **provided with passports** in due form. *Same, p. 220.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.*

In all **passes** issued by me, I only grant permission **to pass the Posts** and to trade amongst the Indians, without mentioning any place. *B. C., III, 114.*

1766. Provisional Instruction for the Post of Moruca.

Every white who shall resort to the Orinoco not holding a licence from the Director-General, **shall be detained in the said post,** and sent to Essequibo, as well as all slaves, both Indians and Dutch negroes, and in case any Spanish craft should arrive there laden with produce, she shall be detained, and the said Deik shall embark in the said craft so detained, and shall proceed with her, not allowing anything to be sold before reaching the said Essequibo.

B. C.-C., App., 255.

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

He [**Moruka Postholder**] shall allow **no one to pass the Post without a passport.** *B. C., III, 154.*

He [**Moruka Postholder**] shall bear in mind that the **passports** issued shall be valid for one voyage only, as they are put to misuse. *Same, p. 155.*

* Note by editor of British Case. There is some reason to doubt the authenticity of this extract.

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—PASSES REQUIRED AT MORUCA—(Continued).

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

I had strictly forbidden Jan la Riviere to settle between Essequibo and Orinoco, and for greater security I had this inserted in his **pass**; he was also forbidden by the Court to settle in Barima. *B. C., III, 176.*

1770. Director-General in Essequibo.

Mr. Tullekin, having asked for a **permit to go to Maroco,** and having obtained the same, I now hear that he went farther and that he was arrested, and is now a prisoner in Orinocque. *V. C., II, 216.*

——, British Case.

Passports . . . often **contained conditions as to** the conduct of the holder in the **district beyond the Post.** *B. C., 87.*

1774. Director-General in Essequibo.

Both from English captains leaving the Essequibo (formerly the Colony) in their barques or vessels and from private individuals the Governor receives for a pass 7 guilders 10 st. and 5 guilders **for a permit to barter or trade in Indians ontside the Post,** which for some time was not observed, but in 1774 I again introduced or renewed it by reason of the necessity. *B. C., IV, 123.*

1778. Government Journal in Essequibo.

Gave to the Carib Owl named Awamerie, with his people, a **passport for Barima.** *Same, p. 189.*

1789. Journal kept in Essequibo.

December 7. A **passport** granted to the Indian Carwe to go to the coast of Essequibo, and **to pass the Post of Maroco.** *B. C., V, 73.*

1793. Journal kept in Essequibo.

Pass granted to the free Indian Frederik in order to **get,** in Pomeroon or **beyond the Post Maruca,** corials for "den Heraut" in exchange for other wares. *Same, p. 145.*

1796. Governor of Essequibo.

A pass is applied for . . . **for four Spaniards** . . . who recently arrived here with horned cattle **from Orinoco,** in order that they may return thither; . . . the Governor has issued the desired pass. *Same, p. 163.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—TOLLS AT MORUCA.

1707. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have likewise thought of submitting to you [W. I. Co.] whether it were not right necessary to **lay a toll on the traders from Berbice,** who traffic on the Orinoco for vessels, balsam, red slaves, and cocoa, in the Rivers Marocco and Pomeroon. *B. C., I, 229-230.*

1708. Commandeur in Essequibo.

As regards the (proposed) **tolls in Marocco and Pomeroon** . . . I will reply . . . that such could not be properly carried out, especially the expenses of doing it could not be repaid. *Same, p. 230.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—TOLLS AT MORUCA—(Continued).

1708. West India Company.

As for your proposal **to lay in the Rivers of Moruca and Pomeroon a toll** for the traders to Orinoco . . . we can as yet give no positive answer; . . . you would first have to inform us whether this can just now be properly and lawfully done. *B. C., I, 231.*

[As to] **laying a toll, in** the Rivers of **Moruca and Pomeroon,** (the Commandeur is directed to) . . . carefully inquire into the aforesaid matter, and inform us . . . what annual profit the Company might derive from imposing said tolls. *Same, pp. 231–232.*

As . . . to the laying of a toll upon the boats, copaiba, &c., for the dealers from Berbice who trade to Orinoco, . . . we, . . . hereby instruct you to . . . collect a poll-tax there, . . . from every white person and also from every slave at present in Essequibo, and who shall in future arrive in that Colony. *Same, p. 232.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

He [**Postholder at Moruka**] **shall demand from the Spaniards** coming there with tobacco, &c., 5 per cent. **import duty** and forward the same here. *B. C., III, 155.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—BOUNDARIES ON THE CUYUNI.

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

On the 7th of this month [March 1746] one Ignatius Courthial made an **application** to the Court for permission **to cut a road** through the wood **in** the River **Cuynni,** in order to bring mules and cows into the river overland by that road. . . . **permission** was **granted** him **on condition that there shall be paid** to the Company 3 guilders **recognition money** for every mule, and 2 guilders for every horse or cow, . . . it is my intention to place the Post which lies in Demerary . . . on this road instead. *B. C., II, 44.*

1746. West India Company.

We can approve the resolution taken by you and the Court of Policy regarding the request made by Ignatius Couthial [Courthial], and the further measures taken by you in that regard, for the prevention of all fraud in not rightly **declaring the animals to be brought from** the River **Cuynni.** *Same, p. 44.*

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

The common rumour was that **one of our colonists had been near by there** [**the mission destroyed by the Caribs and Panacays**] and . . . I caused him to be apprehended and brought to the fort. Because **such a matter** would be of consequence, and **would afford the Spaniards real and well-founded reasons for complaint,** I have always taken punctilious care therefor. *Same, p. 96.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

If the **Spaniards** remain **in possession of Cuyuni** . . . there will be no safety at all in this Colony. . . . The Spaniards continue to stay where they are, and to entrap and drive away all the Caribs living there. *Same, p. 175.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE DUTCH—BOUNDARIES ON THE CUYUNI—(Continued).

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

It is certain . . . that this is not the time to think of the re-establishment of the Post **in Cuyuni.** That matter will give us plenty of work to do when . . . all is at rest and in peace, because **the Spaniards, having driven all the Indians out** of the river, it will be no small matter to get all the necessary buildings in readiness there. *B. C., II, 228.*

1769. Remonstrance of the States-General.

The establishment of **two Spanish Missions,** occupied by a strong force, one not far **above the Company's** said **Post in Cuyuni (apparently,** however, **on Spanish territory),** and the other a little higher up on a creek which flows into the aforesaid Cuyuni River. *B. C., IV, 30.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES ON THE COAST.

1802. Commandant of Berbice, Demerary and Essequibo.

Essequibo is a particular district of the Government of Demerary. A small creek, . . . the Borassirie, . . . forms its eastern boundary.

The west sea-coast, called **the "Arabian Coast,"** is now . . . almost entirely settled. It is **bounded by the River Pomaroon, at the entrance of which is the** furthest military post, called the **Post of Morroceo.**

The foregoing lines are descriptive of the whole extent of that part of the coast of Guayana situated **between** the River **Corantyn and** the **Pomaroon,** and within which **are included the Colonies of Berbice, Demerary, and Essequibo.** *B. C., V, 172.*

1806. George Pinckard.

It is suggested that we may obtain a supply (of provisions) from **the Spaniards,** who have great numbers of wild cattle . . . **upon the neighboring coast of Oronoko.** *V. C.-C., III, 224-225.*

A party of Spaniards crossed the River Oronoko in the night of the 19th inst. [February, 1797], and made an attack upon our outpost at **Moroko, the remotest point of the Colony of Essequibo,** . . . but . . . they were defeated. *Same, p. 227.*

1834. T. S. St. Clair.

The colony of Demerera . . . is bounded on the east by the Albany creek. . . . The western limits are marked by the small creek Bonnosique, a distance of twenty miles up the great river Essequibo; formerly the Bossicay creek was the western boundary, but by an act passed by Governor Bentinck, in 1806, it was extended to the present limits.

The colony of Essequibo adjoins to Demerara, being under the same governor, and is our most leeward possession in this country. **The** creek or river, called **Moroeco, is the boundary line between this colony and the Spanish Main,** which is not far from the Pomeroon creek. *Same, pp. 234-235.*

1838. Venezuelan Case.

Governor Light in . . . 1838, wrote:

The Pomaroon River, at the western extremity of Essequibo, **may be taken as a limit to the country.** *V. C., 167.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES ON THE COAST—(Continued).

1838. Venezuelan Case.

Speaking of the region "**between the Pomeroon and the Orinoco**" he says of it that it is a "coast of 100 miles . . . **unoccupied by any person or under any authority.**" *V. C., 167.*

1838. Governor Light.

The Pomaroon River, at the western extremity of Essequibo, **may be taken as a limit to the country,** though there is a mission supported by the colony on the Maracca river or creek, a short distance westward, where 500 Spanish Indians are collected in a settlement under a Roman-catholic priest, recommended from Trinidad for that purpose. *V. C.-C., III, 177.*

1839. Wm. Crichton, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

. . . The **left bank of** the **Barima, where the Government has never claimed jurisdiction.** *B. C., VI, 71.*

The district in question [**Barima-Waini region**] contains a numerous population of Indians, viz., Warrows, Accaways, Carribesee, and Arrawaks, the former the most numerous, and in the humble opinion of your reporter, **it would be good policy to secure the absolute possession of it to this Colony.**

Same, p. 76.

The . . . case of the Indian, Pero Mauvel, . . . point(s) out the necessity of concluding an arrangement with the Republic of Columbia, respecting the western boundary-line of this Colony, which . . . should include the mouth of the Barima River, and all its tributary creeks from the sea to the Cayoni River.

The internal communication by water which commences with the Tapacooma is entirely cut off by the Barima River, and commences again with the Amacoora Creek to the Orinoco, thus marking the natural boundary of the province between the Barima and Amacoora.

If the right bank of the **Barima** River **were taken as the boundary,** and all the extensive creeks which enter that stream on its left bank remain subject to the Columbian State, this Colony would be subjected to the danger of having all the runaways from either Government congregating on that fertile region without the right of control, and it is too distant from the seat of the Columbian Government for its influence to be otherwise than only partially felt, especially as the aborigines look to this Colony for protection.

If the Wyena were selected as the boundary-line, the evil would be greatly increased by leaving a wider field of operation unoccupied. *Same, pp. 76–77.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

Taking . . . the mouth of **the** River **Barima** as the place of departure, **the line** of demarcation **ought to** be **directed to the mouth of the** River **Amacura, in order to** be able to **insure the political importance** which always would be attached to the mouth of the Orinoco; . . . from thence to the mouth of . . . the . . . Caño Cuyuni, and following the latter to its sources, British Guiana secures the command of the easy water communication.

B. C., VII, 5.

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES ON THE COAST—(Continued).

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

A Warrau Chieftain . . . came with part of his men, and appeared **rejoiced that at last it should be decided whether the Waini was** in the **British or** in the **Venezuelan** territory. *B. C., VII, 11.*

I thought it advisable to claim the eastern or right bank of the River **Amacura.** . . . The . . . post at the mouth of the Barima was planted. . . . This point in the possession of Great Britain is of great value in a military respect. *Same, p. 13.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk—confidential letter of.

I have now to point out the **importance** which is **attached to this position, should the British Government establish the Amacura as the boundary** between British Guiana and Venezuela. *Same, p. 33.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Barima, a point **of more importance** to Great Britain **than I** have **ventured to make it appear** in my memorial. *Same, p. 34.*

1841. Earl of Aberdeen.

Mr. **Schomburgk** . . . was fully aware that the **demarcation** so made was **merely a preliminary measure open to** future **discussion** between the Governments of Great Britain and Venezuela. *Same, p. 74.*

The **proceeding of** Mr. **Schomburgk** . . . was **merely** a **preliminary** measure **open to** future **discussion** between the two Governments, . . . and not . . . indications of dominion and empire on the part of Great Britain. . . . And . . . **the British** authorities **have not occupied Point Barima.** *Same, p. 79.*

1841. Governor Light.

Mr. **Schomburgk's mission was one purely of Survey.** *V. C., III, 197.*

I trust this explanation will be satisfactory to your Excellency; neither the Government of Venezuela nor of Great Britain having hitherto occupied the **Barima,** and that point marking **the boundary claimed by the British Government,** it will be prudent not to attempt an occupation which would complicate negotiation and might lead to unpleasant discussion.

Since the occupation of the Barima by the Dutch . . . the territory within that river has been inhabited by the aborigines alone. *Same, p. 198.*

1842. British Counter Case.

Lord Aberdeen consented to order the **removal of the posts** purely as an act of international comity. *B. C.-C., 128.*

1844. Earl of Aberdeen.

As a most valuable concession to Venezuela, **Her Majesty's Government are willing to waive their claim to the Amacura** . . . **and** to **consider the month of the Moroco River as the limit** of her Majesty's possessions on the sea-coast. . . . upon the condition . . . that no portion of it shall be alienated at any time to a foreign Power, and that the Indian tribes now residing within it shall be protected against all injury and oppression. *B. C., VII, 90.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES ON THE COAST—(Continued).

1844. Earl of Aberdeen.

This [Trinity] parish is from Capouie Creek **to Pomeroon, and as far as the British settlements extend.** *V. C., III, 145.*

1862. Sir W. H. Holmes.

Anthony Trollope, who visited the Colony in 1860, [says]. . . . And **lastly of our own rivers, the Guiana (or Whynee)**, though I doubt whether, for absolute purposes of colonization, we have ever gone so far as this. **And beyond that . . . the Orinoco. On its shores we make no claim.** Though **the Delta of the Orinoco** is still called Guiana, it **belongs** to the Republic of **Venezuela.** *V. C.-C., III, 246.*

1871. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Pomeroon.

This tract of land, situated on the **left bank of Marucca,** . . . is nothing more or less than a swampy jungle, . . . with only from fifty to sixty persons living in it; these persons are Spanish Arowacks, the descendants of the Spaniards who . . . in 1821–22 abandoned . . . the Oronoko to seek protection under British rule, . . . the high lands in question were made over to the Spaniards with a promise of protection, which they have enjoyed for near fifty years, and now most urgently beseech that the same may again be extended to them, as **since British jurisdiction has been withdrawn** murders, violent cases of assaults, thefts, &c., have become frequent. *B. C., VI, 211.*

The left bank of Morucca being a swampy jungle, and . . . utterly valueless . . . a question of some importance is . . . that **in the case the Venezuelans prove** to the satisfaction of the English Government **their rights to the left bank of Marucca,** valueless though it be, **would it be wise to let them have it,** or would it not be better to purchase their right. To the Venezuelan Government this swampy jungle can be of no value, whereas to this Colony the occupation of Marucca, . . . is paramount.

In case the Spanish obtained a footing in Marucca . . . rum and other spirits would be introduced from the Oronoko in large quantities. Retail spirit shops would be established at the mouth of Marucca and at other places, which would interfere very materially with the revenue. *Same, pp. 211–212.*

1875. Governor Longden.

The Amacura River . . . was . . . proposed by Sir Robert **Schomburgk** for adoption **as the boundary line . . . but . . . never accepted,** and the frontier is still undetermined, the limit of the ancient Dutch Colony being claimed by Great Britain as the boundaries of the present Colony.

Same, p. 214.

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

The territory in dispute commences on the western bank of the Essequibo River, and **extends to an undefined distance toward the Orinoco.**

V. C., III, 150.

This post on the Amacura. . . . Its very existence is doubtful, for it is not shown anywhere but in Bouchenroeder's chart. . . . But there is yet stronger evidence . . . that the Dutch at the close of the 18th century did not consider that their territory extended so far toward the Orinoco. Pinckard, whose writings should have authority, . . . distinctly says . . . that the

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES ON THE COAST—(Continued).

most northern outpost of the Dutch Colonies at the time of their first capture by the English was on the Morooca. The *ancien post Hollandais*, marked in Bouchenroeder's map, is very possibly one of the posts established by the first Dutch who came to Guiana about the end of the 16th century, when, according to tradition, they tried to settle on the Orinoco before finally taking up their position on the Pomeroon and Essequibo. . . . **Schomburgk's claim,** based upon the supposed existence of this Dutch Post, **to** make the **Amacura** serve as part of the western boundary of British Guiana, **seems untenable.** At any rate, **it never was and never could be admitted by the Venezuelans.**

A boundary treaty based on the survey by Schomburgk was promised in 1841 by the British Government, but, as was to be expected, it was not accepted by the Venezuelan authorities. *V. C., III, 152–153.*

1881. Lord Granville.

Her Majesty's Government are **unable to accept** the mouth of the **Moroco as the boundary** on the coast; **they would nevertheless** be ready to **consider** any conventional boundary which the Venezuelan Government may propose commencing at **a more northerly point on the coast.** *Same, p. 220.*

1886. Earl of Rosebery.

Her Majesty's Government attach especial importance to the possession by British Guiana of the mouth of the River **Waini, and** they desire, therefore, to stipulate that **the line should start** from the sea-coast **westwards of that point,** due compensation being found in some other portion of the disputed territory for this departure from the basis of an equal division. *B. C., VII, 116.*

I have now to instruct you to address a note to the Venezuelan Government informing them that . . . **Her Majesty's Government cannot . . . allow their rights in the territory . . . to remain any longer in suspense: and** that it is their intention, . . . at once to **define the boundary** . . . as follows:

The initial point **to be** fixed at a spot on the sea-shore **29 miles . . . east** from the right bank **of** the River **Barima** and to be carried thence south over . . . Yarakita Hill.

This line is identical with that which was suggested in **Lord Granville's** note to the Señor de Rojas of the 15th September, 1881. *V. C., III, 160.*

1887. E. F. im Thurn.

I was more than ever convinced of the **desirability . . . of maintaining** what is known as **Schomburgk's** boundary-**line, at least as far as the Amacura** is concerned, and I was also much impressed by the excellence of the opportunity now offered us of securing permanent recognition of that line **by a little firm but quiet demonstration.** *B. C., VI, 239.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES IN THE INTERIOR.

1781. Capt. Edward Thompson, R. N.

I . . . enclose you the Capitulations of the Dutch subjects of the **Colonies on the Rivers** of Berbice, Demerara, and **Essequibo.** . . . Berbice is inhabited 100 miles up, and hath 100 plantations, . . . Demerara is divided into

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES IN THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

plantations on both sides the river 160 miles inland, . . . **The Bay of Essequibo,** which **receives three large rivers that penetrate into Spanish America** . . . contains seventy plantations, which extend from Demerara to Fort Zelandia, . . . and from that parallel on the west coast as low as the River **Pomeroon,** besides the Islands Liguana, Wackingham, &c. *B. C., V, 1.*

1808. Court of Policy.

1. **Postholder Wahl wishes to change the Post** and bring the same **to a certain hill,** from **where he can oversee the three mouths of the rivers** Essequibo, Cajoeny, and Massaroeny.

4. He thinks it necessary that all persons, white, colored people, or Indians, in going up or coming down the river, should be obliged and ordered to stop at the Post and present their passes.

6. That he also requests some authority be given him over the colored people and over the Indians, to keep them in good order, as they are so distant from the seat of Government.

The Court did further resolve;

1. That leave be granted to the Postholder Wahl to change the Post.

4. That **all persons,** whether whites, colored people, or Indians, or others, in **going up or coming down the river, shall** stop at the Post, and report the errand they go upon; also those whom this concerns, **exhibit their passes to the Postholder.** *B. C.-C., App., 265.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

I had understood from some Indians who were well acquainted with the Cuyuni that there had once been a Dutch Post at an island called **Tokoro,** which was much **farther to the west than** that part of the Cuyuni **where . . . I** had . . . **previously . . . considered the boundary line ought to cross to the River Cuyuni.** *B. C., VII, 22.*

1857. Lieutenant-Governor Walker.

The boundary claimed by Great Britain, however, according to the same authority [Schomburgk], **crosses the River Cayuni in longitude 60° 20′,** or thereabouts, [**First Schomburgk Line**]. *B. C., VI, 205.*

You will return with them by . . . the **Cayuni River,** and you will take every opportunity of examining the country in its neighborhood, especially after you pass the **longitude of 60° 15′,** which the progress of the expedition will permit, the great object of your employment being to ascertain the probability of the existence of gold fields **within the British possessions.** *Same, p. 207.*

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

In 1857 certain English expeditions were, indeed, sent to **Tupuquen,** but their sole result was a tardy **acknowledgment from the English** that the mines of that place were **not in British territory.**

Tupuquen undoubtedly lies **very far on the Venezuelan side of the boundary** as claimed by the English and as laid down by Sir Robert Schomburgk. Had we, therefore, claimed the mines at that place, it would have been most unwise and unwarrantable. *V. C., III, 151.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BOUNDARIES IN THE INTERIOR—(Continued).

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

Schombnrgk . . . **traces the** western **limit** . . . along certain natural features, **which,** unsatisfactory as they are for the purpose, **seemed** to him **the best available.** *V. C., III, 152.*

The **old Dutch outpost on the Cuyuni** River . . . **Up to this point there is no reason why the British Government should not accept Codazzi's line,** which is based both on history and natural features. *Same, p. 153.*

Some time before 1863, gold was discovered on the Cuyuni at a point but two days' journey from the mouth of that river . . . the British Guiana Gold Mining Company was formed to work these fields. Buildings and machinery were erected on the spot and some gold was extracted. . . . The Venezuelan Government appealed to the British Government, which . . . issued a proclamation to the English gold miners that they were working as adventurers in disputed territory and that they were to expect no protection from the British Government. . . . The mines . . . were so near our Penal Settlement that to allow the uncertainty of the English claim to the gold field was virtually to allow **the uncertainty of our claim to the Penal Settlement.** *Same, p. 154.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—CUSTOMS COLLECTED IN MORUCA.

1841. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

A Custom-house officer . . . ought to be sent down to this [Pomeroon] district, as these **traders** [**Oronoko**] bring many articles into the country which are liable to **pay duty,** but which they dispose of readily in the Pomeroon and Essequibo coast. *B. C., VI, 114.*

1843. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

I . . . learned that it was likely two or three **Oronoko traders** would be **in Morocco** . . . I will . . . lay before the Collector of Customs a statement of the amount of **duties received** from the Spanish traders, part of which is in cigars.

Another **Oronoko trader** arrived; cargo, black-eye peas and cigars, **duty paid in money.** . . . Went to **Morocco Creek** to overhaul a sloop from the Oronoko; cargo, forty 150 lb. bags blackeye peas, ten full-grown hogs, and ten young ditto. The owner of the vessel, who was on board, not having money to **pay the duties,** produced documents which proved that he was regularly cleared out at Angostura for Demerara, consequently allowed him to pass.

Same, p. 127.

Was visited by Jose Rodinze, **Postholder of Corioppo,** a village in Rio Oronoko. . . . After **paying duty** on his cargo, which consisted of salted fish, cigars and dried meat, proceeded on his way to town.

Received information of the arrival of a **cargo of** salted **fish in Morocco from the Oronoko.** Proceeded . . . to where the fish was housed. Found 500 pounds. The **duty** was **paid in money.** *Same, p. 128.*

1844. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

During this quarter there have been **twenty-three arrivals from** the **Oronoko.** These cargoes consisted principally of salted fish. There were also a few M. cigars, some dried meat, and three head of cattle.

The **amount of duty,** King's and Colonial, is **187 dollars.** *Same, p. 129.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—CUSTOMS COLLECTED IN MORUCA —(Continued).

1844. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

During this quarter only four Spanish boats have come from the Oronoko. The dullness of the trade is caused by the great scarcity of fish.

The amount of **duty received from the Oronoko traders** this quarter is trivial on account of the scarcity already described. *B. C., VI, 131.*

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Posthouse has been undergoing repairs. . . . which prevented the possibility of attending as strictly as was necessary to the numerous **Spanish traders** that came up **from** the **Oronoko** in large canoes laden with fish and other articles, on which there is **duty** to be **collected.** Formerly . . . the Oronoko duties amounted in one year to a sum bordering on 500 dollars; but since that period, now upwards of twelve months, the collections have been very inconsiderable. *Same, p. 140.*

1847. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Received information, that . . . several **Spanish traders** were expected, but . . . could not remain . . . in the creek; consequently, all those who had cigars sold almost all they brought up to the inhabitants of **Morocco.** To try and prevent a recurrence of this kind it will be requisite [to] . . . erect a house in the upper part of Morocco Creek, . . . on a spot by which all corials, &c., would be compelled to pass. Unless a precaution similar to what he has proposed be established, it is totally out of his power . . . **to collect duties** from the Oronoko traders. *Same, p. 149.*

1849. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

All **Spaniards** who **trade to the Colony** in coreals, canoes, and sometimes small sloop boats, are **obliged** . . . **to pass through Morocco Creek** . . . and **from whom,** according to a special order of Sir Henry Light, I am compelled **to receive duties.** *Same, p. 174.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BARIMA LIGHTHOUSE.

1836. Sir Robert Porter.

It becomes my official duty to represent . . . the . . . necessity . . . of placing a conspicuous **beacon on Cape Barima.** *B. C., VII, 82.*

I . . . **request you** will inform me (**for the information of my own Government**) whether anything has yet been actually done as to erecting the **lighthouse** or beacon which I pointed out to the Government . . . as absolutely necessary. *Same, p. 84.*

1836. Senor Gallegos.

The Department of Finance will give suitable orders to carry out this undertaking [**Barima Light**]. *Same, p. 84.*

1836. Vice-Consul Hamilton at Angostura.

The loss of the "Coriolanus" is another proof of the abandonment to which the important navigation of the Orinoco is left, and of the inattention of Government to a matter seriously involving the interests of the country.

Same, p. 84.

A beacon could be easily erected **on** the point of **Cape Barima.**

Same, p. 85.

ADMISSIONS BY THE BRITISH—BARIMA LIGHTHOUSE—(Continued).

1842. Daniel F. O'Leary, British consul at Caracas.

It does not appear that Sir Robert Porter ever informed your Department that he had written to the Venezuelan Government on the subject [of **Barima Light**]. *B. C., VII, 84.*

I forward to you . . . letters of Mr. Hamilton to Sir Robert K. Porter. Upon these letters it was that Sir Robert founded the request he made to the Venezuelan Government to cause a **lighthouse** to be constructed **at Barima.** *Same, p. 85.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **request** . . . made by Sir Robert Ker Porter [in 1836 **for Barima Light**] . . . was made without the authority and **without the knowledge of Her Majesty's Government.** It was not acted on by the Venezuelan Government, nor was the fact of its having been made communicated to the British Foreign Office. *B. C.-C., 127.*

1886. F. R. St. John.

The erection of a lighthouse [**at Barima**] would still constitute **a violation of disputed grounds.** *B. C., VII, 117.*

1887. Earl of Iddesleigh.

An attempt **to erect such a lighthouse** . . . would be **a departure from the reciprocal engagement** taken by the Governments of Venezuela and England **in 1850** not to occupy or encroach upon the territory in dispute between the two countries. *Same, p. 118.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE VENEZUELANS.

——. British Case.

The Government of **Venezuela has,** however, **on occasion, modified its pretensions** as regards the district immediately to the west of the estuary of the Essequibo, **and claimed only** that the boundary should run from the neighbourhood of **the mouth of the Moruka** southwards to the Cuyuni, near its junction with the Massaruni, and then as stated above. *B. C., 6-7.*

1833. Quarterly Return of Pomeroon Post.

A colored Spaniard [**Venezuelan**] called **on his way up the** [**Pomeroon**] river. **Exhibited his pass from Angostura.** *B. C., VI, 51.*

1840. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

September 24.—Started from Dunbarton Castle for the **Morocco.**

September 25.—**Proceeded** up the creek and stopped at the Spanish Indian's, Calixtro, . . . and then went **as far as the Mission.** . . . **Met here** Francisca Rodriques, **the Postholder of the Oronocco, who requested a pass to proceed to Georgetown.** *Same, p. 96.*

1840. Juan Pirel.

The Commander of the [**Venezuelan**] **gun-boat is of opinion that Mora Creek is the line** between the Venezuelan territory, and that little further is belonging to the British. *Same, p. 99.*

ADMISSIONS BY THE VENEZUELANS—(Continued).

1841. Instructions to Senor Fortique.

Although Venezuela's rights in Guayana extended to the banks of the Essequibo . . . this Government being anxious to remove all obstacles to a speedy adjustment, is not disposed to insist upon its rights to that extent, it being manifest that England will not agree to surrender her establishments on the Pumaron and Moroco rivers. **You may**, therefore, **direct** the course of **your negotiations** accordingly, making gradual concessions **until** an agreement can be had on the following line of boundary between Venezuela and British Guiana, viz.: **The Moroco from its mouth** to its headwaters in the Imataca mountains; thence southward . . . to Tupuro creek; thence . . . to the Cuyuni river; thence . . . to its confluence with the Essequibo; and thence southward along the left bank of the Essequibo to its confluence with the Rupuruni.

V. C., III, 425.

1881. Senor de Rojas.

My Government will accept the point of departure on the coast at **a mile** to **the north of** the mouth of **the Moroco.** . . . A meridian of latitude [*sic*] to be drawn at that point westward to the point where this line crosses the longitude of 60° from Greenwich and thence . . . southward. *B. C., VII, 98.*

1884. Michael McTurk.

Juan Jose Totasan, **a Venezuelan Magistrate,** . . . had come for the purpose of serving notices . . . to the residents on the Waini, Barima, Mora Guana, and Amacura Rivers, and to fix them on the trees. I explained to him . . . that I should destroy any [such] notices. I also **pointed out to him . . . Mr. Fitzgerald's words . . . that** "about ten miles to the south-west of Barima Point is the entrance to **the Amacura River,** which **in 1800 formed the boundary** between British Guiana and Venezuela." I told him I was not aware that the boundary had been altered since 1800, and asked if he was; he said he was not. **He then told me he did not intend going any further.**

B. C., VI, 230–231.

1897. Cyriac, a Warow Indian.

I live . . . in Barima. . . . **The Venezuelans** bringing morocot fish **from** above the Amacura, in **the Orinoco, used to pay duty to Mr. McClintock.** I have been present when the money was paid. *B. C., VII, 231.*

IGNORANCE AS TO BOUNDARIES—BY THE SPANISH.

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

These circumstances deserve consideration, chiefly because the Dutch on the mainland are so near to the principal mouth of the Orinoco in three colonies called Surinam, Bervice and Essequibo, with large populations and fortifications, and are gradually approaching nearer; and the Governors who have previously been in Guayana have not prevented it, **nor is there any knowledge of the boundaries** that are to be kept, nor orders, nor forces to hold them under control which will in time cause irreparable damage. *B. C.-C., App., 181.*

1758. Military Commandant in Essequibo.

It seems to him [Director-General in Essequibo] according to the letter in question, that **in Guayana** and at Cumaná **there is ignorance of the boundaries** of the territory of His Catholic Majesty, and those of the States-General.

B. C., II, 173.

IGNORANCE AS TO BOUNDARIES—BY THE SPANISH—(Continued).

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The boundaries of the Province **of Guayana** . . . **are unknown** . . . in respect of what it contains **in its centre.** *B. C., III, 61.*

1779. Don Jose de Abalos.

The want of the Treaties of Peace for my instruction and **accurate knowledge of** what has been agreed upon with the States-General respecting the settlements of Surinam and Essequibo, and **how far their frontiers extend.**

B. C., IV, 210.

Be good enough to **inform me what we have agreed upon** with the Dutch and French, **in order that I may neither overpass the boundaries** or fail in what is desirable. *Same, p. 211.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

The proper **knowledge will be acquired** of the extent and character of these lands, and **of the true boundaries** which separate them from the foreign possessions. *B. C., V, 66.*

IGNORANCE AS TO BOUNDARIES—BY THE DUTCH.

1712. [1897] George L. Burr.

The earliest mention I have anywhere found in Dutch records of a boundary between the Dutch and the Spanish possessions in Guiana is that in 1712 by the Lord of Sommelsdijk, head of the great Dutch family which was one-third owner of the colony of Surinam, . . . **where Mr. Van Sommelsdijk and his colleagues would have wished the frontier set does not appear.**

V. C.-C., II, 181–182.

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I feel not the least diffidence as to dislodging them from that place and capturing those forts, but such a step being one of great consequence, I dare not take anything upon myself, especially as **the proper frontier-line** there **is unknown to me.** *B. C., II, 45.*

1746. West India Company.

Inasmuch **as you are** as yet **in uncertainty about** this matter [of **boundaries**] we are of opinion [etc.]. *Same, p. 46.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have had the honour to inform your Honours . . . of a Mission erected with a little fort by the Spaniards up in the Cuyuni, in my opinion on your Honours' territory, . . . to make fortifications in our own land is in breach of all custom. I say upon our own land—I cannot lay this down, however, with full certainty because **the limits west of this river are unknown to me.**

Same, pp. 46–47.

1747. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I should already long ago have removed and demolished the first fort up in Cuyuni . . . **if I were but rightly conscious how far the limits of your Honours' territory extend**, both on the eastern and northern sides, as well as south and westwards, for the decision whereof not the least help is to be got in this office. *Same, p. 49.*

IGNORANCE AS TO BOUNDARIES—BY THE DUTCH—(Continued).

1747. West India Company (the Ten).

We have requested all the Chambers to inquire, each on its own account, **whether it is possible to find out how far the limits** of the Company in Rio Essequibo do **extend.** *B. C., II, 51.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I wish, however, that if it were possible, **I might know the proper boundaries.** According to the testimony of old men and of the Indians, this jurisdiction should begin on the east at the Creek Abary, and extend westwards as far as the River Barima, where in old times a Post existed; but these sayings give not the slightest certainty. *Same, p. 58.*

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

It is ncessary that the limits of the Company's territory should be known, in order successfully to oppose the continual approach of the neighbouring Spaniards. Because **the limits are unknown,** we dare not openly oppose them. *Same, p. 67.*

1750. Report of Committee on Commandeur's Report.

The determining of the limits being **an object of** His Highness' **attention,** to whom in this connection a certain small map, mentioned in the Commandeur's Memorial, had been handed by him, the Committee was of opinion that his advice thereon should be awaited. *Same, p. 68.*

1750. Acting Commandeur in Essequibo.

The last Mission which is being constructed is in a certain little river called Imataca, situated far off in Orinoco, and which (in my opinion) is directly far outside the concern of this Colony.

And **concerning that [Mission]** which are said to have been constructed up **in** the River **Cuyuni, I am instructed that they are** very much **nearer** to the side of **the Spanish than to our territory.** *Same, p. 69.*

1754. Court of Policy.

I . . . await . . . your Honours' **orders respecting the so long sought definition of frontier** so that I may go to work with certainty. *Same, p. 93.*

1755. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We would we were able to give you an exact and precise definition of the real limits of the river of Essequibo, such as you have several times asked of us; but **we greatly doubt whether any** precise and accurate definition **can** anywhere **be found. . . . Neither in the Treaty of Munster,** (concerning which you gave us your own opinions), **nor in any other is there to our knowledge anything to be found about this [limit of the Colony].**

For which . . . reasons . . . **one ought to proceed with all circumspection in defining the Company's territory,** and in disputing about its jurisdiction.

Still, . . . we have . . . thought it our duty in the present case, and in our uncertainty . . . to make certain needed provisions. *Same, p. 102.*

IGNORANCE AS TO BOUNDARIES—BY THE DUTCH—(Continued).

1758. Stephen Hiz, Postholder in Cuyuni.

Asked if he was aware whether those places where he was posted [**in Cuynni**] **belonged to the jurisdiction of Essequibo,** and what length of time this post had been maintained, **he answered that he did not know** whether it be or not in the jurisdiction of Essequibo, but that the post had been maintained in that place for many years. *B. C., II, 166.*

1758. Juan Bautista Brum.

Asked if he knew that place [**Dutch Cuynni Post**] **to be in the jurisdiction of Essequibo,** and what length of time his Governor had maintained a guard there, **he answered that he did not know,** but that the guard had been maintained for many years. *Same, pp. 167–168.*

1759. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We should like . . . to be exactly informed where **the** aforesaid **Post on** the River of **Cuyuni,** was situated; for in the latest map made by you of the Colony we have found, indeed, that river, but have not yet succeeded in finding the Post itself. Furthermore, **what grounds you might** be able to **give us to** further **support our right to the** possession of the aforesaid **Post.** . . . We should also like to have a more specific description of the Map of America by M. d'Anville, to which you appeal; for that gentleman has issued many maps dealing with that continent, and in none of these which have come to our notice have we been able to discover any traces of what you mention. *Same, p. 174.*

1794. Governor-General in Essequibo.

We went on as far as the Creek of **Moruca,** which **up to now has been maintained to be the boundary of our territory** with that of Spain, **upon what basis I do not know.** It will be **of the utmost necessity to define that boundary-line once for all.** *B. C., V, 147.*

IGNORANCE AS TO BOUNDARIES—BY THE BRITISH.

1836. Instructions given Schomburgk by the Royal Geographical Society.

The expedition is to have two distinct objects, viz.—first, thoroughly to **investigate** the physical and astronomical **geography of** the **interior** of British Guiana, **and,** secondly, to **connect the positions** thus ascertained **with those of** Mr. **Humboldt** on the Upper Orinoco. *V. C.-C., III, 242.*

1850. Governor Barkly.

This Colony, where rivers of equal **magnitude yet remain to be explored.** *B. C., VI, 184.*

1857. Lieutenant-Governor, Demerara.

As . . . Point Barima . . . is at the entrance of the only channel of the Orinoco navigable by vessels of any great burthen, it is obviously desirable that all doubt should be removed as to its rightful possession.

I have been as yet **unable to trace any memorandum of the data upon which** Sir Robert **Schomburgk based his survey,** but no doubt such exists in the archives of the Colonial Office. In Bouchenroeder's Map . . . it is distinctly laid down that a Dutch Post existed on the right bank of the River Barima, thus indicating that stream as the natural and actual boundary in that locality. *Same, p. 204.*

IGNORANCE AS TO BOUNDARIES—BY THE BRITISH—(Continued).

1896. George L. Burr.

I have this morning again studied most carefully with glass and with naked eye the **final map**—the so-called "Physical Map" . . . **of Schomburgk, of 1844.** There is surely **on it no suggestion of boundary** anywhere and I cannot believe there ever has been. *V. C.-C., III, 303.*

BOUNDARIES AS INFERRED FROM DESIGNATIONS USED.

——. British Case.

The Venezuelan contention is that the boundary of British Guiana **must be drawn along the** west bank of the estuary of the **Essequibo** from the sea **to** the junction of **the Cuyuni** with the Essequibo, **thence along the** east bank of the **Essequibo to** a point in the neighborhood of its confluence with **the Rupununi**, thence following the watershed, between the Essequibo and the Berbice and Corentin, till it meets the frontier of Brazil. *B. C., 6.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **dominions of the Spaniards ceased above** the **Amakuru.** *B. C.-C., 69.*

1637. Jacques Ousiel.

The Governor set forth that immediately after the conquest of Tobago he had also resolved to carry his victorious arms against **Essequibo, a fort lying in his province of Guayana.** *B. C., I, 86.*

1656. Conditions for colonists.

The Directors of the Zeeland Chamber of the Chartered West India Company . . . having . . . found that **not only the islands** lying **within their province, but also the mainland coasts,** and **especially the Wild Coast** . . . are of such situation and soil that everything **can be cultivated.**

Same, p. 137.

1734. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Five [horses] which could not be got into the canoes, had remained in the Orinoco, and the other thirteen he had been **compelled to leave at an Indian village between the Orinoco and the Post of Wacquepo.** *B. C., II, 17.*

1735. West India Company.

We have decided hereby to give you [Commandeur in Essequibo] express orders that, . . . you . . . forbid each and every one . . . to take any hand-arms or material of war **from the river to Orinoco,** or to any other places not under the jurisdiction of the States-General, . . . and, if any one be found to do it a second time, that he be banished from the river all the days of his life.

We order that you henceforth cause to be examined all boats leaving **the river** which excite the least suspicion.

Considering that, perhaps, a way might be found for exporting arms **from the Colony without using the river,** you must also provide against this as much as possible; . . . we hereby authorize and order you to exercise strict supervision over all the ships which come into **the river.**

In case . . . anybody should undertake to export slaves **from the river** we order you to forcibly prevent this. *B. C., II, 19–20.*

BOUNDARIES AS INFERRED FROM DESIGNATIONS USED—(Continued).

1747. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Two of our rovers, . . . have been murdered in the Upper Essequibo by the Indians. . . . The loss of those people would not be a matter of very great concern were it not that . . . I fear that those tribes between the Amazon and **this river**, . . . being extremely embittered, and fearing that vengeance will be taken for this murder, may perhaps raid our highest-lying plantations, . . . I have long foretold such a thing, and on that account have desired to close the **River of Essequibo,** but have met with much opposition on account of the profit which some draw from there through the Slave Trade. *B. C., II, 52.*

1747. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

By these channels, without entering the sea, one can navigate with small vessels to the blockhouse called **the Post**, which the Dutch of Essequibo maintain with three men and two small cannon, **16 leagues from the Colony towards the Great Ships' Mouth.** And it is by this way that the Dutch make their voyages when they are returning from the Orinoco in small vessels. *Same, p. 53.*

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

You will carefully note . . . the distance to the territory occupied by the **foreigners of the coast**; . . . the opportunities and facilities the foreigners possess of penetrating to the interior. *Same, p. 85.*

To dislodge the **foreigners on the coast of** the Province of **Guayana.** *Same, p. 86.*

1755. Eugenio de Alvarado.

The forests which run from north to south, and separate the Province of Guiana from **the Dutch settlements.** *Same, p. 118.*

1755. Christiaan Finett and Adolph von Roosen.

We, . . . did in the year 1754 go to the Rivers **Waini and Barima** which lie at a latitude of 8° north, and did inspect the same, and found there an immense tract of good and fertile land which could be used for sugar, coffee, cocoa, rice and other plantations; which rivers **have on the east the Hollanders to the** River **Essequibo, and on the west the** river of **Orinoco belonging to the Spanish Crown.** *B. C., III, 153.*

1757. Minutes of letter as to Iturriaga's Mission.

Fugitive negroes from the **Dutch colonies on the coast.** *B. C., II, 132.*

1757. Director-General in Essequibo.

Careful about the said Spaniards, and if by chance they are desirous of passing **to the River Cuyuni, or into any territories of our Colony.** *Same, p. 168.*

The Chief of the [Cuyuni] Post will take . . . care in apprehending all **fugitive slaves from the Colony.** *Same, p. 169.*

1758. Commandant of Guiana.

There are 12 or 13 leagues of coast between it [Moruca Post] and the Colony. *Same, p. 142.*

BOUNDARIES AS INFERRED FROM DESIGNATIONS USED—(Continued).

1758. Stephen Hiz, Postholder in Cuyuni.

Asked what the distance was from that place [Cuyuni Post] **to the Colony of Essequibo,** he answered, etc. *B. C., II, 166.*

1758. Juan Bautista Brum, soldier at the Cuyuni Post.

Asked what the distance was **from Cuiba** [Post on the Cuyuni] **to the Colony of Essequibo,** he answered, etc. *Same, p. 167.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

These so far-reachlng pretensions [to dominion over Cuyuni] being of the most extreme importance for this Colony, I do hope, and doubt not, that your Honours will employ all due means, through their High Mightinesses, to obtain proper satisfaction therefor.

I take the liberty earnestly to recommend the case in **Cuyuni** as being of the greatest importance to this Colony, that river forming one of the three arms of this river, and in which your Honours' indigo and coffee plantations, and a great portion of Duynenburg, are situated. If the Spaniards hold possession thereof we have them **in the heart of the Colony.** *Same, pp. 171-172.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **Map of** South America by M. **d'Anville,** to which I referred, was sent to me last year, at my request, by the Professor, now Rector, Magnificus Allemand at Leyden, by the "Essequibo Welvaeren," and was at that time the last by that man. The **boundaries of** the different **nations** upon this coast **of Guiana are there distinctly marked.** I had received two of them, but have, for the second time, sent one to Orinoco. *Same, p. 180.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The **boundaries of** the Province of **Guayana** are, **on the east, the entire coast, on which** are situated **the Dutch Colonies** of **Essequibo,** Berbice, Demarary, Corentin, Surinam, and further windwards, Cayenne belonging to the French; on the north, the banks of the Orinoco, which separates the Provinces of Cumana, Barcelona, Caracas, Barinas, Santa Fee and Popayan, forming a semicircle and turning to the east to seek its source in Lake Parime, . . . on the south, by the dominions of the Most Faithful King in Brazil, the boundaries of which are unknown, as is likewise the said Province of Guayana, in respect of what it contains in its centre. *B. C., III, 61.*

The **Colony of Essequibo** consists of sundry sugar estates, which the Dutch have planted, to the distance of **30 leagues, on the** banks of the **River Essequibo,** beginning at its mouth, and also of some islands formed by the said river. *Same, p. 63.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

There must also be considered the vast extent of **the districts situated between the four Posts, without reckoning those which are past the same,** and **belonging to the jurisdiction of the Honourable Company.** *Same, p. 111.*

BOUNDARIES AS INFERRED FROM DESIGNATIONS USED—(Continued).

1776. J. C. von Heneman.

The Undersigned . . . has taken all possible pains . . . to make . . . a graphic map of a part of **the Colony in the River Essequibo,** . . . which may be adequate and may make it possible for their Honours to take such measures and give such orders as may conduce to the safety and the welfare of the district and Colony of Essequibo . . . and . . . the prevention of smuggling, together with the aid of the plantations established in this Colony on the sea-coast, &c., &c., where . . . a more accurate map . . . can be made and **the territory and rivers of the Colony of Essequibe** can be surveyed in a proper manner. Meanwhile there is provisionally appended . . . an enumeration of what might be needed for the defending and garrisoning of **the River and Colony of Essequibo.** *B. C., IV, 167–168.*

1784. Commandeur in Demerara.

Is of the greatest importance to **this Colony and Essequibo;** a good strong occupation post erected on the **boundaries of Oronoque.** *B. C., V, 23.*

1788. Court of Policy.

The Court, after ripe deliberation, having noted that all the concessions of **this Colony and west sea-coast** of this river possess 750 rods depth. *B. C.-C., App., 374.*

1790. Governor of Guayana.

Berbice, Demerari, and **Esquivo,** [are] all foreign colonies situated on the same coast at a distance of **45 leagues from** the Boco de Navios of **the Orinoco** River. *V. C., II, 476.*

1791. Court of Policy.

Petition of P. L. Diest, asking for 500 acres of land **in this Colony or by the creek Camoedi.** [Note: Camoedi creek, between Essequibo and Pomeroon, debouches into the Atlantic about 15 miles from the mouth of the Pomeroon.] *B. C-C., App., 384.*

1792. Court of Policy.

[Soldiers are to be sent] to the **ground or boundary of Orinoco,** in order to preserve the right to our territory. *B. C., V, 133.*

1793. Council of the Colonies.

He [Governor General of Essequibo] **shall** . . . send in . . . a circumstantial **Report** of all the lands granted, adding to it an accurate list of lands not granted, and **how the River Pomeroon** [*not* Barima], as well as the interior, **can be turned to account.** *Same, p. 134.*

1796. Spanish Declaration of War against Great Britain.

England has . . . showed . . . her views against my dominions . . . by the conquest she has just made on the continent of South America of **the Colony and River of Demerari** belonging to the Dutch. *Same, p. 164.*

1797. Captain-General of Caracas.

The lands which stretch **from the Colony of Essequibo to Barima.** *Same, p. 164.*

BOUNDARIES AS INFERRED FROM DESIGNATIONS USED—(Continued).

1803. Court of Policy.

18 silver circular collars, engraved with the lion, bearing the inscription, "**Batavian Republic of Essequibo and Demerary,**" around and above it, with the necessary national ribbon. *B. C., V, 180.*

1803. G. A. W. Ruysch.

Proposed Charter for the Colonies of Essequibo and Demerara submitted to the Council of the **American Colonies and Possessions of the Batavian Republic.** . . . June 22, 1803. *Same, p. 182.*

1804. Lieutenant-Governor Myers.

The distance **from** the **Abari Creek** on the east **to the most distant military post at Moruceo** on the west is—[**123 miles**]. *Same, p. 186.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

Give us [Indians] . . . the means of self-defence, or we must follow the Caribisce to **a happier land beyond the falls.** *B. C., VI, 32.*

The very existence of the Colony is precarious, except **the immense belt of forest that forms its southern boundary,** be occupied by some friendly Power. *Same, p. 33.*

1824. Proclamation of Lieutenant Governor.

The Militia of the United Colony shall consist of. . . . In Essequibo, the first battalion shall consist of. . . . the second battalion, of all the inhabitants from Schoonhoven Creek, including Tiger Island, with **all the West Sea Coast, including Pomeroon River.** *V. C.-C., III, 169–170.*

1826. Court of Policy.

The Lieutenant Governor and . . . Court of Policy have deemed it expedient to divide the United Colony of Demerary and Essequebo into ten separate and distinct Parishes . . . as follows, . . .

Parish No. 9, Saint John's. From Supenaam Creek to Capoey, on the West Coast of Essequibo, including Tiger Island.

Parish No. 10. The **Trinity.** From Capoey Creek **to Pomeroon, and as far as the British settlements extend.** *Same, p. 172.*

1830. Lieutenant Governor.

The Lieutenant-Governor has been pleased to **appoint** . . . Joseph Alleyne . . . **Assistant Protector of Slaves** for the District from Capoey Creek **to the River Pomeroon, inclusive.**

The Lieutenant-Governor has been pleased to **appoint** . . . Major Peter Rose . . . to be **Deputy Fiscal** in and over the District extending from Capoey Creek **to the River Pomeroon, inclusive.** *Same, p. 173.*

1833. British Case.

In 1833 . . . the "**Spanish frontier**" . . . [was] considered as situated **at the head of the Massaruni and Cuyuni Rivers.** *B. C., 114.*

1833. Rev. L. Strong.

The **Spanish frontier at the head of the Massaruni and Cayuni Rivers.** *B. C., VI, 50.*

BOUNDARIES AS INFERRED FROM DESIGNATIONS USED—(Continued).

1834. Wm. Hilhouse.

A census of the population of this [**Pomeroon**] **district** to be taken **from the Itabo to the lowest settlement.** *B. C., VI, 52.*

A Post definitory of the jurisdiction westward is indispensable, and . . . the Post of **Pomeroon** ought to be maintained on a most respectable footing. *Same, pp. 52–53.*

1834. Lieutenant-Governor.

The **Pomeroon district** . . . **includes the Morocco Creek.** *Same, p. 57.*

1850. Combined Court of British Guiana.

County Essequibo. . . . VI. From Better Success **to the limits of the Colony, including the Pomeroon** river **and** its **tributaries.** *V. C.-C., III, 185.*

1856. Governor of British Guiana.

District No. 1 shall be subdivided into three Divisions, viz.:

Division No. 1. The Arabian Coast, from the Western Extremity, including Pomeroon, to the west bank of the Iterabisce Creek. *Same, p. 187.*

1858. Governor of British Guiana.

Division No. 1. The Arabian Coast, from the Western extremity, including Pomeroon, to Plantation Good Hope, inclusive, and Tiger Island. *Same, p. 203.*

1868. Governor of British Guiana.

Limits: **District No. 1. The River Pomeroon and its tributaries** and islands, and all settlements on the banks of the said river and its tributaries, and on the said islands—**as far as the settlements extend**—and from the mouth of the said river Pomeroon, to, and inclusive of, the village of Queenstown, in the Parish of St. John. *Same, p. 204.*

1873. Governor of British Guiana.

North Essequibo Coast. From the River **Morucca,** including all settlements on the right bank of the said river, **as far as the settlements extend,** and from the mouth of the said river Morucca, to and inclusive of the left bank of the Capoey Creek. *Same, p. 206.*

1897. George L. Burr.

It is . . . clear that, from beginning to end of its existence, **the charters of the Dutch West India Company never named the Orinoco as its limit.** *V. C.-C., II, 20.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

It appears to me that, taking the origin, history, and present state of the various tribes into consideration, the facts show that **the Schomburgk line coincides almost exactly with the limits within which the aboriginal Indians have been** and are exclusively **under Dutch and British influence** and claim British nationality. *B. C.-C., App., 408.*

ACTS OF JURISDICTION BY ONE NATION PASSED OVER WITHOUT PROTEST BY THE OTHER.

——. British Case.

After the **British** finally took possession of the Dutch Colonies, **Magistrates** were **appointed to deal** summarily **with small offences**, and the number of instances of the exercise of jurisdiction, of which a record has been preserved, is much greater, . . . **In the Dutch period** it was **only** in the case of the more **important crimes** that the Dutch Courts assumed the task of trying the offender.

B. C., 86.

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The inhabitant C. Finet, who has arrived from up the Cuyuni, has informed me that the report of the Caribs made to me some months ago is true, namely, that the Spaniards have established a Mission up in the said river, and have built a small fort there, he himself having been there and spoken with the priest and soldiery.

Next year, all the Indians from that direction are flying hither and praying for protection. *B. C., II, 45.*

1747. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

As to the **forts** already **established in Cuynni for the Spaniards**, and those they might wish to establish there hereafter, we have thought it best to await the action to be taken thereon by the Assembly of Ten. *Same, p. 49.*

1747. West India Company (the Ten).

If . . . you can, by indirect means and without yourself appearing therein, bring it about that the Spaniards be dislodged from **the forts and buildings** which, according to your assertions, they have **made upon the territory of the Company**, and can prevent them from spreading further in that quarter, you will do well to accomplish this. *Same, p. 51.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I shall . . . as soon as a favourable opportunity occurs, execute your Honour's orders . . . concerning the **Forts of the Spaniards**.

Same, p. 55.

1748. Court of Justice.

Counsellor Buisson having **complained** that one of his corials had been unlawfully detained **at the Company's trading-place at Moruka**, and praying to have it returned . . .

The Indian being absent, **the case** is put off to next meeting. . . .

The Commandeur represented that a certain free Indian named Baraca, belonging to **the Company's trading-place in Moruka**, had complained that a person named Jean Pierre Maillard some time ago [etc.].

The Commandeur is authorized to send for the said Maillard and the Indian woman. *Same, p. 56.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

A wanderer of the name of Pinet having gone up the River Cuyuni . . . has made report to me that **the Spaniards** had not yet undertaken the building of any forts or Missions as had been their intention lower down, but that they **cruelly ill-treated the Indians subject to us**, continually taking them by surprise in their dwellings and carrying them off, with their wives and children, to send them to Florida; that he had spoken to the Chief of the Spaniards, . . . but that the latter had replied that the whole of America belonged to the King of Spain, and that he **should do what suited himself, without troubling about us.** *Same, p. 58.*

ACTS OF JURISDICTION BY ONE NATION PASSED OVER WITHOUT PROTEST BY THE OTHER—(Continued).

1760. Court of Justice.

The Director-General brings to the knowledge of the Court that certain **complaints** have reached him **concerning** a certain wanderer named **Nicolas Stedevelt, who**, without giving any notice, **had gone to the Upper Cuynni,** [*na Boven Cajoeny*] **and . . . had** not only **ill-used the free Caribs,** but also bound and put them in irons, and taken a woman away.

After due delibration, it is resolved:

That as Nicolas Stedevelt never had any authority to act in such a manner, . . . the **Court** hereby **condemns** Nicolas **Stedevelt to pay a fine** of 250 guilders. *B. C., II, 182-183.*

1774. Director-General in Essequibo.

Both **from English captains** leaving the Essequibo (formerly the Colony) in their barques or vessels and from private individuals **the Governor receives** for a pass 7 guilders 10 st., and **5 guilders for a permit to** barter or **trade in Indians outside the Post**, which for some time was not observed, but in 1774 I again introduced or renewed it by reason of the necessity. *B. C., IV, 123.*

1783. Court of Justice.

Whereas, **the** free **Indian Joris**, of the Arrowak tribe, formerly residing on plantation Engelrust, in this river, and formerly at Fort Zeelandia, has confessed to the Criminal Court . . . that he, . . . last year had been to Orinoque, and on his return journey, **on the River Baurom,** and in the Creek Wackepoey, had met . . . Jan Nicolas Mullert.

That while there a dispute arose among them about some goods; . . . that he (the prisoner) had, . . . **shot** the said **Mullert** in the back with a gun, who fell to the ground, and was afterwards shot at and killed by another Indian with an arrow.

Be it enacted, **the Court** . . . do hereby **condemn the prisoner** be to . . . bound to a pole . . . to be severely whipped with rods, and afterwards to be branded; further, to labour in chains for life. *B. C., V, 8-9.*

1783. Dutch Administrator of Essequibo.

The Court having examined . . . the case of Christian Frederick Benjamin Pieterse, . . . do hereby **pronounce Judgment, declaring** the said C. F. Benjamin **Pieterse** to be **innocent** of the crime laid against him, for having murdered an Indian named Arowai*. *Same, p. 16.*

---

* Locality of the crime unknown—perhaps Wakupo.

CHAPTER IV.

NATURE OF SPANISH AND DUTCH OCCUPATION.

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS PURPOSE.

——. Venezuelan Case.

Mission work began with the beginning of **Spanish settlement.**

V. C., 41.

The Spaniards . . . came to America to conquer the land, to found an empire, to gather its treasure, **to christianize and to civilize its people.** The history of Spanish settlement on the Orinoco is therefore a history, first, of political control over all the surrounding region, and second, of missionary activity and settlement among the Indians.

As to political control, it was general throughout the territory now in dispute.

Same, p. 99.

There was, during the period under consideration (1725–1800) a **great growth of Spanish population, and spread of mission villages,** not only as far as the Curumo itself, but far into the interior of the Cuyuni-Mazaruni basin, and even beyond, into the Potaro region and as far as the headwaters of the Siparuni.

Same, p. 153.

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

That a **contrast** existed between the conditions of the Dutch and Spanish colonies is very certain. . . . It was a contrast between Dutch fear of extinction and Spanish power; **between Dutch influence on behalf of barbarism and Spanish influence on behalf of civilization;** between the final withdrawal of the Dutch to the mouth of the Essequibo, and the gradual spread of Spanish settlement over the interior. *V. C.-C., 60.*

1604. J. Maldonado Barnuevo.

The Indians and half-breeds are an abandoned people, and as to their being Christians and **frequenting the churches** and sacraments,—most of them **do so more from force** than from duty, **being compelled by those who govern them,** and by the clergy who go to instruct them. *B. C.-C., App., 5.*

1615. Duke of Lerma.

Essequibo . . . where there are some persons, from twelve to fifteen Spaniards, who there **till the soil** to raise the root of *Casavia*, from which bread is made for the Governor of Trinidad and Orinoco. *V. C., II, 264.*

1682. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

My greatest desire has been to procure ministers of the Gospel for **the conversion and advancement of the natives** abiding in this island (Trinidad) and in Guayana, all in this jurisdiction, numbering more than twenty-four thousand, and who communicate with us and serve us for certain small presents that are given to them through pity. *V. C., II, 269-270.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS PURPOSE—(Continued).

To the end of achieving **the conversion of so many infidels and heathens,** which would greatly redound to the service of God and **extend the dominions of His Majesty,** the Indians being aware of the kindness and love with which the Capuchin Fathers treat them for the purpose of converting them, there is no doubt that the desired object will be attained; . . . every year up to the present, Capuchin friars have arrived from the Province of Catalonia to do mission work with the friars of the Province of Aragon to Terra Firma in the Province of Cumana. *V. C., II, 270.*

I beseech and command said Fathers . . . to co-operate **to the submission and conversion of the natives of Guayana** and the preservation of those who are settled in the two villages [of Indians of the Pariagotos nation in the city of Guayana]. *Same, pp. 270–271.*

His Majesty . . . ordered me, . . . 29th May, 1682, not to permit personal service, and to attend with care and vigilance to the **conversion and settlement of the Indians,** which I did. *B. C., I, 195.*

1723. Antonio de Guerrero.

His Majesty's **principal object being the reduction and conversion of said heathen Indians** to our Holy Catholic Faith. *V. C.-C., III, 19.*

Besides the benefits that those souls . . . derive therefrom the Royal Crown will have the benefit of the immense number of Indians that can be reduced and converted to our Holy Faith, great increase in the domains of His Majesty and considerable revenue for the Royal Exchequer from the effects, fruits and other products of these countries, taxes that they may pay in time, and the contributions that the converted Indians must pay. *Same, p. 20.*

1733. Governor of Trinidad.

We shall be gratified if the result be favourable, **so that your Reverence may continue your labour profitably,** and **that** so many **souls may not perish** in the blindness of the Devil, in the slavery of the Dutch, or by the tyranny of the Caribs. *B. C.-C., App., 180.*

1734. Don Carlos de Sucre.

[There was assigned] **to the Rev. Fathers Franciscans,** present and future, **for the purpose of establishing and founding** whatever villages of **Missions** they might be able in this part of Guayana of the Orinoco, the (district) from Angostura up to the banks of this side below the River Cuchivero, in a straight line drawn from the borders of the said Orinoco to the Marañon or Amazons, . . . there remaining **to the Rev. Capuchin Fathers, for the purpose of developing their Missions,** the territory and district from the same Angostura downwards to the grand mouth of the said Orinoco where they will distribuet whatever Missionaries may come to them. *B. C., II, 23.*

1737. Don Carlos de Sucre.

The **Indians** of the Capuchin Missions of Guayana being useless [as soldiers] for they have **only recently been converted.** *Same, p. 26.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS PURPOSE—(Continued).

1745. Council of the Indies.

A letter from Friar Augustin de Olot, Prefect of the said [Capuchin] Missions, [of Guiana] . . . informs him of its miserable condition **in consequence of the invasion** made **by the English** in those parts in the year 1742, when they burnt two villages of converts and harried the rest; from which occurrence, **and** from the incursion of **Carib Indians** into the same territory, who have likewise pillaged and ravaged it, a **great tumult** has arisen, and so much restlessness **among the converts**, that **in order not to abandon them some** of the **religious have had to sacrifice their lives.** He begs that eight missionaries from the Province of Catalonia may be granted him.

The Council, having . . . taken into account that for fifteen years no religious have gone to Guayana, . . . is of opinion that your Majesty should be pleased to grant his request. *B. C., II, 43.*

1747. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

As in the 90 and more leagues [up the Orinoco] from the mouth of the Caroni the Caribs hold sway, the navigation is dangerous for those who are not their friends, or who are not accompanied by a force strong enough to repulse their attack.

The very **many attacks on the Missions, their desolation and destruction, are proofs of the dislike with which they** [Caribs] **regard them.**

The threats of the Caribs, which some Indians fear, their suggestions, which perturb others, and the free life of the forest, which appeals to all those recently settled, are likewise causes of the sudden dispersement which they have been wont to suffer.

Since the savage and valiant Guipanovis **destroyed** . . . the new **mission** of the rapid above mentioned [Atures] **the Fathers have again established it, although at the expense of great labours.** *Same, p. 54.*

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

It is a shame . . . for the Dutch, that two nations not to be compared with them for industry, namely, **the Portuguese and the Spaniards**, who are situated at the right and the left of these colonies, and who are groaning under so hard, even slavish, a rule, **are owners of so many treasures and so fortunate in their discoveries.** *Same, p. 66.*

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

It was considered well, and even necessary, to make an effort to see if it be possible to **pacify** and reduce **this Carib nation, and bring them into our Missions**, by offering them all the inducements possible. *Same, p. 89.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

I have taken measures on behalf of the Mission of Miamo, and caused some **Caribs** from the settlements to mingle with them, in order to see if they can bring any of them to me, so **that I may talk to them of pacification.**

Same, pp. 111-112.

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS PURPOSE—(Continued).

1758. Prefect of Missions.

It appears to me that the Dutch were never so eager in their pursuit after slaves as they are at present, and it is precisely on that account that so little fruit is obtained in the **efforts** made **to convert the Indians and Caribs**; for, being counselled by the Dutch not to allow themselves to be drawn into the Missions, they do not like the villages, and, consequently, retire to the forests. It was precisely owing to these bad counsels that the Indians of the four Missions rebelled in the year [17]50. *B. C., II, 149.*

1758. Counsellor Julian Padilla y Moron.

By the said account it is further shown that the [Dutch] soldiers of the guard did carry on that [slave] traffic, thereby depriving the natives of their natural liberty, . . . without instructing them in our holy Catholic faith; in opposition to His Majesty's commands, as ordered and decreed in various Royal Decrees, in which **His Majesty . . . expressly recommends that the Indians** be well treated, not deprived of their liberty, and **receive proper instructions in our holy faith.** *Same, p. 170.*

1761. Don Jose Solano.

The **conversion of the infidels** being hindered at the instigation of those who needed them in the woods to carry on their illicit trade. *Same, p. 203.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

If these missionary communities should be assisted in the manner and form I have suggested to His Majesty, it is to be hoped that the Guarauno Indians, who inhabit the swamps at the mouth of the Orinoco, would be pacified and induced to settle on the dry land, and also that the very extensive Province of **Guayana** would then be **explored and pacified.**

Having demonstrated the wretched condition in which the Government was in 1720, its evident progress in the forty-three years elapsed up to date, and that it is due to the missionary bodies which are engaged in **the evangelization of these two provinces,** without which the successive and repeated measures of my predecessors would not have had such acknowledged effect. *B. C., III, 9.*

Men are sometimes withdrawn from the said [Mission] villages to man the ships, or for the public works that may be required (they being the only Indians thus far subjected thereto). *Same, p. 23.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

Gaining on the way the **reduction of the** increased **multitude of wild Indians,** who, finding themselves hemmed in on all sides, would submit by treaty, and would aid the advancement of the settlement. *B. C., V, 62.*

The Indians, being an uncivilized and insubordinate people, lovers of their independence and liberty, which the enemy would undoubtedly offer so as to attract them to their side, it is to be feared that they would submit cheerfully to any change which would enable them **to escape the subjection in which the Religious keep them for the purpose of instruction.** *Same, pp. 111–112.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS METHODS.

1686. King of Spain.

You [Governor of Trinidad] may render all the assistance possible to these Friars, helping them in such a way as may best promote the object of so holy and important a work, seeing to it that as fast as the **Indians are subdued** they be brought together and incorporated in the Missions and Villages, **in order that they may live a political and civil life**, you helping the Friars to attain this object. *V. C., II, 272.*

1748. Ignace Courthial.

The King of Spain grants titles of honour to the private individual who, by some small gift, draws from the forests a few Indian families to form a village, which becomes, through the ministry of a priest whom he places there, what is called a Mission.

He grants, I say, the titles of Marquis and Count, and governments, **to him who founds a town**, a city, **with 25 or 30 families**, merely by furnishing to each a dwelling à l'Américane, or hut, with a pair of each sort of domestic animals. *B. C., II, 60.*

1760. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

I have treated the Caribs with kindness and presents, in order **that** leaving their dwellings on the hills, **they might come to settle in the Missions.** *Same, p. 183.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The Missions in charge of the Catalonian Capuchins have been **assisted** [**by the Government**]. *B. C., III, 20.*

Insurmountable difficulties [are] found in the way of establishing Spanish settlements in remote places, without first pacifying the Indians inhabiting them, and . . . **after the** said **Indians are reduced** these Spanish **settlements are easily formed.** *Same, p. 25.*

1771. Commandant of Guayana.

They [**Missionaries**] **make use of the Indians, without paying them, just as if they were slaves.** And they make it appear that they are the defenders of their liberty. *B. C., IV, 93.*

I knew, and I was assured that **there neither were nor are**, in this province. **Indians who can be subdued or converted by words** and preaching only, and that **force is necessary**, as well as presents, **to bring them from the forests and keep them in civilized Christian society.** In this work the most active missionaries employed the European escorts with which they were furnished by the Governor. *Same, p. 117.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS INFLUENCE AND RESULTS.

——. British Case.

The missionaries never had either possession or **control of any territory except the spots actually occupied** by the stations. *B. C., 160.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

All my predecessors, . . . were particular in taking measures to insure **the safety and development of these provinces**, and . . . I have taken no

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS INFLUENCE AND RESULTS—(Continued).

small number myself, . . . Owing to these measures and those of my said predecessors, **all the lands and ranges of these provinces are traversed without the least risk,** and a man can now go alone to and from Guayana without any fear. Twenty years ago it could not be done without a strong escort. No foreigners allied to the Caribs are now seen in the said country, nor Caribs, save those of a settlement. *B. C., III, 8.*

After the establishment of the . . . Missions, . . . the **Indians began, under the care of the missionaries, to cultivate the land** on a larger scale than required for the support of the villages. The surplus was then, as it still is, supplied to the fortress, . . . but this is furnished, . . . by . . . **villages, . . . inhabited by Indians already educated,** whose property is managed by the missionaries with great order and economy. These natives are therefore dressed and supplied with necessary implements. *Same, p. 22.*

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

It is hard, my Lords, that neighbouring and allied nations should thus **seek to compass the ruin of their neighbours upon the frivolous and really ridiculous pretext of bringing the slaves into the Christian religion.**

Same, p. 140.

1771. Commandant of Guayana.

Thus, helping each other, **all are benefited, the Indian by the material reward he receives from the industry and religion learned from the Spaniard,** and the Spaniard by the labour of the Indian's hands, which he rescues from idleness and applies to labour and agriculture. This plan is both useful and suitable for settling the desert country round this capital, and there are no wild Indians, except the Guaraunos, for more than one hundred leagues. *B. C., IV, 83.*

1823. Wm. Hilhouse.

The Jesuits of the Missions, prior to the political disturbances in that quarter, **had brought them to** such a state of comparative **discipline and civilization** as even to reclaim them from their natural propensities as hunters, and induce them to cultivate the soil. **The superior cultivation of the refugee Spanish Indians in the Morocco Creek is a proof of this.**

Their capacity for discipline was such that they acted in regular bodies in support of the regular troops in the cause of the Royalists, and their attachment to the Government was such that, on the breaking out of the trouble, great numbers emigrated rather than acknowledge the growing ascendency of the patriots.

Those that remain regularly take their routine of duty in the patriot militias, indiscriminately with Europeans and creoles. *B. C., VI, 33.*

1832. Second Fiscal.

Those Spanish **Indians** located **in** and about the **Morocco** . . . Mr. Hynes seems most anxious to draw . . . more into the heart of the Colony, as well on their own account as with the hope that they **might** eventually **become the means of extending Christianity** and habits of industry and morality **amongst the Indians of our settlements.** *Same, p. 46.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—ITS INFLUENCE AND RESULTS—(Continued).

1834. Wm. Hilhouse.

Spanish Indians under Captain Juan. These Indians are concentrated in a few miles' run **of the [Moruca] creek**, and are nominally Christians, being refugees from the Spanish Main. They are **the only ones in the Colony possessed of the least traits of civilization**, . . . and are without exception the most provident, industrious and regularly fed of any of the tribes. . . . To the credit of these people be it spoken that for twelve or fifteen years, the period of their first emigration, I have not heard of a single instance of those disgraceful atrocities that daily characterize the Colonial tribes, notwithstanding the Post of Pomeroon. *B. C., VI, 52.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF; EXPEDITIONS TO THE INTERIOR, AND ESTABLISHMENT OF MISSIONS AND VILLAGES THERE.

1747. British Case.

In 1747 there was a **rumour** . . . in the Dutch Colony **that** the **Spaniards had discovered** the sources of the Cuyuni and Massaruni in **the** celebrated **Lake of Parima, and intended to settle** and fortify themselves **there**, . . . and . . . had . . . brought back with them Indians "fairly white, and clothed with cotton stuff they themselves had prepared." The best demonstration of the **falsity of this news** is that this celebrated lake, and these fair-skinned and semi-civilized Indians, the dream of Raleigh and his contemporaries, had no existence in fact. But this rumour was believed in the Colony, and was incorporated by Hartsinck in the history which he published.

B. C., 39–40.

1757. Minutes of a letter respecting boundary between Spain and Portugal in America.

To establish the frontier between the dominions of Spain and Portugal . . . there were formed **two divisions of Commissioners**, one for the district south of the line, and the other for that of the north. Those of the south were the Marquis de Valdelirios and his people, who started in the year 1751. . . . Those of the north started at the beginning of 1754, and reached Cumana on the 9th April of the same year. . . . Four Commissioners from each nation were sent for the two districts. **Those of the North were** Don Joseph **Iturriaga**, Don Eugenio Alvarado, Don Antonio Orrutia, and Don Joseph Solano.

Iturriaga was ordered to make certain investigations and surveys whilst he remained there [at Cumana]. . . . The investigations which had been recommended to him on his journey were these:

To take the most precise notice of all that could conduce to the good government of . . . Trinidad and Margarita.

To verify the communications of the Orinoco and the state of the Missions . . . there, and in the Province of Guiana.

To ascertain . . . the condition of mind of a large number of fugitive negroes from the Dutch colonies on the coast, to see if they could be brought over to the faith and service of your Majesty.

To take notice of all that concerned the natural history of the great territory situated between the Rivers Marañon and Orinoco, . . . for which object he took with him Pedro Loefling, a famous Swedish botanist. *B. C., II, 132.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF; EXPEDITIONS TO THE INTERIOR, AND ESTABLISHMENT OF MISSIONS AND VILLAGES THERE—(Continued).

1757. Minutes of a letter respecting boundary betwoen Spain and Portugal iu America.

Iturriaga [on April 9, 1754], . . . presented the Governor with a Cedula, in which the latter was ordered that . . . he should aid them with all the means at his command. . . . He presented him, [also], with another order, . . . and in respect of this order and of that Cedula two disputes were raised. . . .

Finally, Iturriaga wrote a letter to the Governor telling him that he had understood that he was to give him everything that he had in his district, as the Cedula expressly stated, and that, on the contrary, the Governor understanding that by virtue of the same he was not bound to give anything, he had resolved not to say another word. . . . He sent Don Joseph Blamo to the Isle of Trinidad to get thirty rowing-boats made, to find Indians who dwell on the River Orinoco, and to bring the provisions and stores that he could get. *B. C., II, 133.*

In the year 1755 Iturriaga made use of the Governor of Trinidad to get provisions from the French from Martinique, and . . . in that year and in 1756 **the whole** of the **expedition suffered very great misery and want,** half its members having died and amongst them . . . Orrutia, . . . Galan, the botanist Pedro Loefling, and Father Aller, a Jesuit, who went as cosmographer; . . . Iturriaga also suffered much injury to his health.

All the unofficial information that has been received condemns his conduct as that of a lazy man and one of harsh manners, but no report has come to hand in his defence nor any official letter, nor any letter for his friends or family.

Note. It is proved by the letters sent by the Governor that of the 212 men destined for the service of the expedition, and as substitutes for those at Guiana, there were only little more than 80 remaining in the expedition and ten in that fortress, through the desertion, sickness and death of the others. *Same, p. 134.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

In the year 1761 and while inspecting the Missions in that Province, in charge of the Reverend Catalonian Capuchin Fathers, and upon survey and examination of the fertile lands occupied by those established inland, away from the banks of the Orinoco River, . . . I had a conference . . . about the importance of **the establishment of** one or more **Spanish villages . . . for the safety** and restraint of those **of the Missions,** and in future as a barrier to the Dutch Colonies and a defence to the fortress of Guayana. *B. C., III, 27.*

In the same Province of Guayana, at corresponding distances, **two or three other bodies of Missions** [should] **be established,** . . . and that the four or five bodies to be established there should go farther inland from the banks of the Orinoco to the south, as should be done by the Catalonian Capuchins, thus succeeding in occupying the countries in the rear of the Colonies of Essequibo, belonging to the Dutch, and those of Cayenne, occupied by the French.

Same, p. 51.

[Missions should be assisted so that] His Majesty may **have a kingdom now unknown** in that extensive province, while so many miserable and docile Indians will be reduced and brought to the bosom of our holy religion, settled in social life, and useful for the help of the Spaniards, who may establish any trade there.

Same, p. 52.

SPANISH OCCUPATION—EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF; EXPEDITIONS TO THE INTERIOR, AND ESTABLISHMENT OF MISSIONS AND VILLAGES THERE—(Continued).

1771. Commandant of Guiana.

The . . . commanding officer shall . . . make friends with all those nations, especially with the Macusi and Arecunas, presenting the Indians with such charms and amulets as they esteem, especially the Chiefs . . . in order to encourage them all to submit voluntarily to the dominion of the King, our Master, in whose name the said officer shall formally take possession of all that territory with as much solemnity as circumstances may permit; demanding an oath of fidelity from the Indians . . . offering them help and protection in the King's name, promising to preserve their lands and goods as those of faithful subjects, and to defend them from their enemies that they may . . . enjoy the many other advantages of those who subject themselves to the just and gentle dominion of our Lord the King.

On the River Parime, near the place called Cachibe, before reaching the mouth of the Abaieraruru, the said officer shall cause **a small fort to be built** in some narrow pass or advantageous place, that the guns of the said fort may close the passage of the river to our enemies. It would also be of great convenience to **found a few villages** of loyal Indians close to the fort for the better defence and subsistence of the garrison of that important Post.

At El Dorado itself, or some site in the immediate vicinity best fitted to close the **entrance of Lake Parime**, . . . **a stronghold shall be built** . . . **and** several **settlements** of friendly Indians shall be **founded** in the neighborhood . . . and all things necessary for the better establishment and defence of the Spaniards on that frontier. *B. C., IV, 98.*

Should any European foreigners be found in those parts outside the Colonies allowed them, as . . . the Dutch on the coast of Surinam, Berbice, Essequibo, of the Atlantic Ocean, his Majesty's order shall be intimated to them that they quit those his Royal dominions forthwith, and if, after the first remonstrances, they do not withdraw to the former settlements allowed them, abandoning the territory they have usurped, they shall be driven out by force of arms.

Same, p. 99.

1772. Commandant of Guiana.

The fate of the **expedition under Martinez** was not so bad, but neither was it successful. *Same, p. 106.*

In these sad straits Don Nicolas Martinez resolved to retire, with all his expedition, . . . to this capital. . . . As I have informed your Excellency, it is **necessary** for us **to take possession of these lands to restrain the Portuguese, French and Dutch.** . . . For this reason I have sent a Commanding Officer to the Parava with power and orders to make settlements of the Arinagoto Indians, who are found half way down this river, and the Ipurucocos, whom Martinez found in the cocao plantation of Paravamusi, that these two settlements may facilitate the passage of **our expedition to Parime.**

Same, p. 107.

1772. Fray Felix de Villanueva.

The Reverend Father Benito de la Garriga with Father Thomas de Mataro are on an **exploration of the Parime.** . . . a great number of wild Indians came out upon them with firearms. . . . Some Caribs from our Missions,

SPANISH OCCUPATION—EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF; EXPEDITIONS TO THE INTERIOR, AND ESTABLISHMENT OF MISSIONS AND VILLAGES THERE—(Continued).

who were also in the fight, have arrived and they say that some of our band are killed, but they are unable to give further particulars. *V. C., II, 408-409.*

1773. Commandant of Guayana.

The Orinoco was nearly deserted, or rather dominated by the savage Caribs, up till about 1755, when the Royal Boundary Expedition arrived, which was commanded by Commodore Don Joseph de **Iturriaga.** He tamed the pride of the Indians, and subdued and handed over many of them to the missionaries, **founded,** at the expense of the Royal Treasury, the two Spanish settlements of **Ciudad Real and Real Corona** on the Lower Orinoco, and had the country **penetrated** by the Upper Orinoco and Casiquiari for **300 leagues,** all desert land **as far as Rio Negro,** where he **erected a military post** and a fort on the Portuguese frontier. In order better to check the advance of the Portuguese conquests he **brought under** the **dominion** of the King and into the bosom of Holy Church the tribes of **Indians** ruling **in that country.** . . . The Commander **founded** with these Indians the **three villages** of San Joseph de Maypures, at the entry of the Upper Orinoco valley, and San Carlos and San Phelipe in Rio Negro.

B. C., IV, 114.

To **occupy** the important frontier of the **Parime,** in the far interior of this province, **I have despatched** a detachment of **sixty men,** under Lieutenant Don Vincente Diez de la Fuente, who is at present at the head-waters of the River Paragua, 300 leagues from this capital, engaged in **founding** the city of **Guirior,** with Spanish families I have sent from here, and various other Indian villages that are being reduced in the same direction, and they are stations necessary for our establishment, and for the security of the dominions of the King in those parts.

Same, p. 118.

1774. Don Manuel Centurion.

I afterwards fitted out a **second expedition** under the command of a Lieutenant of Infantry, Don Vincente Diez de la Fuente, (Martinez being dead), . . . to the number of 125 men. They were to enter the river Caroni and follow it . . . till they reached New Barceloneta . . . and then to follow the rivers Parava, Paravamuxi, Anocapora, Muniquiare, and Curaricara, till they flow **into Lake Parime,** . . . [At] the mouth of the Lesser Coroni in the Parava, where they founded the village of San Joseph with 150 Indians whom they subjected; . . . the advance party penetrated into the interior by means of this river and the Abarauru, Amau, and Amoine, and arrived within so short a distance of Lake Parime that . . . two days' land journey would bring them to it. . . . But they were forced to retreat, being attacked by a large body of Indians, . . . and . . . he was obliged to return to the body of the expedition . . . using as bases the **settlements** of San Juan Baptista, which he had **founded** in the mouth of Abarauru, at the end of Parime, that of Santa Barbara in the latter, between the mouths of Abarauru and Curaricara, that of Santa Rosa, in the mouth of the latter in Parime itself, that of Adamura on the land which is between Anocopora and Maniquare, that of San Salvador on the source of the Parava, and that of San Vincente (now called "Ciudad de Guirior") in the Paravamuxi. . . . These settlements . . . have . . . about 150 souls in each, and in Ciudad de Guirior . . . chiefly consisting of Spanish families, the population may be 200. *Same, pp. 126-127.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION—EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF; EXPEDITIONS TO THE INTERIOR, AND ESTABLISHMENT OF MISSIONS AND VILLAGES THERE—(Continued).

1776. Don Manuel Centurion.

The Commanding Officer of the Royal expedition of the Parime, . . . Fuente, [having informed me of the arrest of certain Spaniards by Portuguese] . . . I ordered the Captain . . . Barreto . . . to present himself to the Portuguese Governor of Varzelos in Rio Negro. . . . to . . . complain bitterly of such an insult, and **demand back** the posts, **the usurped territory**, and the imprisoned troops. *B. C., IV, 163.*

The **second exploration** . . . by . . . Lopez . . . took the same course as the first, also examining the Lake Parime and El Dorado, of which it took possession . . . but . . . on its return it was surprised and **arrested by** a strong **Portuguese** detachment, which had unduly established and fortified itself on the mouth of the said River Mao. *Same, pp. 163–164.*

1777. Don Manuel Antonio Flores.

In pursuance of this Royal mandate I gave the order, which appears by the enclosed copy to the Commandant of Guayana, advising him that **the places** where our people were arrested by the Portuguese . . . are exactly those **which may first prevent the encroachment of the French.** *V. C., III, 384.*

1777. Francisco Iturrate.

The enclosed copy of royal order . . . will inform you of what France proposes for the exploitation and cultivation of French Guiana; in it . . . the Viceroy is instructed to personally inform himself as to **the lands** which it is **advisable for us to occupy in** order **to prevent the encroachments** which they have in mind; and as they are exactly . . . those in which the Portuguese insulted us by arresting our people . . . if our settlements advance toward French Guayana they will prevent those which that nation proposes to extend into the interior of the country. . . . **take every precaution to frustrate the designs of the French.** *Same, pp. 384–385.*

1779. Don Jose de Abalos.

They [Spanish] are **to advance their occupation on the eastern side** as much as they possibly can, **until they reach French Guiena, and are likewise to extend themselves** as much as they can **on the south until they reach the frontier of the Crown of Portugal.**

The design of these measures is not merely to establish and secure possession of what belongs to the Crown of Spain in the Province of Guayana, but chiefly to settle those extensive countries, in order to secure thereby the benefits of the Monarchy, . . . and . . . the conversion of those numerous heathens and the propagation of the Holy Gospel. It would be very desirable that the said occupation of lands and their settlement should be begun in the rear of the Dutch settlements, close to French Guiena, and particularly to the Rivers called Oyapoco and Aprovak. *B. C., IV, 195.*

1782. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

With the purpose of preventing the French of Surinam from approaching I placed Indians in Cura; because no **progress** can be made **toward the South** unless there should be some settlements there. *V. C.-C., III, 99.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION, EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF —RECONNAISSANCES OF COAST BY INCIARTE AND OTHERS.

1779. Governor of Guayana.

I am instructed, as regards the eastern section of the territory, **to place in your charge . . . the duty of effecting the occupation of the respective territories under its jurisdiction**, . . . and have also appointed Don Jose Felipe de **Inciarte to aid** your Honor **in this Commission**. . . . Should it not be possible for you to go in person, the aforesaid Inciarte will go.

V. C.-C., III, 95.

It is necessary that you issue the proper authority to . . . Inciarte so that he may enter and exercise over all that territory . . . the proper and necessary jurisdiction. The most urgent thing at present is to find families to go and establish themselves in the new lands to be discovered and inhabited. . . . I will bend all my energies towards obtaining from other places as many settlers as possible . . . for their final settlement there. *Same, p. 96.*

1779. Don Jose de Abalos.

The said Province of Guayana . . . begins, on its eastern side, to windward of the outflow of the River Orinoco into the sea on the border of the Dutch Colony of **Essequibo**; it shall be one of the first cares . . . in making the new settlement to **go as near as possible to the aforesaid Colony . . . for founding the first settlement.** *B. C., IV, 194–195.*

1779. Director-General in Essequibo.

A number of eighty, both **Spaniards** and mulattos, had been **in the River Bonweron** for some days without, however, committing any molestation, yet the Indians report that they have said they **will come again** in about three months, **and then build a fortress there.** *Same, p. 207.*

1779. Don Jose de Abalos.

Inciarte. . . . proceeded to make the first **survey** of the country. . . . He . . . **approached the settlements of the Dutch in Essequibo** and their immediate vicinity, to **within** the distance of **14 leagues.** *Same, p. 210.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

In fulfilment of the commission you were pleased to entrust to me for the populating of the eastern part of the lower Orinoco, . . . **I commenced the exploration of the country.** *V. C., II, 434.*

1780. Royal Order to the Governor of Guiana.

The King has been informed of the arrival . . . of . . . **Inciarte**, commissioned . . . to carry out, under your orders, the occupation of lands and new towns to be built in the eastern portion of said Province in accordance with the instructions . . . which has been approved by his Majesty, together with your Honor's determination to wait until the proper time to undertake the exploration of the lands . . . and **to select** the most appropriate **site for the foundation of the first town, which will serve as capital for the others which shall be founded in time.** *V. C.-C., III, 98.*

SPANISH OCCUPATION, EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF—RECONNAISSANCES OF COAST BY INCIARTE AND OTHERS —(Continued).

1780. King of Spain.

Inciarte is to return . . . for the purpose of occupying and **settling the places specified** in his annexed Report . . . **and** making the provisional fortification which he considered needful, **ejecting the Dutch from** the Post or advance guard-house which they have built on the road of the River **Moruca.**

B. C., IV, 212.

1781. Military Commandant in Essequibo.

Spaniards with boats **have again been seen in the River Pomeroon.**

Same, p. 218.

SPANISH OCCUPATION, EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF—PLANS FOR MORUCA POST AND SAN CARLOS DE LA FRONTERA.

[1778.] Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

There is much ground for thinking not only of occupying the posts . . . which can check in that quarter the progress of the French, but also to form some new villages, taking settlers from without, following the example of what France is going to do, without which it would be very natural that what took place in San Domingo should take place in Guayana, that they should go on advancing inward and building houses, **in order later to allege undisturbed possession because the usurpation was not protested against in time,** a thing which cannot fail to happen if we do not establish some settlements close to the French possessions. *V. C., III, 389.*

1779. Venezuelan Case.

Inciarte meanwhile reported his results, . . . the King of Spain . . . commissioned him **to proceed** at once **with** the expulsion of the Dutch from Moruca and the **erection of** the projected **Spanish establishments** on that river and **on the Pomeroon,** . . . All preparations were made for the execution of the project, and the granting of lands actually begun. The French Revolution delayed its progress, but it was never abandoned. With a view to its better accomplishment Inciarte was himself made Governor of Guiana. . . . And though, owing to the continuance of the revolutionary wars, its execution was not actually pushed further, the project was never given up, and was receiving the attention of the Spanish Government to the very end of its control of these South American colonies and to the very eve of the Dutch cession of Essequibo to Great Britain.

V. C., 146–147.

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

At a quarter of a league before reaching the aforesaid Dutch [**Moruca**] post the rivulet forms a small bay . . . and this bay could serve as a port.

It would be **convenient** in my opinion **to found a town close to this bay or port,** as besides the advantages offered by the produce of the land, the communication which the Dutch have with the Orinoco by means of the inside branches could be prevented.

The passage of the river Moruca could easily be prevented by **erecting a fort** with four or six guns **in the** aforesaid small **bay.**

As for protecting the town against the attacks of the Dutch or any other enemy, this can be obtained by **erecting a fort on one of the small heights.**

V. C., II, 435–436.

SPANISH OCCUPATION, EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF—PLANS FOR MORUCA POST AND SAN CARLOS DE LA FRONTERA—(Continued).

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

From the Tapacuma, following the Bauruma as far as Branch Visorun, the distance is of about five and one half leagues. . . . Within the five and one half leagues there are two hills.

The second hill which is on the left going up the Bauruma, is at about one and one half leagues from this branch; . . . it seems to me that the first town which it is intended to found under the name of **San Carlos de la Frontera should lie on this spot,** as being distant from Essequibo by land only twelve or thirteen leagues, **it commands,** on account of its advantageous position, not only the surrounding lands but also **the** aforesaid branch **Bauruma.**

V. C., II, 437.

Besides the advantages which may be expected from **founding a town upon** the hill of **Bauruma,** the distance from it to Essequibo being only as I have said before from twelve to thirteen leagues, **we can reach the shores of the river Essequibo by means of four or five towns**; and this being obtained, the Dutch are deprived of all communication, not only with the various indian tribes south of the Essequibo and all the branches of the Orinoco, but also with the whole of the Parime. *Same, p. 438.*

1779. Don Jose de Abalos.

The Commissioners are charged that, if they meet with the above-mentioned obstacles against penetrating and establishing themselves, not only in the furthest limits of the eastern portion of the province, but even much nearer, they may in such a case **select for a first settlement the most suitable site** in the country which lies **between the mouths of the Orinoco and the Colony of Essequibo.** *B. C., IV, 196.*

In order to commence the great work of occupation of the said lands, and the foundation of settlements, it is necessary to bring some families from . . . the Province of Guayana itself . . . taking them for the said purpose to the place in which the first village is to be founded . . . the land should be surveyed, . . . and a selection made of the spot . . . most suitable; and . . . plantations of plantains and other fruits be made for the support of the new inhabitants. . . . When this has been done the settlers may be transferred to this first village, where, when they are once settled, the measures for further advance may be taken in every form.

This first village shall bear the name of **San Carlos de la Frontera.**

Same, p. 198.

On account of the attacks which might be experienced from certain Corsairs, pirates, smugglers, and other people of evil life, . . . it will be **desirable to found the new settlement at a slight distance inland,** in order that it may be free from all risk, and that its inhabitants may live without fear; while, with slight labour, they will enjoy the advantages of exporting and importing what they require by water. *Same, p. 199.*

The want of the Treaties of Peace for my instruction and accurate knowledge of what has been agreed upon with the States-General respecting the settlements of Surinam and Essequibo, and how far their frontiers extend, leaves me in a state

SPANISH OCCUPATION, EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF—PLANS FOR MORUCA POST AND SAN CARLOS DE LA FRONTERA—(Continued).

of uncertainty as to the selection of a site for the first village; but . . . according to Inciarte's report, the most eligible site is one situated beyond **the first place or Post of the Dutch called Moruca, . . . and . . . I propose to make arrangements for establishing it in that spot.** *B. C., IV, 210.*

1779. Don Antonio de Pereda.

The Intendant of Caráccas . . . suggests that on our side **the new settlements should be founded towards the east of this province, within the shortest possible distance of the Dutch Colony of Essequibe.** . . . a survey should be made of this territory, with a view to choosing the most convenient site for the foundation of the first town, which will afterwards serve as capital to the others, to be established in due course in those parts, with the design previously mentioned, all these new settlements to be in subordination to this province. *Same, p. 206.*

1779. Court of Policy.

The said Director-General . . . received **a report from the Postholder of Marowqno and Wacquepo that some Spaniards were stopping in the River Bauron** [Pomeroon], . . . that the same had again departed, and . . . that a clearing had been made upon the west corner of that river where the old Post stood to re-erect the same, and requesting to know how further to act with regard to the poldering thereof. *Same, p. 207.*

1780. [1812] Don Jose Olazara.

[In] 1780, His Majesty, with respect to the eastern part of the province, renewed the decree that attention be given with absolute faithfulness to the fostering of its settlement and agriculture. . . . All these decrees are totally unexecuted, and, as the general welfare of the province and the interest with which the government should regard it . . . make it necessary to anticipate in time the results threatened by the neighborhood of the foreign powers which have shamefully entered the province, and to give thought earnestly to the remedy of these injuries, present and past. And, for this purpose, **it is urgently needed that you immediately bring about the execution of** the said decrees in all their parts, and of **the special commission which . . . Inciarte had for undertaking the establishment of the new settlements,** especially those of the eastern part, . . . and which is the nearest to the frontier of Guayana, Dutch and French. *V. C., III, 421-422.*

1810. Captain of Militia of Angostura.

He knows [that] . . . Inciarte . . . finds himself under commission . . . And to all citizens who are willing to establish themselves in the said settlements . . . His Majesty . . . offers to give lands for cultivation and for the raising of cattle free of charge, and also lots for houses, . . . and that at the earliest day there shall be founded forts from Old Guayana downward as far as the limits or boundaries of the Dutch Colony, at present English, of Essequibo, the **first foundation to be begun on the river or bayou named Bourama** [Pomeroon], on the border and territory on the side of the territory of Essequibo, where there is an elevation or small hill, on which can be built a fort with the name of **San Carlos de la Frontera;** . . . that His Majesty author-

SPANISH OCCUPATION, EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION OF—PLANS FOR MORUCA POST AND SAN CARLOS DE LA FRONTERA—(Continued).

ized the removal of all the families that would willingly go from the kingdom of Santa Fé de Bogota to the said settlements, all at the expense of his Royal Exchequer; and that for this purpose there had come from Spain . . . more than two hundred families ready and willing to go to the said settlements, and that, on account of the wars which occurred with France and thereafter with England, their departure had constantly been prevented, but that their coming with the Governor of the Province had been for the purpose of providing for the said settlements; and that when peace was restored with the British Nation, in the year 1802, the said Inciarte . . . [said] he was now ready to enter upon the completion of his mission . . . but that first he wanted . . . to complete the reconnoissance of the ranges (Sierras), as he was instructed to do.

V. C., III, 417.

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS PURPOSE TO TRADE, PLUNDER AND PLANT.

——. [1896] James Rodway.

The Posts were established in the Essequebo from the time of its first occupation; in fact **the early settlements were nothing more or less than posts.** As such they were centres where bartering with the Indians of a wide area on every side was carried on. **The first Postholders were traders and very little more.** To reach new markets these posts were at great distances from the centre of the Colony. *V. C., III, 357.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The object of those early [Dutch] voyages to Guiana, **was,** in the first place **to harass the Spaniards, and,** in the second place, to **gain profit by trade and plunder.** Settlement upon Spanish soil, or the acquisition of territorial rights was hardly thought of. *V. C., 65–66.*

[In 1648] the entire Dutch colony . . . consisted of a body of two or three dozen unmarried employés of the West India Company, housed in a fort on a small island, and **engaged in traffic with the Indians for the dyes of the forest;** at the time when the treaty was signed, they were not cultivating an acre of land. This and an establishment on the Berbice were the only Dutch settlements in Guiana in 1648. Neither then, nor at any time prior thereto, had the Dutch occupied or settled a foot of ground west of their Essequibo post.

Same, p. 74.

The objects which first brought the Dutch to America, were to plunder the Spanish settlements, and to rob the Spanish treasure on its way across the ocean. When the Treaty of Munster put an end to this system of robbery, the Dutch relations with Guiana became those of mere trade; and the possessions of the Dutch on the Guiana coast stood out as merely so many trading establishments. *Same, p. 99.*

The **earliest relations of the Dutch, with Guiana** in general, and with the Essequibo in particular, were **limited to trade and to hostile operations against the Spaniards.** *Same, p. 222.*

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS PURPOSE TO TRADE, PLUNDER AND PLANT—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

It is true that the earliest relations of the Dutch with Guiana and with the Essequibo related to trade and hostile operations against the Spaniards, but these relations immediately developed into the taking of posssession of parts of the country. They were certainly trading to the Essequibo before 1625.

B. C.-C., 131.

——. British Case.

The Postholders' **relations with the Indians, in course of time became more political than commercial.** *B. C., 88.*

Numerous passages from the records can also be cited to show that at a comparatively early period the **political functions of the Postholders had become more important than the commercial.**

It will be found that in British times the Postholders traveled largely through the districts round their Posts, and exercised magisterial functions. During the Dutch period it does not appear that they habitually did so. *Same, p. 89.*

It thus appears that, as the influence of the Company among the Indians increased, a change took place in the duties of the **Postholders. Originally mainly trading agents, they had become, before the British occupation, almost exclusively political officers,** and they were maintained in order to fulfil functions of this kind long after the trade [in balsams, annatto and slaves] had come to an end. *Same, pp. 89–90.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

[Dutch] occupation . . . consisted exclusively of trade and of relations with Indians. *V. C.-C., 22.*

1688. States-General.

Concerning a certain **Company** which is said to be newly formed in Amsterdam **for the purpose of trading to the West Indies.** *B. C., I, 207.*

1731. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I sent your Lordships by Captain Daniel Bellein . . . a sample of the **indigo** made by Jan van der Meers. . . . **I wish** from the bottom of my heart **that heaven might be pleased to bless this plant (as being the surest means of further populating this Colony).** *B. C., II, 12.*

1732. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I sent him [Jacobus van der Berg, one of the Company's servants], above the falls in Essequibo on the 15th October, 1731, with orders to go as far as he possibly could, **to deal with the Indians in a most friendly manner, and further to see whether he could not induce any Chiefs to come here,** so that I might talk to them myself by means of interpreters. *Same, p. 16.*

1733. Court of Policy.

Every possible means is being employed here to cultivate the trade with the Indians, but the many branches into which the nation is split up, and the absence of good interpreters, are great obstacles to success. *Same, p. 17.*

1735. West India Company (the Ten).

We praise and approve all that has been done by the Commandeur with the Governor of Orinoco; . . . and recommend your Honour to use every **endeavour to cause that commerce to increase more and more.** *Same, p. 21.*

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS PURPOSE TO TRADE, PLUNDER AND PLANT—(Continued).

1737. Commandeur in Essequibo.

In view of **the slave trade and the production of fine dye,** this post remains of much importance, since, small as is this beginning, we become acquainted among the Indians further inland, and **this trade may by degrees become considerable.** *B. C., II, 24–25.*

1752. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We have always proposed to ourselves nothing more than to facilitate . . . the commerce which is carried on, not only from here [Middelburg in Holland] to the river and Colony of Essequibo, but also there with the natives [and] Spaniards, and especially with those of Orinoco. *Same, p. 73.*

1769. Prefect of Missions.

I sent him [**a negro slave-trader from Essequibo**] **off, promising that he would** return with his family and **become a Christian.** *B. C., IV, 21.*

1775. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **Post of Arinda** up in the River Essequibo . . . the **only use** of this Post is to get the Indians up the river to become somewhat more accustomed to us, and at the same time **to keep a sharp look-out whether those nations might not be planning something against us.** *Same, p. 136.*

1897. George L. Burr.

Van Meteren points out: "**The United Netherlands . . . endeavored . . .** gradually **to open a commerce with the West Indies,** without seeking to make any conquests there, but rather **to win the friendship of the Indians and to protect them against the Spaniards, . . .** and thus to come into traffic with them." *V. C.-C., II, 48.*

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS METHODS.

——. British Case.

In 1724, the Postholder at Wakepo **mustered Indians to protect friendly tribes in Essequibo from attack.** *B. C., 89.*

The object of these presents was to secure the assistance of the tribes in case of a negro revolt, and to attract them to the neighborhood of the Dutch Posts. *Same, p. 92.*

1724, Court of Policy.

The Commandeur . . . informed the Court that, according to reports received, the Maganout nation were killing all whom they could lay hands on up in Essequibo, and that they were driving away all other nations who were our friends. His Honour maintained that **it was very necessary** for the protection of the whole Colony **to extirpate and annihilate these rebels if possible.** . . . It was unanimously agreed to order Jan Batiste, the **Postholder at . . . Wacquepo, . . . to proceed against the said Maganouts, and to kill or capture all he can find.** *B. C., II, 2–3.*

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS METHODS—(Continued).

1730. Commandeur in Essequibo.

On the 26th May of last year [1729], I received an unexpected visit from a French gentleman named Nicholas Gervais, **Bishop of Orran**, coming from the Orinoco . . . he **expressed** to me **his intention of** making a stay in or about this Colony and **seeing whether there might not be some means of converting the Indians of these lands to Christianity**, if I would grant him permission to do so. I demonstrated to him the impossibility thereof, and, furthermore, that **it was not in my power to grant him such permission.**

You will see from the enclosed letter, . . . how that prelate has unhappily been murdered by the Indians in Aguirre. *B. C., II, 10–11.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Spaniards were beginning to approach more and more up in Cuyuni; but a war having some weeks ago arisen between the Carib nation and that of the Warrows, which is carried on very obstinately, this will stop their further progress, and possibly, **if the Caribs obtain the upper hand, they will be driven somewhat farther away, without our having in the least degree to meddle therewith.** *V. C., II, 101.*

1758. Don Jose Solano.

They [foreigners] enter and exploit the interior and the rear of these provinces to the great detriment of the Royal Treasury and the injury of so many heathen. This harm is chiefly done by **the Dutch of Essequibo, who incite the Caribs to make raids and hunt for slaves**, and they are the cause of the repeated risings in the Missions of the Orinoco and of the constant desertions of Indians already reduced. *B. C., II, 140.*

1778. Colonial Records.

1778. From Plantation Duynenburg.

[Kiltum *i. e.* rum, furnished] to the Indians in their revels, by order of the Director-General, . . . 176 gallons. *B. C., VII, 182.*

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS INFLUENCE AND RESULTS.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The **early attempts of the Dutch to gain a foothold** at various points on the coast of Guiana **ended invariably in failure.** *V. C., 50.*

——. British Case.

The trade of the Dutch with the Indians led naturally **to control** by the Company **of the territory in which this trade was carried on.** *B. C., 82.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

It appears to me that the Dutch were never so eager in their pursuit after slaves as they are at present, and it is precisely on that account that so little fruit is obtained in the efforts made to convert the Indians and Caribs, for, being **counselled by the Dutch not to allow themselves to be drawn into the Missions**, they do not like the villages, and, consequently, retire to the forests. **It was** precisely **owing to these bad counsels that the Indians of the four Missions rebelled in the year** [17]50. *B. C., II, 149.*

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS INFLUENCE AND RESULTS—(Continued).

1777. Augustin Crame [and] Joseph Linares.

This province is bounded on the east by the Dutch Colony of Essequibo and French Guayana. The proximity of the Dutch does not at present give any ground for alarm. **In no way whatever do they belie their peaceful system, nor manifest any ambition to extend their possessions in the interior.** Nevertheless, their explorations have reached the Parime. *B. C., IV, 179.*

1790. Don Miguel Marmion.

On account of various **Indians** having **gone to Esquivo from these Missions to sell hammocks** and other articles, and **brought back in return . . . spirits,** they had a drinking feast, and there resulted therefrom a disturbance, and the Religious of the village of Guascipati killed one of the Indians accidentally. *B. C., V, 114.*

DUTCH OCCUPATION—ITS EFFORTS AND PLANS FOR EXTENSION ALWAYS LIMITED TO TRADE RELATIONS.

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

Throughout the period of this truce [of 1609] I have lighted on no mention of **Guiana Colonies** in any official record, but this by no means disproves their existence; **long after their existence** is certain **the effort to keep them secret is demonstrable,** and they scarcely appear in Dutch official papers till after the treaty of Munster. *V. C.-C., II, 53.*

——. British Case.

The energies of the Dutch were not confined to the area of actual plantation. Hunting and fishing were carried on, and **Posts established in various parts of the territory in question.** *B. C., 29–30.*

1623. British Case.

At least as early as 1623 the Dutch began to establish settlements in the territory between the Corentin and the Orinoco, and from that time down to the acquisition of British Guiana by Great Britain they continually **extended their settlements in various parts of that district.** *Same, p. 78.*

1638. British Case.

In 1638 it was reported to the King of Spain that the **Dutch** were **seeking favorable sites for the foundation of new settlements.** *Same, p. 25.*

1722. British Case.

In 1722 the officials of the Company were **making explorations** in order **to ascertain the nature of the soil in the interior with a view to plantations.** *Same, p. 33.*

——. British Case.

During the period shortly antecedent to 1750 . . . the Dutch records tell of **peaceful development, of coffee, cocoa, and indigo plantations, of exploration, and of trade.** . . . the Dutch were established in the Province of Guiana, and were occupying with their cities and mills the territory from the Orinoco to Surinam, and it was suspected that their design was to make themselves masters of the mouth of the Orinoco and of the nations that dwelt on the river, to found plantations in that district, and to penetrate wherever they pleased. *Same, p. 37.*

CHAPTER V.

REMONSTRANCES AND MEANING OF TREATIES.

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The story of Dutch remonstrances is one of Spanish aggression and **assertion of sovereign rights** in the territory now in dispute, **followed by repeated protests of the Dutch,** and memorials to the Spanish Court, all of which were treated with contempt—answered only by a continuance of these aggressions, by further acts of political control, by further grumblings on the part of the Dutch, by further complaints to which the Spanish Government did not deign to reply, and by final acquiescence by the Dutch in the inevitable. *V. C., 157.*

——. British Counter Case.

The ideas conveyed by this paragraph are entirely opposed to the facts. "Spanish aggression" there was, in the sense that there were occasional raids upon Dutch territory. "Assertion of sovereign rights or political control" by Spain in the territory now in dispute there was none. It is quite true that there is an absence of any official admission by the Spanish Government of the justice of the Dutch Remonstrances and that in many cases no definite answer was obtained. The attempt, however, to build upon this foundation the theory that there was final acquiescence by the Dutch in Spanish pretensions is preposterous. The Dutch remained in possession of what they claimed. *B. C.-C., 102.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

During a portion of the present century, in violation of the Treaty of Munster, Great Britain has occupied a strip of land along the coast, between the Essequibo and the Pomeroon rivers, known as the Arabian or Arabisi Coast. **Venezuela has repeatedly protested against such occupation,** and has, in every way possible, short of war, asserted her rights to the territory so occupied. *V. C., 225.*

Venezuela has repeatedly protested against such occupation [of disputed territory by Great Britain]; and has in every way possible, short of war, asserted her rights to the territory so occupied. *Same, pp. 226–227.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is denied. *B. C.-C., 135.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

The first intimation which **Venezuela** received of the presence of any British in the Barima-Waini region was **at the time of the Schomburgk survey in 1841**; she at once **protested against it**; in consequence of that protest the boundary posts erected by Schomburgk were removed. *V. C.-C., 110.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1580. Queen of England.

Mendoza, Ambassador for Spain in England, made an angry and vehement demand for satisfaction from the Queen, complaining that the Indian Ocean was navigated by the English. The reply that he received was as follows:—

That the Spaniards, by their unfairness, . . . had brought these troubles upon themselves. . . . Her Majesty does not understand why her subjects and those of other Princes are **prohibited from the Indies**, which she could not persuade herself are the rightful property of Spain, by donation of the Pope of Rome, in whom she acknowledged no prerogative in matters of this kind, much less authority to bind Princes who owe him no obedience, or to make that new world as it were a fief for the Spaniard and clothe him with possession: and that only on the ground that Spaniards have touched here and there, have erected shelters, have given names to a river or promontory; acts which cannot confer property. So that this donation of alien property (which by essence of law is void), and this imaginary proprietorship, ought not to hinder other princes from **carrying on commerce** in these regions, and from establishing Colonies where Spaniards are not residing, without the least violation of the law of nations, since prescription without possession is of no avail. *B. C.-C., App., 317.*

1676. Spanish Council of War.

The Council finds itself compelled to [suggest] that a letter may be written to **the States-General** or that they may be given **to understand** . . . the **annoyance** which would be **occasioned** if they were to make **new plantations in the Indies without informing your Majesty.** *B. C., I, 178.*

1688. Don Manuel Coloma, Spanish Minister in Holland.

At Amsterdam and other places of these provinces [of Holland] several private persons are uniting and seek **to establish a free port** in the form of a new Commonwealth, . . . **to the prejudice of His Majesty** [the King of Spain].

The Envoy Extraordinary . . . thinks it his duty to inform you thereof, in order that you may **be pleased** promptly **to prevent the execution of the undertaking they have planned.** *Same, p. 205.*

1693. Council of the Indies.

The . . . Governor of the Province of Venezuela, in a letter of 16th October, 1691, reports, amongst other things, that they have been under arms, both in the city of Caracas, where he resides, and in the port of La Guayra, in that province, on account of seven Dutch vessels of large draught, . . . and more than thirty bilanders of the same nation which were trading there with the greatest boldness possible, and no efforts or care have been able to prevent it, as these foreigners are masters of all the coast, . . . and he lays stress upon the great frequency with which foreigners assemble there.

The Council, in view of this letter, . . . consider it their duty to **place it in your Majesty's royal hands** in order that, upon consideration of its contents, your Majesty may be pleased to give orders **that . . . complaint may be made to the States-General respecting the serious breach of the stipulations in the Peace of America.** *B. C.-C., App., 46-47.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1735. West India Company.

We fully approve the course followed by you with regard to the Spanish Governor of Orinoco, **and recommend** you to go on in the same way with all thoughtful prudence, and **not to desist from the complaint you have put forward.** *B. C., II, 19.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Nine soldiers deserted from the Berbice River to Orinoco . . . On their arrival in Orinoco they joined a vessel from Trinidad which was cruising about there to prevent trade, and captured three canoes from this Colony that were out fishing. . . . The new Governor being due in Orinoco in February next, **I shall send there to claim the boats** and cargoes, **but I am certain that such will be in vain, having profited by the example of the Postholder, Jurge Gobel, whom they had promised** me by letter to deliver up, **but nothing came of it,** the man now living in the Spanish village in Orinoco. *Same, p. 47.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I shall . . . execute your Honours' orders . . . concerning the forts of the Spaniards, and as regards the fishery. I have brought the matter so far with the Commandant of Orinoco, that I believe myself that no further disturbances will occur, but **I can obtain no satisfaction for the three canoes taken away because he pretends that this took place** through a privateer of Trinidad, and thus **out of his jurisdiction.** *Same, p. 55.*

A wanderer of the name of Pinet having gone up the River Cuyuni . . . has made report to me that the Spaniards had not yet undertaken the building of any forts or Missions as had been their intention lower down, but that they cruelly ill-treated the Indians subject to us, continually taking them by surprise in their dwellings and carrying them off, with their wives and children, to send them to Florida; that he had spoken to the Chief of the Spaniards, and had placed before his eyes the unfairness of this treatment, as well as the consequences of it, but that the latter had replied that the whole of America belonged to the King of Spain, and that he should do what suited himself, without troubling about us. . . .

Seeing that all my remonstrances and letters to the Spaniards are of no avail, and no redress is obtainable, I intend to tell the Chiefs of the Indians when they come to me, that I can provide no redress for them, and that they must take measures for their own security. Then I feel assured that in a short time no Spaniard will be visible any more above in Cuyuni. *Same, p. 58.*

1749. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Having written to the Governor of Cumana that if he persisted in the design of founding a Mission in the River Cuyuni, I should be obliged to oppose myself thereagainst effectually, **he has replied** to me that such was without his knowledge, (not the founding of the new [Mission] but the site), and **that it should not be progressed with,** as in reality nothing has been done. *Same, p. 63.*

1757. Director-General in Essequibo.

Complaints having been repeatedly made by the Commandant of Orinoco **concerning the evil conduct in Barima of the traders** or wanderers, as well from Surinam as from here, **I have written** circumstantially **to the** *ad interim* **Governor there,** Mr. I. Nepven, whose reply is awaited daily. *Same, pp. 131-132.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1758. Director-General in Essequibo.

It is with the greatest surprise that I learned from some Indians a few days ago that our post in the River Cuyuni had been attacked by Spaniards, the chief of the said post, his second in command, a creole slave of the Company, and a creole woman with her children taken prisoners, and the house burned down. *V. C., II, 123.*

What, sir, am I to infer from an offence so directly opposed to the law of nations, and to the Treaties of Peace and Alliance subsisting . . . between His Catholic Majesty and . . . the States-General? . . . I am thoroughly convinced that His Catholic Majesty, far from approving an offence of this nature, will not be remiss in rendering the fullest justice to my Sovereigns, and inflicting an exemplary punishment upon those who thus dare to abuse their authority. *Same, p. 124.*

1758. Nicolas de Castro.

The Commandant of Guiana has sent me, with other papers **a letter which you [Gravesande] have written to him, demanding the delivery of the two Dutch prisoners, a negro, and a creole, with their children,** and of all that was found by the guard in command there on an island in the River Cuyuni, which is, with its dependencies, a part of the domains of the King, my master, and on which these prisoners publicly kept up an illicit trade in Indian poitos, although it is incredible that their High Mightinesses should have authorized you to enter the said domains, and still less to purchase Indians from his villages and territories, in order to make slaves of them. This being so, and our action being a justifiable one, **I cannot consent to the restitution of the prisoners** whom you demand **until I know the will of my master,** to whom I have made a report of all that has passed, with papers in justification of my action. *B. C., II, 179.*

1758. Military Commandant in Essequibo.

Having read the contents of the aforesaid letter, [of de Castro] and seeing the frivolous pretexts which are are alleged in order to justify a proceeding so directly contrary to the law of nations, . . . **His Excellency . . . persists, and** now **for the second time demands the freeing of the prisoners and a suitable satisfaction for this violation and insult** done to the territory of his Sovereigns, and that since it seems to him . . . that you in Guayana and at Cumana are ignorant of the boundaries of the territory of His Catholic Majesty and those of the States-General . . . he has ordered me to send you the enclosed map on which you will be able to see them very distinctly. *V. C., II, 128.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **letter** from the Commandant here **to the Commandant in Orinoco has been sent back unopened.** *B. C., II, 174.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The only answer the Spanish Commandant gave to these remonstrances was a continuation of the very acts which brought them forth. *V. C., 158.*

Renewed **complaints by Gravesande were returned unopened,** and his envoys driven away unheard. **The remonstrance of the States General to the Court of Spain was treated with the same contempt.** *V. C., 159.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1759. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

As to the raid upon the Post of Cuyuni by the Spaniards, not only does it exceedingly astonish us, but also seems to us of the gravest consequence for the Colony. For that reason **we shall not fail . . . to make upon that subject the necessary representations to the States-General.** *B. C., II, 174.*

Regarding the raid of the Spaniards upon the Company's Post in Rio Cuyuni . . . after discussion . . . it was **resolved** to request the Committee on Commerce to consider more fully the documents bearing upon the said raid, and also **to instruct the Advocate to formulate their views** thereupon **in a Remonstrance to the States-General.** *Same, p. 175.*

The Committee on Commerce reported . . . concerning the raid of the Spaniards upon the Company's Post in Rio Cuyuni, and that the Advocate had formulated their views in a Remonstrance to the States-General which they submitted for approval to this Chamber.

Resolved to approve said Remonstrance as it stands. *Same, p. 176.*

1759. States-General.

Read . . . the Remonstrance of the Directors of the **West India Company** . . . setting forth that they . . . have been from time immemorial in undisturbed possession, not alone of the aforesaid River Essequibo, but also of all the branches and tributaries. . . and especially of the . . . Cuyuni. That they, the remonstrants, in virtue of that possession, have always considered the said River Cuyuni as a domain of this State, and have, in consequence, built on its banks a so-called Post. With the most extreme astonishment . . . the remonstrants have learnt . . . that a troop of Spaniards . . . from Orinoco . . . had attacked overcome and burned the said Post; and . . . carried off to Guayana as prisoners the Postholder and assistant, as well as a creole man and woman, with their children. That the said Director-General . . . addressed a letter . . . in . . . 1758 to Don Juan Valdés, Commandant of Guayana, requesting . . . reparation for the said outrage. . . . But that he . . . instead of satisfying this just demand, had simply ordered to be written by one Nicolas Castro from Cumana, a . . . haughty and unsatisfactory despatch.

The remonstrants therefore pray for the reasons alleged that Their High Mightinesses may be pleased to cause such representations to be made to the Court of His Catholic Majesty, that reparation may be made for the said hostilities, and that the remonstrants may be reinstated in the quiet possession of the said Post, situated on the banks of the River Cuyuni, and also that, through their High Mightinesses and the Court of Madrid, a proper delimitation between the Colony of Essequibo and the River Orinoco may be laid down by authority, so as to prevent any future dispute.

It was moreover **approved and agreed that . . . the . . . Ambassador** of their High Mightinesses **to** the Court of **Spain . . . be instructed . . . to insist** [as above]. *Same, pp. 176–177.*

1759. Dutch Ambassador at Madrid.

Since the said Commandant (of Guayana) wishes to support, without any good reason, an invasion and hostilities committed upon territories properly belonging

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

to my masters, . . . they have directed the undersigned to communicate the above to your Excellency . . . and they are **confident of obtaining . . . satisfactory reparation for the past and orders for the future**, so that they may see themselves in undisturbed possession as before, of the said Post on the River called Cuyuni. *V. C., II, 136.*

1759. Dutch Ambassador at Madrid, to States-General.

Pursuant to your august orders, I gave information orally of the matter [of the destroyed Cuyuni Post] to Señor Wall, and **yesterday I repeated my complaint against the Commandeur of Guayana by a written memorandum thereof, and pressed for prompt reparation.** *B. C., II, 179.*

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

I am well aware, my Lords, that **to undertake measures of reprisal** a distinct order from the Sovereign is necessary. . . . Although the appearance of some such threat is contained in my letter to the Commandant of the Orinoco, **it has never entered my head to proceed to such extremities.** *Same, p. 185.*

1762. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Concerning the affairs of Cuyuni **we shall shortly present a further Memorial to the States-General.** *Same, p. 211.*

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

I trust that your Lordships will not lose sight of the outrage in Cuyuni. That matter, My Lords, **is of the utmost importance** for many very weighty reasons, and more than any one in Europe could imagine; . . . even if there were no important reasons which compelled the Honourable Company to take an interest in the possession of Cuyuni, I cannot see why we should permit the Spaniards to disturb and appropriate our lawful possessions. *Same, p. 211.*

I hope their High Mightinesses will be pleased to arrive at a favourable Resolution respecting the affairs of Cuyuni, and receive justice in this matter from the Court of Spain.

The reason why I did not claim the boats captured by the Spaniards is as follows:—The settler Jan Dudonjon having been sent by me to Orinoco with special authority to claim . . . a few runaway slaves who were prisoners there, the commandant . . . not only refused to give him a hearing, but forbade him to set foot on shore, ordering him to depart at once. *Same, p. 213.*

Prior to this he had also returned to me unopened a letter which I had asked the Commandant to write to him. Of what use would it therefore be to take further steps? **One cannot even get a refusal when the letters are thus sent back unopened, and the Envoys are driven away unheard.** *Same, p. 214.*

1762. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Up to this time **not the least answer has been received from the Court of Madrid to the Memorial about Cuyuni** presented by us to the States-General. In view of this, **it is our intention to shortly present a further Memorial upon that subject to the States-General,** with addition of what has happened since. *Same, p. 214.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1762. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Notwithstanding all the reasons alleged in your letter, we could have wished that you had duly claimed the captured salters' vessels; a refusal from the Commandeur of the Orinoco would have given us a better right to complain to the Sovereign. *B. C., II, 214.*

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

Since the raid upon the Post in Cuyuni **I have never received one word of answer to all my letters**; some have been even sent back [unopened].

B. C., III, 128.

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

If it is desired to prevent the ruin of the Colony, the three following points should be taken into serious consideration and be put into effect as soon as possible :—

1. To **insist with the Court of Spain upon redress** for the grievances, and to ask there for measures to make those in command obey the orders of His Catholic Majesty, for they really laugh at them.

And **if no redress can be obtained at the Court of Spain, to use reprisals against the Missions**, situated on our frontier, even on our territory; I think they would then be brought to reason. *Same, p. 143.*

1767. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

As to taking efficacious measures against the running away of slaves to Orinoco and elsewhere . . . , we already told you how little effect we were expecting from any representations or requests here in Europe, in view of the result obtained at the Court of Spain, by the representations made at the request of the Presidial Chamber of Amsterdam, regarding the slaves absconding from Curaçao to the coasts of Cora. However, . . . **we have appointed a committee to report** to the Pensionary of this Province about the condition of affairs, in order **that he may . . . lay the matter before** the meeting of **the Provincial Estates and bring** it **about** that the Deputies to the States-General be instructed to urge in that body **that Mr. Doublet van Groeneveld be requested to make the most vigorous representations to His Catholic Majesty**, to the end that the slaves deserting from Essequibo *cum annexis* to the Spanish Colonies may be returned, as has always hitherto been done until a few years ago.

Same, pp. 149–150.

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

We shall have to wait and see what results the solemn oaths and promises of the Governor of Guayana will have . . . because **we believe that all further demands for restitution of the runaway slaves will be fruitless both in America and Europe**, and especially those which your honours seem to think could be made to the Spanish Ambassador. *Same, p. 158.*

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

Don Manuel Centurion, **Governor of Guayana**, . . . **writes** to me that Mr. La Barre was quite mistaken in what he told me; . . . slaves who had fled from Cayenne to Orinoco . . . were really returned by an authoritative order. But **that not any orders had been received from His Catholic Majesty, concerning the restitution of the Dutch slaves**, and that there was no likelihood of such being given. *Same, p. 181.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

Must we, my Lords, regard all this quietly and endure all these insults and hostile acts? Must we see our Posts raided and ruined and our boats attacked upon our own coasts? What is to be the end of this? **There is no redress to be got from the Court of Spain.** Why not exercise the *jus talionis?*

B. C., III, 182.

1768. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We have repeatedly instructed our Deputies in the Assembly of Ten to propose there **that the States-General be again urged to have emphatic representations made to the Court of Spain for restitution of the slaves** who ran away from Curaçao to the coasts of Cora and from Essequibo to Orinoco; but no report having yet been made thereof, we cannot as yet inform you of the result. *Same, p. 184.*

1769, July 6. Fray Benito de la Garriga, Prefect of Missions.

The Missionaries there collected 140 Indians, . . . And they **found in the power of the Dutchman living in the Post of Mornea, three Indian women** with their children, **whom he had enslaved and taken from the mouths of the Orinoco,** as they explained to us, **and from the River Massaruni. These the religious took away** together with others above mentioned, without violence or causing any injury to the Dutch. **And now the Governor of Essequibo finds in this a motive for complaining** of your Commandant-General, charging him with the infraction of Treaties, outrages, and offences, being indignant because last year the same Commandant-General had dislodged the people whom he kept surreptitiously in Barima. *B. C., IV, 19-20.*

1769, Aug. 2. **Remonstrance of the States-General.**

The Company . . . having the . . . direction and care of the Colony of Essequibo, and of the rivers which belong to it . . . had . . . from time almost immemorial been in possession not only of the aforesaid River Essequibo and of several rivers and creeks which flow into the sea along the coast, but also of all branches and streams which fall into the same River Essequibo, and more particularly . . . the Cuyuni . . . which is considered as a domain of the State [whereon] there had been established a so-called Post.

A Spanish detachment coming from the Orinoco had come above that Post and had carried off several Indians, threatening to return at the first following dry season and visit Massaroeny, another arm of the Essequibo, lying between that and the Cuyuni River, and therefore, also unquestionably forming part of the territory of the Republic, in order also to carry off from thence a body of Caribs . . . and then to . . . visit the Company's said Post in Cuyuni.

Same, p. 29.

The Director-General aforesaid had also informed them . . . of the establishment of two Spanish Missions, occupied by a strong force, one not far above the Company's said post in Cuyuni (apparently, however, on Spanish territory), and the other a little higher up on a creek which flows into the aforesaid Cuyuni River.

The Spaniards had begun to carry off the Indians from Moruca, and had made themselves masters of the Company's Post there . . . where from time immemorial the Company had also a trading place and a Post, and which also incontestably belonged to the territory of the Dutch. *Same, p. 30.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1769, Aug. 2. **Remonstrance of the States-General.**

That they, the remonstrants, had further learnt . . . that the Spaniards of the Orinoco River had murdered or . . . caused to be murdered . . . the Company's Postholder of the Post Arinda . . . and also all the Caribs he had with him. *B. C., IV, 30-31.*

That the people of the Orinoco had some time ago not only begun to dispute with the people of the Essequibo about the fishing rights in the mouth of the Orinoco, and thereupon to prevent them by force from enjoying the same, notwithstanding that the people of Essequibo had been for many years in peaceful and quiet possession of that fishery, . . . but that, further, the people of Orinoco were beginning to prevent, by force, their fishing upon the territory of the State itself, extending from the River Marowyne to beyond the River Wayne, not far from the mouth of the Orinoco.

That lastly, . . . the conduct of the people of Orinoco, contrary not only to the law of nations, in taking away and retaining, . . . the slaves which deserted thither from that Colony, notwithstanding that the owners demanded their return formally and most emphatically. *Same, p. 31.*

Decreed that a copy of the aforesaid Remonstrance . . . be sent to . . . [the] . . . Envoy . . . to the Court of Spain. That he be . . . instructed . . . to insist upon a prompt reparation of the acts of hostility committed, and upon the reinstatement of the remonstrants in the peaceful possession of the above-mentioned Posts and other rights, such as the fishing at the above-mentioned places; and . . . upon the necessary measures being taken to prevent such causes of complaint in future; and that accordingly, the Court of Spain may give orders as soon as possible to restore, without fail or delay . . . on payment of the expenses incurred, all slaves who have deserted . . . or who may desert hereafter.

And an extract of this Resolution . . . shall be communicated to the . . . Envoy . . . of His Catholic Majesty, with a request . . . to support with his good offices these representations. *Same, p. 32.*

1769, Aug. 21. West India Company to States-General.

We had the honour to receive . . . your . . . resolution taken upon our Remonstrance of July 17 last, which concerned certain enterprises by the Spaniards from Orinoco against various posts of the Colony of Essequibo; also the impeding and preventing of the fishery for the people of the aforesaid colony, upon their own coasts as well as in the mouth of the river Orinoco; and, lastly, the detention . . . of the slaves deserting from the colony of Essequibo to Orinoco . . . **We saw that you had been pleased . . . to instruct the Envoy . . . at the Court of Spain that he make due representations with** respect to the three aforesaid points, **and insist . . . upon a prompt reparation . . . and** upon the **necessary provision for the future.** *V. C., II, 204.*

1769, Sept. 7. Secretary of State for the Indies.

It is necessary for me to ask information from the Governors of the new village of Guayana and of Cumana concerning the facts which are reported, and to forward the said memorial [*i. e.*, **Dutch Remonstrance of 1769**] to the Council of the Indies, in order that His Majesty may be informed of the exten-

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

sion of those boundaries and about the right claimed by the Republic to the fishery at the entrance to the River Orinoco—a thing as new to me as that the Carib tribe of Indians is conceived of as the ally of the Dutch, and *leur appartenant en quelque sorte.* *V. C., III, 381.*

1769, Sept. 7. Dutch Ambassador at Madrid to States-General.

His Excellency told me he had received extract of your High Mightinesses' Resolution, inclosing the complaints mentioned, . . . that he had given report thereof to the King . . . that his Majesty had commanded it to be placed in the hands of the Secretary of State for the Department of India and the Navy. . . . **his Excellency said he knew nothing of the matter,** and that he **would send the said document to the Council of the Indies, in order to take their advice thereon.** . . . I requested him . . . to send orders to the Governor to discontinue all hostilities, and to leave those of the Colony in quiet possession, as they had possessed the same until now. His Excellency replied to me that, when the advice of the Council of the Indies was received, he should send the same to the Marquis de Grimaldi, and that they would then make report thereof to the King. *B. C., IV, 38.*

1769, Sept. 23. Royal Order to Commandant of Guayana.

The Minister of Holland has presented a note complaining of the proceedings of the Spaniards established **on the Orinoco** against the Colony of Essequibo, as stated in detail in the annexed paper. By order of the King **I send you this document in order that,** in view thereof, **you may,** with all possible despatch, and with all the necessary proofs, **report what may have occurred in reference to the acts mentioned therein,** and what may suggest itself to you on the subject for the information of His Majesty. *Same, p. 46.*

1769, Oct. 23. West India Company to Director-General.

Concerning the enterprises of the Spaniards, of which you speak in your letter, **as also about** the **hindering of** the **fisheries and the detention of** the **slaves deserting** . . . **we have made a very full remonstrance to the States-General,** which has had for a result that on this subject the most emphatic representations have been made to the Court of Spain . . . of which, however, up to this time the effect has been only this, that the Court of Spain has demanded of the Council of the Indies a report on this head. *V. C., II, 212.*

1769. [1897] George L. Burr.

In the formal remonstrance, addressed in 1769, . . . by the States-General to the Spanish Court, a definite claim was made as to the boundary on the Guiana coast. The territory of the Netherlands, according to this document, stretched "from the river Marowyn to beyond the river Waini."

So far as appears in the diplomatic correspondence of the Netherlands, no answer to this claim was ever made by Spain. Spanish aggressions, however, did not cease. *V. C.-C., II, 114.*

The Dutch documents, indeed, know little enough of the Barima after 1768. Storm van's Gravesande did not again urge it as the boundary; and **in the remonstrance to Spain in 1769 the Dutch government described its territory as extending,** not to the Barima, but only **"to beyond the river Waini."** Not even a Dutch trader is again heard of in the Barima. *Same, p. 136.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1770. Don Manuel Centurion.

In the city of Guayana on the 4th of April, 1770 Señor Don Manuel **Centurion,** Commandant-General . . . **declared: That** having seen the declarations and inquiries whereof these "Autos" consist **he** approved them and **considered** them **sufficient** for **the proofs** which by order of the King he has been instructed to draw up respecting the complaints made to His Majesty by the Minister of Holland **concerning the proceedings of the Spaniards of Orinoco against the Colony of Essequibo,** and therefore ordered that a complete copy of this report be taken by us the witnesses, the original should be sent to the King our Lord. *B. C., IV, 69.*

1770. Commandant of Guayana.

From the two judicial documents enclosed, your Excellency will see proved that the Director of the Colony of Essequibo, Laurence Storm van **Gravesande, has wished to alarm the States-General with false charges, on which the Republic of Holland has founded the complaints presented through their Minister** in Madrid, in reference to the proceedings of the Spaniards of Orinoco against that Colony. *Same, p. 70.*

1770. Council of the Indies.

The Minister of Holland having complained of the aforesaid proceedings against the Colony of Essequibo, . . . **Instructions have also been issued** to the Commander of Guiana and to the Governor of Cumaní to **have ready the matter in reference to the** subject of the **complaint of the Minister of Holland.** This letter and documents to be sent to the Council.

V. C.-C., III, 80-81.

1772. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have . . . **written** to the Governor [of Orinoco] . . . **asking** him **for the restitution of the slaves. I am certain** that this is in vain, and **that no attention will be paid to this demand.** *B. C., IV, 100.*

1773. Dutch Ambassador at Madrid.

I have been honoured with your High Mightinesses' Resolution, . . . whereby **I am desired,** in writing, **to renew the complaints of the running away of slaves from the possessions of the Netherlands** West India Company **to the Spanish possessions.**

I shall not neglect to make . . . earnest remonstrances, according to the tenour of your High Mightinesses' highly respected Resolution, and to give, as speedily as may be, information of the result of my commission. *Same, p. 120.*

1774. Proceedings as to Complaint by the Dutch Minister.

Having placed these proceedings and annexes in the hands of **the Attorney-General,** as directed, said attorney, in his answer of the 6th of August, 1774, said: That, in the proceedings instituted, in consequence of the pretensions of the Minister of Holland assuming his right or dominion on his part to fish in that portion of Orinoco river, and that he was disturbed and unjustly ejected by the subjects of His Majesty, he recalls the fact that, in order **to carry out the Royal order of September 10, 1769, he requested from the Secretary of the Universal Department of Indies,** as well as from the Council, **all the documents** and antecedents to be found in connection with the subject. *V. C., II, 428.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1774. Proceedings as to Complaint by the Dutch Minister.

That it was done and that **he received a large amount of papers,** letters, and documents, and that having taken them all into mature consideration he found that it was a protracted matter, wanting close attention and considerable time, that he needed for the discharge of his duties, **and** in order to avoid this inconvenience he **suggested that the whole affair should be submitted to a Relator** of the pleasure of the Council, so as to take special notes, and an abstract of all the antecedents and facts up to the present time, and when that had been done, to send it back to him (the Attorney-General) so as to submit his further views and report to his Majesty.

And **the Council having accepted this suggestion** by decree of the **1st of September, 1774, all the proceedings were delivered to me** for the purpose already explained by the answer of the Attorney-General. **That was the result.**

V. C., II, 428-429.

1774. Report of Fiscal on Complaints by Dutch Minister.

The Fiscal, for the *Expediente,* necessitated by the Dutch Minister, wishing to allege full right and dominion in the Colony of Essequibo and fishery in that part of the River Orinoco, and that your Majesty's subjects trouble and disturb it unjustly, states that, in order **to comply with the orders** expressed in His Majesty's **Royal Order of the 10th September, 1769,** concerning this affair, **he requested that all documents and data that might serve to elucidate this matter,** and had any connection whatever therewith, should be sought for in the Department of the Council of the Indies, as well as in that of the Secretary of State, and **be added to the file.**

This was effectively **complied with by the transmission of a mountain** ("crecido cumulo ") **of papers, despatches, letters and documents;** and the Fiscal, having devoted himself to their examination, finds that the proper study and discernment of all these is a very long affair, in which a great part of his time, that he requires for the due transaction of other and very important affairs of his office, would be uselessly consumed. Consequently, **he is of opinion that** to avoid this inconvenience, and that the greatest exactness may be attained, the whole affair should be placed in the hands of a competent person chosen by the Council, so **that a circumstantial commentary and abstract of all the documents,** and whatever else there may be therewith connected at the present time, **be drawn up, and** on its conclusion **the whole returned to the Fiscal for his opinion and judgment,** and whatever else may be necessary to inform His Majesty.

V. C., II, 429.

1775. Mar. 2. Resolution of States-General.

The West India Company . . . had expected that, after the repeated representations which at their request the States-General had been pleased to make **to the King of Spain, . . . His Majesty** the King **would at last have given such orders that those well-founded complaints might have been removed;** but that **to their sorrow they had learned that all the representations made by the States-General had hitherto remained fruitless.** That although no such agreeable prospect was held out to them as that further remonstrance might attain the desired success, they, however, felt it had become their duty afresh to bring to their High Mightinesses' knowledge the new complaints which they had lately received from the Director-General,

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

Essequibo, not alone with respect to fugitive slaves, but even that the Spaniards had come under and at the Posts of the said West India Company, and there had forcibly carried away or killed the free Indians. *B. C., IV, 132.*

And it is therefore approved and decided: that copy of the letter aforesaid shall be sent to . . . their High Mightinesses' Envoy to the Court of Spain, and that a letter be written to represent this.

That **their High Mightinesses had hoped and expected that some attention would have been paid to the numerous complaints** from time to time made of the retention of fugitive slaves, and of the refusal to give them back.

Their High Mightinesses . . . would not, considering the slight regard which has hitherto been paid to all their representations on this subject, have again troubled his said Majesty thereon . . . but that they are compelled . . . to make a renewed appeal to His said Majesty, in order that he may be pleased to at once issue order against such outrages. . . . That the servants of His said Majesty in the West Indies, not satisfied with affording a place of shelter for fugitive slaves, have gone so far that they have come even under and to the Posts of the Colony of Essequibo to carry off by force or to slay all the free Indians thereabout; that their High Mightinesses are perfectly persuaded that His Majesty will not approve, or yet permit, such a mode of action, and that . . . he will give the orders requisite to obviate the consequences which might possibly spring therefrom.

That undertakings of this nature are so prejudicial and ruinous to the Colonies of the State that they should be compelled to take measures to repulse these violent acts; . . . that men cannot refrain from using the means they have at hand to defend themselves; and that their High Mightinesses therefore, to prevent all estrangements between officers on either side, request, in the most entirely friendly and earnest manner, that the necessary precautions may be taken; . . . that no free Indians may be carried away by violence from, or ill-treated in, the Colonies of the State, but also that the retention of fugitive slaves may be effectually prevented. *Same, p. 133.*

1775, April 10. Spain's answer to States-General's Resolution of Mar. 2, 1775.

I am obliged to repeat to you that which I said by order of the King, . . . that a very long time has elapsed since it was decreed in Spanish America that slaves who became fugitives from Protestant Colonies with the intention of embracing the Catholic religion, should remain free. Wherefore this has been observed, and is still observed, in all the dominions of the King in these regions, without any possibility of altering this incontestable practice.

But **with regard to the outrage which you assure me that Spanish subjects have committed in the Dutch Colonies,** in taking by force or killing free Indians, I must declare to you that these acts of violence have caused the King much surprise, and that **his Majesty has ordered the Ministry of the Indies to make the most minute inquiry into the fact,** and to proceed to the condign punishment of the aggressors. *Same, pp. 135–136.*

1776. West India Company (Amsterdam Chamber).

They were somewhat reluctant to address themselves in this connection to the States-General, because **the States-General had more than once caused repre-**

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

sentations to be made to the Spanish Court upon this subject, but without result. That however, they thought it best to bring the matter unofficially before the Ministry at the Hague, and get an expression of its opinion. *B. C., IV, 141.*

1776. West India Company (the Ten).

As regards the petitioners' complaint about the desertion of the slaves . . . and also of the procedure of the Spaniards . . . the States-General . . . at various times have given the necessary orders to their Minister at the Spanish Court to induce His Majesty the King of Spain to cause an end to be put to the complaint made against the Spaniards.

The representations made having been fruitless, the States-General . . . adopted a very urgent Resolution but . . . all has been fruitless, and . . . the Spaniards on the Orinoco are acting more and more unreasonably and boldly. *Same, p. 160.*

Of a Treaty with the Court of Spain there is as yet no ground for hope. *Same, p. 161.*

1776. Charles Teuffer, Envoy from Essequibo to Orinoco.

After many slaves of the Colony of Essequibo had run away to Rio Orinoco, a Spanish province, the Council of the River Essequibo resolved to send an Envoy to the Governor of Orinoco, in order to claim the runaway slaves and have them delivered up to him. The Council was pleased to honour me with that commission. *Same, p. 171.*

The Governor . . . received me very graciously . . . He told me that he was much grieved at his inability to satisfy the demands of our Court to give back to us the slaves who have come here from our Colonies; . . . that by the latest orders His Majesty declared free any slave who should come to place himself under the protection of his domains. *Same, p. 172.*

I told him that the States-General had received an answer from Madrid that his Majesty would give orders . . . to return to us our slaves. Don Manuel told me that such orders had not yet arrived.

All the propositions I made to the General in order to induce him to give effect to my commission were in vain. He protested to me that, though he was well aware of the prejudice which our Colonies suffered through the frequent absconding of our slaves, it was not in his power to remedy it, as he was not at liberty to act against the orders of the King without the risk of incurring his displeasure. But he told me that I should in his name assure our Governor and the Council that when he arrived in Europe he would not fail personally to make representations on this subject to His Majesty, and that if the Company would address itself to his Court he was not doubtful of good success. He advised me at the same time that we should never make mention of the Indian slaves; that he was fully persuaded His Majesty will never consent to having them sold, because every Indian, of whatever nation he be, was regarded as a Spanish subject, and consequently as free and in no way subject to slavery. *Same, p. 173.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—Continued).

1779. Julian de Arriaga.

In consequence of what was set forth by the Council of the Indies, in a "Consulta" of the 27th October of the past year, in regard to reporting upon the **complaints made by the Dutch Minister on account of the proceedings of the Spaniards of the Orinoco against the Colony of Essequibo**, it is necessary that the documents referring thereto be examined, and it is requested they be sent to him; . . . **I herewith transmit** to your Excellency, by command of the King, **the** said **documents.** *V. C., II, 433–434.*

1780. King of Spain.

Inciarte is to return . . . for the purpose of occupying and settling the places specified in his annexed Report of the 27th November last, and making the provisional fortification which he considered needful, ejecting the Dutch from the post or advance guard-house, which they have built on the road of the River Moruca. It is to be understood that **if the Director or Governor of Essequibo should complain thereof,** the answer is to be given that the proceedings in the matter are in accordance with the general laws and instructions for the good government of our Indies, which do not permit such intrusion of foreigners in the Spanish dominions, for **this is the reply that will be given here if any complaints or claims should be lodged by the States-General of Holland.** *B. C., IV, 212.*

1781. Governor of Guiana to Director-General in Essequibo.

You complained of Mr. Mateo, who, . . . being in the mouth of the river Essequibo, had taken possession of a little boat with five negro slaves, . . . and of another with three negro slaves; . . . that, furthermore, . . . some Spaniards, doubtless by compulsion of the aforesaid Mateo, had taken possession of a small schooner; . . . moreover, that they have seized another boat; . . . which acts your Excellency brought to my notice, in order that I should command the aforesaid Mateo to depart at once from the aforesaid coast, and should place at Your Excellency's disposal . . . everything which Mateo or the Spaniards who were there, may have stolen and carried off . . .

V. C., II, 239.

I make known to Your Excellency that **the authority to pass judgment or decide as to the prizes made by the privateers of this province belongs exclusively to the Intendent-General thereof, Don Josef de Abalos, residing in Caracas, to whose high Court all must address themselves who . . . have complaints to make.** *Same, p. 240.*

1784. Dutch Ambassador at Madrid.

Having made myself conversant with **the complaints made anew** and **in these days,** on account of the West India Company, **of the** continual and increasing **desertion of slaves in Essequibo and Demerara,** I spoke . . . to the said Minister of State, on the said subject repeatedly, and in the most emphatic terms, and have placed in his hands a second note relative thereto.

Doubtless this Court will not be otherwise than reluctant to assent thereto.

B. C., V, 22.

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1785. Report of Spanish Council of State on Dutch Remonstrance.

The Fiscal has examined the papers put together in this Department in consequence of a certain Memorial presented to His Majesty by the Dutch Minister, **complaining of the proceedings of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco against the Dutch Colony of Essequibo.** This Memorial was sent confidentially with a Royal order, dated the 10th September, 1769, that it should be examined as soon as possible by the Council, and His Majesty advised.

To this Memorial was annexed, as a precedent, another file of papers, made up and laid before His Majesty on the 9th May of the year 1768. *B. C., V, 33.*

It was agreed on the 6th August, 1774, that the whole should be given to the précis-writer to make a complete abstract, and this has been done.

At present, the papers call for no steps, for the long period of more than fifteen years having passed without any fresh demand having been made for a reply upon this question by the Dutch Minister, it **induces one to believe that that Republic, being better informed of the want of just grounds for the claim made they have already abandoned it.**

It appears that what ought to be done is to wait until future events show what is the best course. *Same, p. 34.*

——. Council of the Indies.

In 1769 the Ambassador of Holland appeared, complaining of the proceedings of the Spaniards established on the Orinoco, **against the Dutch Colony of Esquibo; presenting** in support of his complaint **a memorial** . . . in which, supposing that from time immemorial the Republic of Holland was in possession not only of the Esquibo river, and of many other rivers and streams emptying into the sea along this portion of the coast, but also of all the branches and rivulets emptying into the former, particularly the northern one called Cayoeni or Coyuni, on whose bank, considered as dominion of the State, they have maintained a wooden cabin, guarded by a small vessel manned by some slaves and Indians, he set forth that a Spanish detachment coming from the Orinoco, had attacked that Post, and taken many Indians, threatening to return at the first ebb and visit . . . the Maseroni. . . . That . . . afterwards . . . the Spaniards had constructed two cabins, guarded by many troops and one of them very near to the cabin on the Cuyuni river, and had begun to take the Indians on the Maroca, taking possession of a site near the rivulet to the south of the Weyne, between it and the Powaron, where the Company had had from time immemorial a trading place belonging, beyond contradiction, to the territory of the Republic. *V. C., II, 274.*

That the Spaniards had commenced some time back, to dispute their right to fish at the mouth of the Orinoco, and in the stretch of territory between the Marewigni river and the other side of the Wayne, belonging to the State, . . . and that they had been disturbed in their fishing by force, notwithstanding the long time they had enjoyed it quietly and peacefully, . . . and, finally, . . . the Spaniards . . . retained the slaves fleeing from the Dutch establishments. *Same, pp. 274–275.*

The Governors of Guayana and Cumana . . . reported . . . [justifying the same]. *Same, p. 275.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

The Council ordered by its resolution of the first of October, 1774, **that it should all be referred to the Relator.**

The matter remained in this condition up to the year 1785, when, the brief having been made by the Relator, and the record returned to **the Attorney-General,** Don Antonio Porlier, he **stated** in his reply of May 27th of the same year **that at that time there was no action required,** since, more than fifteen years having passed without any pressure being brought by the Minister of Holland in the premises, it was natural to believe that the Republic, better apprised of the want of just reasons for the demand it had made, had desisted therefrom.

V. C., II, 279–280.

1785. States-General.

Received **a dispatch from** the Comte van Rechteren, their High Mightinesses' **Ambassador to the Court of Spain,** . . . making mention, *inter alia*, of the receipt of their High Mightinesses' reiterated order relative to the establishing of a Cartel with the august Court in question for preventing the desertion of slaves from the Colonies of Essequibo and Demerara to the contiguous ones of the Crown.

And further, **that he had now for almost two years allowed no opportunity to pass** either by speaking or writing, **to bring about the conclusion of a Treaty** of this nature.

That he was steadily put off with favourable **promises,** and that they, under all sorts of pretexts, had always avoided, not only to enter upon negotiations, but also, . . . even to give a written reply. *B. C., V, 35.*

1841, August 17. Francisco Aranda.

The Government has been informed of a very singular occurrence, namely, **that there was seen** and reconnoitered at Point Playaso, near the mouth of the Caño Amacuro, **a British flag** with the Royal ensigns hoisted, **near a sentry box constructed for the purpose,** and stationed **on a part of the Venezuelan territory** of which the Government has always been in quiet and peaceable possession.

The Government is still ignorant of the motive or object of this incident, as also whether it proceeded from orders of British authorities, or was the spontaneous act of private individuals. At the same time it cannot be indifferent with regard to an occurrence which manifests the introduction of foreigners into our territory without the permission or assent of the competent authorities. . . .

Therefore . . . **I hasten to request you** will be pleased **to communicate to me** what you may know or consider conclusive to **enlighten the Government on the subject.** *V. C., III, 196.*

1841, Sept. 3. Francisco Aranda.

The Government has thought proper to appoint a Commission . . . to proceed to Demerara . . . for the purpose of investigating the origin and design wherewith the British flag and other marks as of possession were planted at Barima and Amacuro; to enter into explanations . . . respecting the limits between Venezuela and the British Colony, and also to **make suitable** reclamations and **protests in defence of the rights of the Republic.**

Same, p. 196.

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1844. Mr. Macrae.

They [Indians] are the aborigines of the country, and we inherited from them our possessions in this colony. (Mr. Arrindell laughed aloud). It appears to have excited the risible faculties of the honorable member, but I repeat that we do hold our title from them originally. *V. C.-C., III, 181.*

1844. Mr. Arrindell.

The small portion of **land which we occupy was obtained first by conquest, and then by treaty,** and we have nothing to do with the treaty.

Same, p. 184.

1875. Governor Longden.

A colored creole girl . . . was murdered . . . in the city of Georgetown by another colored creole, named Thomas **Garrett.** Both . . . were British subjects. , . . The murderer . . . **was apprehended** in a house on the banks of the **Amacura** River. *B. C., VI, 213.*

1875. Venezuelan Consul-General.

Garrett was . . . under the protection . . . of the Republic . . . police officers . . . declared him their prisoner in the name of Her Majesty, the Queen of Great Britain, put him in irons . . . and . . . proceed[ed] . . . to Georgetown. . . . **It is the bounden duty of my government . . . to protest, as it does protest.** . . . I am ordered by my Government to request that your Excellency will please to order . . . that the police of the Colony shall take back Thomas Garrett to the place where they arrested him. *Same, pp. 214–215.*

1875. Governor Longden.

Garrett was **tried at** the Supreme Court . . . in this city [**Georgetown**] . . . **and** . . . **sentenced** to penal servitude for life. *Same, p. 216.*

1884. [1886] Guzman Blanco.

In October, 1884 . . . **some English** . . . penetrated into places at all times the property of Venezuela, erected posts, put up placards declaring the British laws to be there in force, changed some officers of the Republic for others of their own selection, attempted to put under their orders Venezuelan functionaries, and promised to return in force to have their ordinances complied with. In fact, they **returned, to proceed with the series of acts** begun, **without taking the least notice of the remonstrances of the Venezuelan authorities.** Not satisfied with this, they took away a Commissary of the Republic . . . Robert Wells . . . at Amacuro. *V. C., III, 236–237.*

1885. British Legation at Caracas.

I am directed by her Majesty's Government to draw the attention of that of Venezuela to the proceedings of the agents of the Manoa Company in certain districts, the sovereignty of which is equally claimed by Her Majesty's Government and that of Venezuela.

Earl Granville further **instructs me to request the Venezuelan Government to take steps to prevent the agents of the Manoa Company . . . from asserting claims to, or interfering with, any of the territory claimed by Great Britain.** *Same, p. 242.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1885. British Legation at Caracas.

Her Majesty's Government, in the event of that of Venezuela declining to move in this matter, would to their great regret, feel themselves under the necessity of adopting measures for preventing the encroachment of the Manoa Company. *V. C., III, 242.*

1887. Senor Urbaneja.

The President of the Republic demands from Her Majesty the evacuation of Venezuelan territory from the mouth of the Orinoco to that of the Pomaroon, which she, Great Britain, has unjustly occupied with the understanding that if by the 20th February next, at the meeting of Congress, to whom the Government is bound to render an account of everything, no reply should be received or should be negative, the diplomatic relations between the two countries shall be broken off. *B. C., VII, 124.*

1887. Jesus Muñoz Tebar and Santiago Rodil.

As it has reached the notice of the Government of the Republic that on the Amacura, Barima, Guiama, and other river districts, there are at present several parties who it is said have been appointed Rural Constables by the British authorities of the Colony, the President of the Republic has also resolved that these facts be investigated, and that orders be given for the immediate reorganization of the parishes of the territory situated on the banks of the said rivers.

In view, therefore, of these instructions, and after the preliminary works of the erection of a lighthouse at Punta Barima had been made, we proceeded to survey the Amacura River, the Brazo Barima, the Mora passage, and the Barima, Aruca, and Guaima Rivers; and, in fact, Sir, we found in the neighborhood of the Amacura a wooden house thatched with straw, said to have been built by orders of the authorities of this Colony, and two men who handed us their precepts as Rural Constables, signed by Michael McTurk, Stipendiary Magistrate. In the neighborhood of Aruca we were informed there was another Rural Constable. . . . In Cubana on the banks of the Guaima River, a missionary, the Rev. Walter Heard, had some seven years ago built with public subscriptions, a small house that is in actual use as a church and schoolroom.

In all those places . . . we have protested in the name of Venezuela against such proceedings, and declared to the inhabitants that all those districts belong to Venezuela, and not to Her Brittannic Majesty. *V. C., III, 183.*

1890. British Foreign Office.

Lord Salisbury has received with great surprise . . . the intelligence of the issue by the Government of Venezuela of two Decrees . . . purporting to establish Venezuelan Administrations in the district between Point Barima and the River Pomaroon, and in the neighbourhood of the point where the Cuyuni debouches into the Essequibo. Such notices can have no practical effect, and any attempt to put them into execution could only be regarded as an invasion of the Colony, and dealt with accordingly.

He **cannot but regard** the publication of **the Decrees** at the present moment **as entirely inconsistent with the professed desire of the Venezuelan Government to come to a settlement** of pending differences **by** means of **friendly discussion.** *B. C., VII, 140.*

REMONSTRANCES AND ACTS OR DECLARATIONS OF LIKE NATURE—(Continued).

1890. R. F. Seijas.

Against the British usurpation of our territory . . . I hereby **solemnly and publicly protest.**

I further declare that the Government of the United States of **Venezuela have already protested, and by these presents do protest,** against all and every act or acts which are known to the Government of the Republic, and named in the foregoing twelve Articles; that the Government of Venezuela disowns the legality which may be imputed to such acts, which are and will always be null, void, and of no value whatever. *B. C., VI, 246.*

1893, Confidential Agent of Venezuela.

Territory which Venezuela considers exclusively her own of which she has been in peaceful possession, and **which the British Colony has only during the last few years invaded with acts of jurisdiction, which have called forth repeated energetic protests from the Government of the Republic.**

I am only doing my duty in again protesting most solemnly, in the name of the Government of Venezuela, **against the proceedings of the Colony of British Guaina,** which constitute an invasion of the territory of the Republic. *V. C., III, 303.*

1896. Richard Olney.

Venezuela's claims and her protests against alleged British usurpation have been constant and emphatic, and have been enforced by all the means practicable for a weak power to employ in its dealings with a strong one, even to the rupture of diplomatic relations. *Same, p. 308.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TRUCE OF 1609.

——. British Counter Case.

At the time of the truce in 1609 the **Dutch maintained their right to found settlements in any part of South America not actually occupied** and possessed **by Spain,** and never abandoned that position. It was maintained by them in all the negotiations leading up to the Treaty of Munster, and received sanction once again in the definite terms established by that Treaty. *B. C.-C, 35.*

1608. Instructions to Marquis de Spinola.

In granting them [Dutch] **liberty to trade with Spain,** as you may, on the same terms enjoyed by the French and English, they will have to absolutely renounce that of the East and West Indies, and pledge themselves to punish those of their subjects who shall make bold to undertake that voyage. *B. C.-C., App., 318.*

1608. Report on Negotiations for Truce of 1609.

The Rapporteurs asked what should be resolved, and that being left to **the** afore-written President, he replied that he thought a Resolution should now be taken . . . concerning traffic, which, since it was becoming more lively, was a point of greater importance; . . . the Commissioners, being interrogated, declare their opinion to be that these lands should have **free traffic** everywhere **in the** realms and **lands of** the King of **Spain** and Archdukes and everywhere where they had free traffic before the war, but not in the East Indies. Whereupon the Rapporteurs replied that the Lords States intend that these lands shall

MEANING OF TREATIES—TRUCE OF 1609—(Continued).

have free traffic and trade not only in the realms and lands of the King of Spain and Archdukes but also in the East Indies, and everywhere else where they at present trade free and have traded and trafficked during the war as being *Juris Gentium*.

Against that the Commissioners said that the most principal cause which hath moved the King of Spain to this peace negotiation is because he desired to have the East Indies free for himself, which the Lords States ought not to refuse.

B. C.-C., App., 318.

1608. Instructions for Reply by States-General to demand by Spain.

The States have considered the second point of their paper, in which is proposed the **abandonment of navigation to** the East and **West Indies**, concerning which the negotiations are at present in abeyance, and that their Might, inesses' determination, purpose, and intention is to avail themselves of the said navigation, and to **continue it** by means of peace, truce or war—leaving the same to their option without renouncing the same in any way. *Same, p. 319.*

1609. What passed between the Ambassadors at Antwerp as to the Truce.

[President Richardot] . . . told us that it was sufficient that the Truce should be general in all parts, without distinction of places or persons. . . . And with regard to commerce, that it should be limited and restricted, so far as concerned the kingdoms and countries of the King of Spain, to Spain and the countries which it holds in Italy. Since with regard to the localities, places, ports, and harbours which belong to him beyond the said countries and even in the Indies, he by no means intended to allow the said trade there.

Same, pp. 319–320.

We replied that since the Truce was to be general and therefore **in the Indies** as well as elsewhere, it was quite reasonable to also **make trade free and general**, without excepting any localities, places and ports, that the said Lord King holds in the Indies or elsewhere than in Spain and Italy. But they [Spaniards] replied that your subjects [**Dutch**] **have never traded in the places and ports which they [Spaniards] have in the Indies, and** that **in negotiating the Peace** you [**Dutch**] **had neither claimed to have done so.**

Having adjourned in order to see what they had written, and to give them an answer at the next meeting, we found that the draft was not worded in such a way as your security required, and we made another which was rejected by them, then a second which they would also not accept, since we made express mention of the Indies; they saying to us that the King of Spain was indeed willing to consent to this commerce in the said places, but without expressing it; . . . that it would be less humiliation and vexation to him to suffer and overlook the commerce, having granted it by general phrases and circumlocutions than by mention of the word Indies. *Same, p. 320.*

At length, after various discussions upon this article carried on and continued in two separate conferences, we resolved to draw up another document which seemed to us to determine and elucidate pretty clearly this commerce of the Indies, although the word was not expressed in it, on condition that it should be put into the general treaty in the place of the article concerning commerce.

Same, p. 321.

MEANING OF TREATIES—TRUCE OF 1609—(Continued).

Although the article relating to the Indies. as it is inserted in the Treaty of which they have seen a copy is in their opinion so well and intelligibly expressed that it can give rise to no ambiguity, . . . the following article . . . can only be understood to refer to the Indies, and for which reason they made difficulties for a very long time about agreeing to it, and we obtained it only at the moment of our departure. *B. C.-C., App., 321.*

1609. Extract from the Twelve Years' Truce, April 9, 1609.

II. Said Truce shall be **good,** valid, loyal, and inviolable and **for** the period of **twelve years.**

III. **Each** party **shall remain seised of** and shall enjoy effectually the countries, towns, places, lands, and lordships **which he holds and possesses at present.**

IV. The **subjects** and inhabitants **of** the countries of the **Said King,** Archdukes, **and States . . . may . . . frequent** and stay in **each others territory, and there carry on their trade** and commerce in all security, . . . but this always the aforesaid King understands to be restricted and limited to the realms, countries, lands, and lordships which he holds and possesses in Europe and other places and seas where the subjects of Kings and Princes who are his friends and allies allow the said traffic by mutual agreement—and with regard to places, towns, ports, and havens which he holds outside the limits above mentioned—that the said States and their subjects cannot carry on any trade there without the express permission of the said King. *Same, pp. 322-323.*

1609. Secret Treaty demanded of Spain and granted.

Whereas by the fourth article of the Treaty of the Truce made this same day [April 9, 1609], between His Majesty the Catholic King [of Spain] and the Most Serene Archdukes of Austria on the one hand, and the Lords, the States General of the United Provinces on the other, the commerce accorded to the said Lords States and to their subjects has been restricted and limited to the kingdoms, countries, lands, and lordships which the said Lord King has in Europe and elsewhere, in which it is permissible for the subjects of the Kings and Princes who are his friends and allies to **carry on** the said **commerce** at their pleasure; and whereas the said Lord King has moreover declared that he had no intention of obstructing in any way the trade and commerce which the said Lords States and their subjects may carry on hereafter in whatever country and place it may be, either by sea or by land, with the potentates, peoples and private individuals who may permit them to do so, . . . which however has not been couched in writing in the said Treaty; now therefore, . . . their lordships. . . . in the name and as deputies of the said Lord King and Archdukes, . . . have promised, and do promise, in the name of the said Lord King and his successors during the time that the said truce shall last, that **His Majesty will not obstruct in any way,** either by sea or by land, **the said** Lords **States** or their subjects **in the trade which they may carry on hereafter** in the countries of all princes, potentates, and peoples who may permit them to do so, **in whatever place it may be, even beyond the limits determined above and anywhere else.**

Same, pp. 323-324.

1609. Ambassadors of France and England.

We, the undersigned Ambassadors of His Most Christian Majesty and the King of Great Britain hereby declare . . . that the deputies of the said Lords Arch-

MEANING OF TREATIES—TRUCE OF 1609—(Continued).

dukes have likewise consented and agreed that the said Lords States and their subjects **shall not** be able to **trade** at the ports, localities and places held by the Catholic King **in the Indies**, if he do not permit it; that it shall neither be lawful for his subjects to trade at the ports, localities and places which the said Lords States hold in the said Indies **except by** their **permission**.

B. C.-C., App., 324.

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648.

1632. Reply of Provincial States to Articles submitted by States-General.

That the 4th article of the preceding **truce** [**of 1609**] shall be maintained with respect to the East Indies as it was practiced in the preceding truce; and **with regard to** the matter of **the West Indies**, that **they shall be left in the condition in which they at present are.** *B. C.-C., App., 325.*

1633. Articles submitted by States-General to King of Spain, April 1, 1633.

The affairs of the West Indies shall be left in such condition and situation of traffic and war **as they at present are.** *Same, p. 325.*

1633. Reply by Spain to Articles submitted April 1, 1633.

That all points and **Articles included in the Treaty of the 9th April and** in the subsequent Convention of the **7th January, 1610, shall**, save what may be framed in these present negotiations, **be considered as enacted afresh** and inviolably observed, both in and out of Europe, throughout the world.

Same, p. 325.

1633. Prince Henry of Nassau.

Respecting the Articles relating to the Indies, we see no means of any modification . . . **neither** for money nor for any other promises **ought we to abandon the Company of the West Indies, as being one that has deserved so well of the State, and that can still do the interests of the King of Spain so much injury**; . . . we think that on this we ought both to hear the opinion of the aforesaid Company, and to act in accordance with what they, as having the best knowledge of and being most interested in the matter, advise. *Same, p. 326.*

1645. West India Company to States-General.

Those of the Company adjudge that . . . in case of general peace or Truce, the Company should receive an assurance from the King of Spain that it would be honestly kept and that they would remain maintained in their privileges, free navigation, commerce, and exemptions.

That in such Peace or Truce may be included all Potentates, Nations, and Peoples with which Your High Mightiness[es] or the West India Company in your behalf, are within the aforesaid limits of the Charter in friendship and alliance.

That the **Company shall** be able to push their **trade** and traffic in all places **within** the aforewritten **limits of the Charter, where** the King of **Spain hath no** castles, jurisdiction or **dominion.**

That the subjects of Spain shall in no wise be permitted to navigate or trade in any harbours or places where the West India Company in the name of your High Mightinesses, has any castles, forts, and dominion or warehouses unless *vice versa* there be granted to the aforesaid Company similar action in all districts and places under the dominion of the said King of Spain. *Same, pp. 326-327.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1645. Instructions to Dutch Ambassadors appointed to Negotiate for Peace at Munster.

Each party shall remain seised of and shall effectually enjoy those countries, towns, places, lands and lordships **which he at present holds and occupies,** without being disturbed or hindered therein in any manner whatsoever during the said Truce, in which are understood to be included the boroughs, villages, hamlets and campaigns appurtenant thereunto.

The subjects and inhabitants of the countries of the said Lords the King and States shall during this Truce maintain among themselves all good relations and friendship . . . It shall also be permissible for them to come and stay in each other's territories and to carry on their trade and commerce there, in all security, as well by sea and other waters as by land, although the aforesaid Lord King intends this to be restricted and limited to the kingdoms, countries, lands, and lordships which he holds and possesses in Europe and other places and seas where the subjects of those kings and princes who are his friends and allies carry on the aforesaid trade by mutual agreement, and with regard to those places, towns, ports and harbours which he holds outside the aforesaid limits that the above-mentioned Lords States and their subjects shall not be allowed to carry on any trade there without express permission of the aforesaid Lord King.

B. C.-C., App., 327.

We, the Ambassadors of His Most Christian Majesty and the King of Great Britain, and we, the deputies of my lords the States General of the United Provinces of the Netherlands certify by these presents that being this day, the last of the month of March, 1609, assembled in this city of Antwerp, . . . a great difference arose **concerning the commerce of the Indies,** which the deputies of the said Lords Archdukes were however quite willing to allow in the name of the said Lord King in the words and terms contained in the fourth and fifth articles of the Truce, which they said were sufficient to express the said commerce, although no express mention was there made of the Indies from the use of which they have abstained for certain reasons which are of no prejudice to the said Lords of the States, but only concern the particular contentment of the said Lord King, who intends to allow them to effectually enjoy them in all liberty during the Truce. *Same, p. 328.*

We, the deputies of the said Lords States, were unwilling to accept, requiring that the Indies should be expressed by name and the article so intelligibly worded that there should be no ambiguity or pretext for causing any difficulty therein in the future. . . . we willingly allowed ourselves to be used, endeavouring to persuade the deputies of the Archdukes to use the expression that was demanded of them. . . . But they both remained so firm in their opinion that it seemed that the said Treaty would be broken off from this cause. Finally we, the deputies of the said Lords States, declared ourselves satisfied to accept the said articles, provided that the said Lords, His Most Christian Majesty and the King of Great Britain, previously solicited on behalf of the States, be willing to act as guarantors of the observance of the Truce, with an assurance of their aid in case of infraction and consent to pledge themselves specially for the observance of the said commerce as promised and agreed by the said articles, as validly as if the word Indies were therein expressed. *Same, p. 329.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1646. Proposal by Spanish Plenipotentiaries at Munster.

We propose to the said Plenipotentiaries of the said States **a truce like that which was agreed upon in** the year **1609**, following that copy and treaty. And whereas, since the said truce, experience may have shown that it is desirable to take away, add, or explain some of the points already treated, and others which it may seem desirable to introduce anew . . . it shall be permissible to both parties to draw up in a separate note the points and heads they may consider necessary. *B. C.-C., App., 330.*

1646. States-General.

The fifth Article of the aforesaid seventy Articles [of the proposed Treaty of Munster] shall be struck out and in its place there shall be inserted and split up into two, that is to say, excluding the alternative, in this wise, to wit :—

That the navigation and trade to both the Indies respectively shall be maintained pursuant to and in conformity with the charters already given or yet to be given . . . there shall be comprised under the aforesaid Treaty all potentates, nations and peoples with whom their High Mightinesses or those of the East and West India Companies on their behalf are within the limits of their said charters in friendship and alliance ; and **each** party . . . **shall continue to possess and enjoy** such lordships, towns, castles, fortresses, commerce and lands in the East and West Indies, as also in Brazil ; and on the coasts of Asia, Africa, and America, respectively, as **the same respectively do hold and possess, amongst which are especially included** the places taken from this State and occupied by the Portuguese, or **the places which they shall hereafter without infraction of the present Treaty come to acquire and possess.**

Same, p. 332.

With regard to **the West India Company**, the same **shall be at liberty to carry on its trade** and traffic in all places **within the limits of the Charter** granted to them, by their High Mightinesses, either in places belonging to neutral princes and peoples, or **even in places where the King of Spain has** castles, fortresses, jurisdiction and **dominion** ; and the subjects and inhabitants of the King of Spain shall be permitted to exercise similar liberty of trade and traffic both in places belong[ing] to neutrals and in districts occupied by the said West India Company. *Same, p. 332.*

In default of the above stipulation, both the subjects and inhabitants of the above-mentioned king [of Spain] and the inhabitants of this State shall refrain from sailing to and trafficking in the harbours occupied by either one or the other party with forts, lodges or castles, and if any proposal is placed before their High Mightinesses' Ambassadors extraordinary contrary to what is hereabove expressed, they **shall have to give notice thereof to their High Mightinesses.** *Same, p. 333.*

1646. Dutch Report on Peace Negotiations at Munster.

On the afternoon of the same day [December 13, 1646] we visited the Ambassadors of Spain, and delivered to them the amendments and additions to be made in the seventy Articles to be converted into a treaty of peace with six fresh Articles ; . . . they were accepted by the aforesaid [Spanish] Ambassadors with a declaration that they would discuss them at once and meet us promptly with a reply. *Same, pp. 333–334.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1646. Dutch Report on Peace Negotiations at Munster.

Art. 5.—Let this be entirely deleted and the following be inserted in its place:

Each party . , . shall remain in possession of and enjoy such lordships, towns, castles, fortresses, commerce and lands in the East and West Indies as also in Brazil and on all the coasts of Asia, Africa, and America respectively as the above-mentioned Lords, **the King and States respectively hold and possess**, herein specially included the localities and places which the Portuguese have taken from this State and occupied; including also the localities and places which they, the Lords States, shall hereafter, without infraction of the present Treaty come to **acquire and possess.** *B. C.-C., App., 333-334.*

With regard to West India Company it will be permitted to extend its business and trade in all places within the limits of the Charter granted it by the said Lords States, both in the places of neutral princes and peoples, as also especially in the places where the King of Spain has castles, fortresses, jurisdiction and dominion; and the subjects and inhabitants of the said Lord King of Spain shall be permitted to exercise similar liberty of commerce and trade both in places of neutrals and in countries possessed by the said West India Company. *Same, p. 335.*

[December 14, 1646.] In the afternoon we were visited by Mr. Brun, the Ambassador of Spain, saying that they . . . had given us the option of a Peace or Truce, and a Truce having been chosen by us they had given way as much as possible in order to accede to all that we demanded . . . that in a truce it is indeed usual to leave everything in the state in which it is, and for each party to retain what he possesses, but that such is not done in any treaty of peace, and that if we had spoken of a peace from the beginning, they would not have granted everything so liberally . . . that they had not expected that after the lapse of a year from the commencement of the negotiations and of about five months from the agreement upon the aforesaid articles we should seek to place the King in a worse position by a peace than by a truce. *Same, p. 335.*

The King could not agree to the trade in the West Indies; that was quite an innovation, and unknown in the treaties of truce, and since the trade in the Indies was not permitted any foreign nation by any treaty . . . therefore our State could not enjoy what was refused the subjects of the King.

Same, p. 336.

[December 15, 1646.] . . . After nine o'clock in the evening Mr. de Brun sent me under cover the written reply . . . as follows: . . .

To the fifth. That **the Lords States will be permitted to recover all that the Portuguese shall have occupied of theirs in Brazil, His Majesty retaining his rights over all that he had there at the beginning of the Portuguese rebellion.** *Same, p. 337.*

[December 20, 1646.] Mr. Andrada, the Ambassador of Portugal, visited me privately upon the subject alone of the following memorandum . . . containing a **request to include Portugal in our peace,** and to co-operate in behalf of Prince Edward of Portugal, who was in peril of being condemned for crime. *Same, p. 339.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1646. Dutch Report on Peace Negotiations at Munster.

We are informed that Your Excellencies are hastening to conclude a peace with the Catholic King [of Spain]. . . . We request that in them [the negotiations] may be included our Lord the most Serene King of Portugal . . . let our Portugal, like Spain, enjoy a cessation of hostilities and breathing space through the benign effects of a truce of thirty years, otherwise there will be no lasting, safe, or perpetual peace. Finally do you so earnestly demand the release of the Most Serene Infante Eduard that you may receive it. *B. C.-C., App., 339.*

[24 December, 1646.] Received a visit on the same day from the Archbishop of Cambrai and Mr. de Brun, the Spanish Ambassadors, and conferred upon the Articles. . . . Also decided after various discussions concerning the fifth and sixth Articles regarding East and West India to make a fair copy of the Articles agreed upon in order to have them signed by both parties. . . . During this conference Mr. Brun said in the course of conversation: "After the Peace we will gladly make alliance with you to share Brazil, and perhaps more. . . ." After seven o'clock in the evening Mr. Brun returned, saying . . . that they could not grant . . . what had been proposed by them respecting East and West India, consisting of the words "**without being able to extend themselves further,**" which they wished to delete and to add to the words "**which the States may hereafter occupy from the Portuguese in the East Indies.**"

And to add to the sixth Article "As also in every island and continent which the said Lords the King and States respectively possess." That this is their final opinion . . . Mr. de Brun finally said . . . that the retention in Article 5 of the words "the Spanish shall remain within their limits" of itself included the clause "without extending themselves further," . . . and that we ought to be satisfied that if they remained within their limits no obligation should be placed upon them not to extend themselves further; Mr. Brun also said that the words which he desired to add to the sixth Article "as also in every island and continent" are of themselves included in the declaration set down in the fifth Article: "Each party shall retain his lands, places, merchandize in Asia, Africa, America, Brazil, etc." *Same, pp. 339-340.*

1647. Count De Monte Rei.

I suggest whether it would not be **advisable for the sole purpose of accomplishing** the conclusion of **peace with Holland,** to announce a special Embassy to France with authority to make a solemn **request for peace at any price.** . . . If this embassy were received, or even announced, . . . it would stir up the indifferent and negligent not only to obtain the peace with Holland which is of such importance, but a private league for the preservation of Italy. *Same, p. 343.*

1647. Marquess de Mirabel.

What he, [the Marquess de Mirabel] considers to be **above all desirable is the conclusion of the peace with Holland**; and that, with a view to attaining it the **utmost efforts should be made,** though it should be necessary to give new advantages and gratifications to the United Provinces, or spend a large sum of money in encouraging those who might be able to facilitate it, for . . . it is less disadvantageous to benefit the Dutch than the French. And your Majesty having once come to an arrangement with them you have in them people who will fulfil whatever is stipulated, more punctually and religiously than the others, *Same, p. 345.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1647. Marquis de Mirabel.

And he summarises his vote by saying that with regard to the affairs of Portugal, nothing should be listened to, public or secret, and no Article be admitted in the Treaty with the French. And that the **utmost efforts should be made for effecting the peace with Holland.** *B. C.-C., App., 345.*

1647. Council of State.

On various occasions Your Majesty has been advised, and it has also been resolved, that the **first advantage** for this monarchy, in the condition in which it at present exists, **is to arrange the peace with Holland, and this at any price.** *Same, p. 345.*

Count de Peñeranda . . . **hesitates at no means of settling the peace with Holland,** for he much distrusts that with France. *Same, p. 348.*

1647. King of Spain.

Let him [Count de Penaranda] thus be written to, with instructions to use **all possible means to separate the Hollanders from the French, arranging it at any cost,** in which he will do me a great service, from the benefits which will ensue to my Monarchy. *Same, p. 351.*

1648. Treaty of Munster.

V. The navigation and trade of the East and West Indies shall be maintained according to and in conformity with the charters given or hereafter to be given therefor; for the security of which the present treaty . . . shall serve. And there shall be comprised under the above-mentioned treaty all potentates, nations and peoples with whom the said Lords States, or those of the Company of the East and West Indies in their name, are within the limits of their said charters in friendship and alliance, and each party . . . shall remain in possession of and enjoy such lordships, towns, castles, fortresses, commerce and lands in the East and West Indies as also in Brazil and on the coasts of Asia, Africa and America respectively as the above-mentioned Lords, the King and States **respectively hold and possess,** herein especially included the localities and places which the Portuguese have taken from the Lords States since the year **1641,** and occupied; **including also** the localities and places which they, the Lords States, shall hereafter, without infraction of the present treaty, **come to conquer and possess.** *Same, pp. 351–352.*

VI. And as to the West Indies, the subjects and inhabitants of the kingdoms, provinces, and lands of the said Lords the King and States respectively, shall forbear sailing to, and trading in any of the harbours, localities and places, forts, lodgments or castles, and all others possessed by the one or the other Party. *Same, p. 352.*

1660. West India Company.

King Charles I [of England], of illustrious memory, being likewise of too just and too generous a nature to give away and present to his subjects lands and places already possessed and governed by other free nations, his allies.

Unless such should be claimed on the ground that the English nation have settled . . . about that region of America, (namely, in Virginia) prior to and before the Netherlanders. *V. C., III, 367.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1660. West India Company.

If that be given weight, then we think the Dutch nation must instead be preferred, being considered the same in earlier times, namely, vassals and subjects of **the King of Spain**, first discoverer and founder of this new American world, who since, at the conclusion of the peace, has **made over to the United Netherland Provinces all his right and title to such countries and domains as by them in course of time had been conquered in** Europe, **America**, etc.

V. C., III, 367.

1688. Don Manuel Coloma, Spanish Minister in Holland.

The aforesaid Envoy Extraordinary [of Spain] is convinced that your Lordships [the States-General] will not permit His Majesty to suffer any damage there, inasmuch as this would be in direct **contravention of the Vth. Article of the Treaty of** Peace made between His Majesty and your Lordships in the year **1648**, which is religiously observed by both parties. *B. C., I, 205.*

1688. States General.

Concerning a certain **Company** which is said **to be** newly **formed** at Amsterdam **for the purpose of trading to the West Indies**, . . . it was approved and agreed to reply . . . that as yet nothing has been undertaken by their citizens which could give any cause for complaint, and that, before giving permission for the aforesaid establishment, the **States-General will** thoroughly **investigate whether the aforesaid purpose is** in any respect **contrary to the Vth. or to other Articles of the Treaty of** the year **1648**. *Same, p. 209.*

1719. Basnage de Beauval.

The commerce of the Indies was a greater difficulty, because they demanded full liberty to carry it on in places which the Spanish possessed, but the others urged that that was contrary to the constitution and to the laws of Spain by which exclusion from this public and free commerce had been enforced not only against strangers in the treaties made with the King of England but even against a part of the subjects of his Catholic Majesty as also against the Italians and the Flemish. The Dutch conceded that the law should be reciprocal, that the Spanish should not carry on their commerce in the towns of the East and West Indies possessed by the Dutch, and that the Dutch should be subject to the same restrictions. Meanwhile the latter should preserve all that they had taken as against Portugal or that which they should take in future. This article was advantageous to the Republic, because Spain bound her hands, and undertook not to make any new conquests in the East while the **Dutch retained the power to extend their limits far and wide in America and particularly in Brazil.** *B. C.-C., App., 358.*

1743. Marquis de Torrenueva.

Equal attention is due to the object with which the **Dutch established themselves to** the **windward of** the River **Orinoco**, in 5° north latitude, and 325° nearly of [East] longitude, according to Delisle [*Atlas to V. C., map 37*] to leeward of the Island of Cayenne, and in 6° north latitude, and 320° 40′ longitude, with the two forts with the name "Zelandeses" ["Fort de Zelande"] between the rivers named Surinam and Cupenam. And this could be no other than to get nearer to the mouth and banks of the said [Orinoco] river, and to found thereon plantations, which might facilitate their traffic with the new kingdom, and enable them to penetrate by that part to those places and districts which their avarice might dictate until they made themselves masters of the mouth of the Orinoco.

B. C., II, 41.

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1743. Marquis de Torrenueva.

And it being necessary to preserve this mouth as a safeguard of that kingdom, it is no less **necessary to restrain the Dutch from approaching its banks either by land or water, keeping in view** with this object **the Vth and VIth Articles of the Treaty of Peace** with that nation **of 1648.** The mouth of the River Essequibo offers facilities for carrying out those designs, being situated, according to this geographer, in 6° 40′ [North] latitude, and 318° 10′ [East] longitude, and its source in 1° nearly of north latitude, and 316° of [East] longitude, thus the whole course of the river forms a large extent of country, . . . it contains within its limits tribes of Indians to be reduced, many who would then serve as a barrier so that the Dutch might not pass to the west of this [Essequibo] river.

B. C., II, 41.

1753. Secret instructions to Iturriaga.

In respect that **all the territory** comprised **between** the Rivers **Marañon and Orinoco unquestionably belongs to** the two Crowns [**Spain and Portugal**] any establishment of the other foreigners in that place is to be looked upon as a usurpation of their rights, and they cannot show that we have formally recognized that dominion as theirs. For **the Portuguese Crown has only against it the Treaty of Utrecht, made with France** . . . which contain no recognition of dominion, nor formal cession of rights. **Neither on the part of Spain has any cession to, or formal recognition of, the Dutch been made;** to which is to be added the bad faith with which both act, in order **to penetrate the interior,** and draw all possible profit from the two dominions, **against the provisions of Laws and Treaties.** *Same, pp. 87–88.*

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

Has not this [question of **boundary**] been **regulated by the Treaty** of Munster? *Same, p. 93.*

1755. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Neither in the Treaty of Munster (concerning which you gave us your own opinions), **nor in any other is there** to our knowledge **anything** to be found **about this** [**limit** of the Colony]. *Same, p. 102.*

1761. Don Jose Solano.

Nor do I know on what they could found their claims; for though, **by the Vth article of the Treaty of Munster, the dominion** of the countries, fortified places, factories, etc., **was conceded to them which they at that time possessed in America,** on the Orinoco neither they nor any others but the Spaniards alone ever held, or have since held, castles or forts, nor customs duties, fishing, hunting, or use of the soil; nor can they found their right on the tacit or even express consent . . . sometimes given them, to fish in the Boca de Navios and the Rivers Barima and Aguierre, which run into it; nor on the huts which they have built to sun and dry their fish, nor on the navigation which has been furtively allowed them as far as Guayana, or still further; nor can they prove the legality of **the armed Post** they hold **in the Rio Mornea;** . . . **it being prohibited them by the said Treaty** to erect new fortifications under any pretext. *Same, p. 204.*

1769. Court of Policy.

The **invasion of the Spaniards,** as unexpected as it is **contrary** to the law of nations and **the treaties of alliance,** calls for your Lordships' most serious consideration, and requires a speedy resolution for redress. *B. C., IV, 12.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1769. Remonstrance of States-General.

The people of Orinoco, **contrary** not only **to all Treaties**, but also to the law of nations, in **taking away** and retaining, . . . the **slaves** which deserted thither from that Colony. *B. C., IV, 31.*

1897. George L. Burr.

What was meant by the words translated "forts and places"?

The words "*lieux*" and "*places*," "*plaetsen*," are the most general and indefinite terms known to these languages for the expression of locality, and correspond wholly to the cognate English word, "*places*." . . . **The English translation should therefore run, not "forts and places," but "places" alone.** *V. C.-C., II, 1–2.*

What is meant by the words translated **"acquire and possess"?**

"Conquer and possess" would therefore be a truer English translation; and the phrase would seem to imply rather a seizure from another State than an occupation of lands held only by aborigines.

What "places" were in the thought of the parties to the treaty?

The **only places** suggested by the negotiations are those **to be won back from the Portuguese in Brazil.** *Same, p. 3.*

As everything points to the Estates of Zeeland or to their deputies in the States-General as the most zealous promoters of the provisions of the treaty touching the West Indies, this clear intimation that the **Portuguese possessions alone** were **in their thought** in framing the questioned clauses should be of use in the interpretation of the treaty.

By this historical survey it has been made clear, I think, that the questioned clause came originally from the West India Company itself or from its sponsors; that, after sharp scrutiny, it was accepted by the Spanish envoys precisely as it was submitted, save for a possible (but, if actual, most significant) change of **"acquérir"** to **"conquérir;"** that, in the minds of its authors, it had reference **only** to **possessions of the Portuguese**; but that, already in the minds of the French diplomats, and possibly in the intent of the Dutch plenipotentiaries, it was susceptible of ambiguous interpretation. *Same, p. 12.*

What was the policy of **the Dutch** *as to recognizing a right of any other power to lands still occupied only by natives?*

More even than did other Europeans, they **sought their title from the natives** themselves. Their relations with the aborigines of the Guiana coast seem from the first to have been those of friendship and alliance; and, though no specific treaties have been adduced, still less is there anywhere implication, in the accessible Dutch sources, of a claim derived from Spain. *Same, pp. 12–13.*

Was this provision of the treaty ever appealed to by the Dutch in support of aggressions on territory claimed by the Spaniards?

Throughout the century and a half of their neighborhood in South America—a period filled with reciprocal aggressions and complaints—I have as yet found **no instance of appeal to this clause of the treaty by the Dutch.** . . . no such instance is cited by the British Blue Books.

Yet it may, of course, be replied that, while the Dutch might be unwilling, by urging such a claim, to admit Spanish rights over unsettled territory, Spain might still be estopped by the clause from resenting their encroachments.

Same, p. 13.

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1897. George L. Burr.

How have later historians and diplomatists interpreted this clause?

In the multitude of authorities I have consulted I have found as yet **no other interpretation than that it refers to Portuguese possessions.**

Postscript.—Having, since the submission of this report, made search in the Dutch archives, through the whole of the diplomatic correspondence between the Netherlands and Spain during this period, and also through the papers of the States-General and of the West India Company, I am able to affirm this position with much greater positiveness. To other clauses of the treaty I find Dutch appealing; to this never. . . . Had the Dutch been disposed to invoke the Treaty of Munster against Spanish aggressions, they surely could have had no more tempting occasion than was given by the assaults on the Essequibo posts during the latter half of the eighteenth century. Yet I find neither in the protests of the West India Company and of the States-General nor in the diplomatic correspondence with Spain any allusion to that treaty. Once, indeed (September 2, 1754), the governor of the Essequibo colony asked the Company if the boundary between Holland and Spain in Guiana were not regulated by the Treaty of Munster; but they were obliged to reply (January 6, 1755) that neither in that treaty nor in any other could they find anything about it.

V. C.-C., II, 13.

I . . . add what amounts to an official Spanish exposition of this article of the treaty of Munster. . . . Thus argue the Spanish diplomatists in their memorial submitted to the Dutch States-General on December 4, 1786:

"The first of these points was that *Spain should restrict her limits in the East Indies to those which she then possessed*, conceding or leaving to the Dutch *the conquests* in all the remainder;

"The second point agreed on was that Spain and the States-General should **remain in possession of what they respectively occupied** at the time of the treaty . . . on the coasts of . . . America.

"The third point was that the States-General should preserve their possession and rights as to the forts and places which the **Portuguese** had taken from them since the year 1641, as also to the forts and places which the said states shall come to **conquer there hereafter, . . . without infraction of the present treaty.**" *Same, pp. 14–15.*

It seems fair, then, to conclude that:

1. It is **improbable that,** in the intent of its framers and its ratifiers, **the Treaty of Munster conceded to the Dutch a right to win from the natives lands claimed by Spain.**

2. It does not appear that it was ever interpreted in this sense by either Spain or the Dutch. *Same, p. 16.*

What may have been the political significance of these posts is less easy to determine. **Among the forms of occupation specified by the Treaty of Munster,** in 1648, as precluding visit and trade by the subjects of the other power, **was that by loges** (in the Dutch text *logien*). This word was at the time **defined** by the Holland Estates **to mean** warehouses. But it is by this word that **the posts** are described, (notably that on the Cuyuni) in the formal remonstrances of the States-General to Spain, (1759, 1769). The postholder and his one or two white assistants were usually old soldiers and remained enrolled among the military of the colony, at least until the year 1775. *Same, p. 84.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

1897. George L. Burr.

The Treaty of Münster, by which in 1648 **Spain for the first time formally recognized the independence of the Dutch and the existence of their colonial possessions,** makes no mention of Guiana or of any other region by name; nor do the records of the negotiations, preserved to us in great fullness, show any mention of that district. Equally silent are the treaties of the Netherlands with England and with France. Nor are the Guiana colonies matters of discussion in the diplomatic correspondence between Holland and Spain.

V. C.-C., II, 180–181.

——. Venezuelan Case.

By Article V of that Treaty [of Munster], **the Netherlands obtained from Spain a title to what they at that time held upon the coasts of America.** That treaty fixed the boundary of Dutch dominion at that time. British rights to-day, so far as the territory in dispute is concerned, are what Dutch rights were two hundred and fifty years ago—no more. *V. C., 72.*

The effect of this treaty [of Munster] was two-fold: on the one hand it **conferred upon the Dutch a title to territory which before belonged to Spain;** on the other hand it constituted **an engagement** on the part of the Netherlands **that, as against Spain,** and at the cost of Spain, **the Dutch would acquire nothing more** than they then possessed. *Same, p. 73.*

Upon the restoration of peace [Treaty of Munster] she [**Spain**] gave them [**Dutch**] **a title to territory which up to that time they had held as mere trespassers.**

The extent of this grant cannot be difficult to define: the entire Dutch Colony, if indeed it might be dignified by such a name, consisted of a body of two or three dozen unmarried employés of the West India Company, housed in a fort on a small island, and engaged in traffic with the Indians for the dyes of the forest: at the time when the treaty was signed, they were not cultivating an acre of land. This and an establishment on the Berbice were the only Dutch settlements in Guiana in 1648. Neither then, nor at at any time prior thereto, had the Dutch occupied or settled a foot of ground west of their Essequibo post.

Same, p. 74.

12. By the Treaty of Munster **the Dutch engaged to neither sail to nor trade in any places** held and **possessed by** the King of **Spain.** *Same, p. 223.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is **admitted.** *B. C.-C., 132.*

13. By the same treaty the Dutch engaged to respect the sovereignty of Spain over all lordships, towns, castles, fortresses, commerce and countries at that time held or possessed by Spain, and to do nothing which might be an infraction of the treaty. *V. C., 223.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is **admitted.** *B. C.-C., 132.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Twice, during the latter part of the 17th century, the Dutch, in **violation of the Treaty** of Munster, attempted to plant **settlements west of the Essequibo** River, on the banks of the Pomeroon. *V. C., 223.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

These settlements were not in violation of the Treaty of Munster, but were expressly in accordance with the rights reserved to the Dutch by the Vth Article of that Treaty. *B. C.-C., 132.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Twice during the 18th century the Dutch, **in violation of the Treaty** of Munster, attempted to establish slave and **trading posts on** the **Cuyuni** river. *V. C., 223.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is **inaccurate** to say that the establishment of such Posts was in violation of the Treaty of Munster. *B. C.-C., 132.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

At various times during the 18th century, the Dutch, **in violation of the Treaty** of Munster, attempted to establish, and in some instances for brief periods maintained, **slave-trading stations** near the mouths of the **Pomeroon and Moruca** rivers. *V. C., 224.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is wholly untrue that these stations were founded in violation of the Treaty of Munster. *B. C.-C., 133.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

On March 30, 1845, Spain recognized Venezuela's independence and formally renounced in her favor all the sovereignty, rights and claims previously her own in the territory formerly known as the **Captaincy-General of Venezuela.** Said territory comprised the **region now in dispute.** *V. C., 225.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is **untrue** that the territory renounced by Spain comprised the region now in dispute. *B. C.-C., 134.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

During a portion of the present century, **in violation of the Treaty of Munster, Great Britain has occupied** a strip of land along the coast between the Essequibo and the Pomeroon rivers, known as **the Arabian or Arabisi coast.** *V. C., 225.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is wholly inaccurate. Occupation by Great Britain, which always extended and now extends far beyond the strip of land along the coast referred to, was as of right in succession to the Dutch, and by virtue of their and her independent right of colonization and settlement, *B. C.-C., 134.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Subsequent to the year 1880, **Great Britain, in violation of** the said agreement of 1850, and of **the Treaty of Munster, forcibly entered upon and took possession** of the territory lying between the Essequibo river and the line first published in 1886, since claimed by Great Britain to be the Schomburgk Line. Said territory included not only the entire region which was in dispute in 1850, but also territory belonging to Venezuela, the title to which had never been questioned prior to 1886. *V. C., 226.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is inaccurate. The line published in 1886 was the original Schomburgk line as it exists upon the map drawn by him, and the alleged entry and taking possession of the territory lying between the Essequibo River and that line was no violation of the Arrangement of 1850. **It is untrue** that Great Britain entered any territory belonging to Venezuela, or any territory, the title to which had never been questioned prior to 1886. *B. C.-C., 135.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The Dutch not having come as occupants of *terra nullius*, but as mere trespassers on territory belonging to Spain, **no valid title to the land occupied** by them in the Essequibo river **vested in them until, by the Treaty of Munster, Spain released** and confirmed to them the possession of such land.

V. C., 231.

——. British Counter-Case.

The Dutch were in no sense trespassers on territory belonging to Spain. They **had a valid title** to the lands and settlements occupied by them in the Essequibo River and elsewhere, which title had been **recognized by Spain long before the Treaty of Munster.** The Treaty of Munster was not a release and confirmation to the Dutch, **but a recognition** of the fact that they were settled in Guiana as elsewhere by virtue of their own rights as an independent nation. The Treaty of Munster was much more a protection of the possessions of the Spaniards against the Dutch than a confirmation of any Dutch title.

B. C.-C., 138.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The Dutch having come to the Essequibo as disseizors, and **the Treaty of Munster** having **released and confirmed to them only** such **places** as they then **actually held and possessed,** the territory thus released and confirmed was limited to such land only as was in fact then physically occupied by them.

V. C., 231.

——. British Counter Case.

The Dutch had not come to the Essequibo as disseizors, but as independent settlers. **The Treaty of Munster did not release and confirm** to them only such places as they then actually held and possessed; on the contrary, it recognized in terms their right to acquire further possessions. *B. C.-C., 138.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The places actually occupied by the Dutch in the river Essequibo at the date of the Treaty of Munster having been limited to the island subsequently known as **Kykoveral, the Treaty of Munster released and confirmed** to them the **title to that island only** and the right of free ingress thereto and egress therefrom by way of the Essequibo river itself. *V. C., 231.*

——. British Counter Case.

It is **untrue that the places occupied by the Dutch** in the River Essequibo **at the date of the Treaty of Munster were limited to** the island then, and subsequently known as **Kijkoveral.** Their possessions, as was well known to Spain, extended to many other places in Guiana. *B. C.-C., 138.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

——. Venezuelan Case.

Said **Cuyuni-Mazaruni Basin being a tract of land geographically separate from and independent of the Essequibo** river; and no part of said basin having been in the possession, occupation or control of the Dutch at the date of the Treaty of Munster, that treaty conferred upon the Dutch no right or title whatsoever thereto. *V. C., 232.*

——. British Counter-Case.

The Cuyuni-Mazaruni Basin is not a tract of land geographically separated from and independent of the Essequibo River. The Dutch were at the date of the Treaty of Munster in occupation of part of the said basin, and had practically control over the whole. *B. C.-C., 139.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The **efforts** of the Dutch twice during the latter part of the 17th century **to establish settlements on or near the Pomeroon,** having been ineffectual as well as **in violation of the Treaty of Munster,** cannot be made the basis of title to that region. *V. C., 232.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **settlements of the Dutch on the Pomeroon were not a violation of the Treaty of Munster.** On the contrary, if that territory was not in the occupation of the Dutch at the date of the Treaty, these settlements were directly in accordance with the power of settlement possessed by them as recognized by the Treaty. *B. C.-C., 139.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The efforts of the Dutch twice during the 18th century to establish **slave and trading posts on the Cuyuni** river, having been ineffectual as well as **in violation of the Treaty of Munster,** cannot be made the basis of title to that region. *V. C., 232–233.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **Posts** established by the Dutch **on the Cuyuni** River **were not in violation of the Treaty of Munster.** *B. C.-C., 140.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The **present occupation by Great Britain** of a portion of the territory now in dispute, being **in violation of the Treaty of Munster** and of the agreement of 1850, and having been effected subsequent to the year 1880, in the interior, and subsequent to 1884, on the coast, cannot be made the basis of title to that region. *V. C., 235.*

——. British Counter Case.

The **occupation by Great Britain** of the territory now in her possession was **not a violation of the Treaty of Munster** or of the Arrangement of 1850. Great Britain never undertook to abandon territory over which she had at the time of the said Arrangement complete control, or to abstain from continuing the development of that territory. *B. C-C., 142.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

——. British Case.

The Treaty of Münster . . . included the places which the Portuguese had taken from the States-General since the year 1641, as well as all places which the States-General should thereafter come to conquer and possess without infraction of the Treaty.

The object of this provision was that the Dutch should be at liberty to recapture from the Portuguese all places which the latter had acquired at their expense during the Portuguese rebellion. *B. C., 26.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

By the Treaty of Munster the Dutch received from Spain, in 1648, **a quit-claim to what they then possessed, not to any subsequent extension** of those possessions at Spanish expense. By that Treaty also the Dutch agreed to respect Spanish possessions, and to acquire no more Spanish territory. *V. C.-C., 13.*

——. British Counter Case.

At the time of the truce in **1609 the Dutch maintained their right to found settlements in any part of South America not actually occupied and possessed by Spain,** and never abandoned that position. It was maintained by them in all the negotiations leading up to the Treaty of Munster, and received sanction once again in the definite terms established by that Treaty.

With regard to the **Treaty of Munster,** Her Majesty's Government, . . . submit that this Treaty **cannot possibly be regarded as a "grant"** by Spain to the Dutch of their Settlements, and that there was **nothing in that Treaty to limit the expansion of the Dutch Settlements,** provided they did not encroach upon territory actually held and possessed by Spain. *B. C.-C., 35.*

The **true effect of the Treaty of Münster** was, **first, to confirm the Spanish and the Dutch** respectively **as equal sovereign powers** in the right to hold undisturbed and without molestation the possessions which they respectively held in Guiana at the time of the Treaty; **secondly,** to **control the trade relations** between the two countries as regards their respective possessions; and **thirdly, to** specifically **recognize the right of the Dutch to acquire by conquest or otherwise** further possessions in Guiana from Portugal or from the native tribes, an undertaking being given by the Dutch not to infringe upon or interfere with any territory actually occupied and possessed by Spain. *Same, p. 38.*

In considering these Articles [of the Treaty of Münster] it must be borne in mind . . . that **the Dutch were at the time in a position to make their own terms,** and that **the Spaniards were most anxious to agree to a Treaty at any price,** and had in fact given instructions to their Plenipotentiaries to that effect. *Same, p. 39.*

The suggestion that the rights reserved to and recognized in the **Dutch** by the latter provision were confined to a **right to gain possessions** beyond those which they already occupied only from that part of South America which the Portuguese held, is contradicted by the terms of the Article [V.] itself.

The words: . . . "including also the localities and places which the same Lords States shall hereafter without infraction of the present Treaty come to conquer and possess," . . . are a recognition of the right of the Dutch to extend

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF MUNSTER, 1648—(Continued).

their possessions in South America and elsewhere, only so long as they did not encroach upon the territories actually possessed and enjoyed by Spain at the date of the Treaty. *B. C.-C., 41.*

The words which give the **Dutch** the **right to conquer and possess new places** "without infraction of the present Treaty" are wholly inconsistent with the view that the Treaty was limited by or made subject to Spanish rights to claim as their property unoccupied territories.

The words "without infraction of the present Treaty," referred to the recognition by the Dutch of the actual Spanish possessions contained in the Treaty itself. *Same, p. 42.*

This Article [V.] . . . was inserted in order to give the **Dutch** the **fullest right of taking possession** of any territories, including Guiana, not already in the actual occupation of Spain. *Same, p. 43.*

After the most careful examination **no** single **document has been found to justify the contention that Spain considered that she was making a grant to Holland** by virtue of any paramount title, or that the Dutch understood that they were receiving, so to speak, a grant from Spain of their possessions in Guiana. *Same, p. 46.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF UTRECHT, 1714.

1760. Confidential Report to King of Spain.

As Spain, by the Peace of Utrecht, is not bound to maintain the Dutch in the said Colony, she may in good conscience and Christian policy, consent and **contribute to their expulsion by the negroes.** *B. C.-C., App., 206*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF ARANJUEZ, 1791.

1791. [1876] Senor Calcaño.

In the Convention which they signed at Aranjuez on the 23d June, 1791, . . . where it is clearly expressed that just as Porto Rico is Spanish and St. Eustace Dutch, Coro Spanish and Curaçao Dutch, so all the establishments of the Orinoco are Spanish, and how far? As far as the other boundary which designates what is Dutch, as far as the Essequibo, Berbice, and Surinam.

Here it is **settled by Holland herself that her limits with Spain** to the north **only reach** as far as the River **Essequibo.** *B. C., VII, 94.*

——. British Case.

Senor Calcano further quoted the Cartel of Aranjuez which was made in the year 1791.

Senor Calcano [in 1880] **suggested that the word Essequibo** at the end of the above Article **referred to the river.** A perusal of the Treaty, both in the French and in the Spanish text, shows that **this suggestion is unfounded,** and, further, from the documents which passed during the negotiations for the Treaty it is clear that the words Essequibo, Demerara, Berbice and Surinam were used throughout as the well-known general descriptions of the Dutch Colonies, Essequibo being, as before mentioned, the name commonly applied to all the Dutch possessions between the Boerasirie Creek, situated to the east of the River Essequibo, and the Orinoco. *B. C., 126–127.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF LONDON, 1814.

1814. Convention between Great Britain and the Netherlands:—Signed at London, August 13, 1814.

Article I. His Britannic Majesty engages to restore to the Prince-Sovereign of the United Netherlands within the term which shall be hereafter fixed, the Colonies, factories, and establishments which were possessed by Holland at the commencement of the late war, viz., on the 1st January, 1803, in the seas and on the continents of America, Africa, and Asia: with the exception of the Cape of Good Hope and the settlements of **Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice**, of which possessions the High Contracting Parties reserve to themselves the right to dispose by a Supplementary Convention, hereafter to be negotiated, according to their mutual interests. *B. C., V, 228.*

Additional Article I. In consideration and in satisfaction of the above engagements, as taken by His Britannic Majesty, the Prince Sovereign of the Netherlands agrees to cede in full sovereignty to His Britannic Majesty the Cape of Good Hope and the settlements of Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice, upon the condition, nevertheless, that the subjects of the said Sovereign Prince, being proprietors in the said Colonies or settlements, shall be at **liberty** (under such regulations as may hereafter be agreed upon in a Supplementary Convention) **to carry on trade** between the said settlements and the territories in Europe of the said Sovereign Prince. *Same, p. 231.*

1839. R. H. Schomburgk.

By an Additional Article to a Convention, signed at London, the 13th August, 1814, Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice were finally ceded to Great Britain. The British Empire acquired, therefore, Guiana, with the **same** claims to the termini of its **boundaries as held by the Dutch.** *B. C., VII, 3.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850.

1850. Venezuelan Case.

In the year **1850** Venezuela and Great Britain **agreed that**, pending the settlement of the boundary question, **neither would occupy or encroach upon the territory then in dispute.** *V. C., 226.*

——. British Counter Case.

The existence of the Arrangement made in 1850 is admitted, but no definition or agreement **as to the limits of the disputed territory was ever arrived at,** and at no time did Great Britain agree to abstain from the development of the country east of the Schomburgk line, which she has throughout maintained was her disputed property. *B. C.-C., 134.*

1850. British Chargé d'Affairés in Caracas.

Letters which I have received from Mr. Vice-Consul Mathison, stating that orders had been communicated to the authorities at Bolivar by the Supreme Government to place the Province of Guayana in a state of defence, and . . . that **the Governor has spoken of raising a fort at Barima, a point to which the right of possession is in dispute** between Great Britain and Venezuela.

I have requested Mr. Mathison . . . to ascertain correctly and report to me from time to time whether . . . any occupation be effected of territory claimed by Great Britain, and especially whether any forts or buildings be erected or military posts established at Point Barima, or at the mouth of the Amacura. *B. C., VI, 179.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850—(Continued).

1850. Lord Palmerston.

The **territory in dispute** between **England** and Venezuela . . . Her Majesty's Government **has no intention of occupying or encroaching upon.**

B. C., VI, 180.

1850. British Chargé d'Affaires in Caracas.

The determination of Great Britain not herself **to occupy or encroach upon the territory in dispute.**

The malicious assertion of the occupation of Fuerte Viejo by British troops.

Same, p. 185.

1850. British Chargé d'Affaires in Caracas to Señor Lecuna.

The undersigned, Her Britannic Majesty's Chargé d'Affaires, had acquainted his Lordship with the steps which he had taken to contradict a rumour mischievously circulated in Venezuela that Great Britain intends to lay claim to the province of Venezuelan Guiana.

[This rumour is] not only utterly and entirely destitute of any foundation whatever, but . . . the very reverse of truth.

Point Barima, the right of possession to which is **in dispute** between Great Britain and Venezuela. *Same, p. 186.*

Her Majesty's Government has no intention of occupying or encroaching upon the disputed territory.

The Venezuelan Government, cannot, without injustice to Great Britain, distrust for a moment the sincerity of the formal declaration, now made in the name and by the express order of Her Majesty's Government, that Great Britain has no intention of occupying or encroaching upon the disputed territory; hence, in a like spirit of good faith and friendliness, the Venezuelan Government cannot object to make a similar formal declaration to Her Majesty's Government, namely, that Venezuela herself has no intention of occupying or encroaching upon the disputed territory.

Her Majesty's Government, as before stated, **will not itself direct or sanction any such encroachments** or occupation on the part of British authorities, and should there ever be any misapprehension of its determination in this respect, it would, the Undersigned is persuaded, willingly renew its orders upon the point; he therefore feels satisfied that Venezuela will not hesitate to send positive instructions to the Venezuelan authorities in Guiana to abstain from taking any measures which may be justly considered aggressive by the British authorities.

Same, p. 187.

1850. Señor Lecuna.

Reposing in this confidence, fortified by the protestations contained in the note under reply, the Government has no difficulty in replying that **Venezuela has no intention of occupying or encroaching upon** any part of **the territory,** the dominion of which is **in dispute,** and that it will not view with indifference that Great Britain shall act otherwise.

Furthermore, orders will be issued to the authorities in Guayana to abstain from taking steps by which the engagement the Venezuelan Government has hereby contracted may be violated. *Same, p. 188.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850—(Continued).

1858. Secretary of State for Colonies.

The Governor . . . of British Guiana . . . will not make grants of any land, or issue licences for the use or occupation of any land, lying between the boundaries claimed by Great Britain and Venezuela.

If any British trader or other **British subject shall establish himself on Point Barima or in** any other part of **the disputed territory** without grant or licence, the Governor, . . . shall warn him that **he does so at his own peril;** that whilst the territory shall be in dispute, it would be inconsistent with the understanding between the British Government and that of Venezuela that it should be occupied. *B. C.-C., App., 305.*

As to the course to be taken with any applications for licences to cut timber on the Barima, the Waini, or other waters in that neighborhood . . . **No portion of the disputed territory can be occupied** for such purposes consistently with the engagments entered into in 1850 with the Government of Venezuela by the British Chargé d'Affaires. *Same, p. 306.*

1863. [1894] James Rodway.

In the first half of the year 1863, the dormant gold fever again showed signs of its presence. On the 12th of June a **number of gentlemen** . . . **applied** to Governor Hincks **for** a right of occupancy of a tract of **land on the Cuyuni.** Four days later **the Governor replied that he was precluded from granting them a license,** and that he could only regard them as a community of British Adventurers. *V. C., III, 339.*

1867. Government Notice.

Whereas **in the year 1850 a mutual engagement was entered into by** the Government of **Great Britain and** that of **Venezuela** to the effect **that neither Government would occupy or encroach upon certain tracts of country theretofore in dispute,** lying between the boundary of British Guiana, as claimed by Great Britain, and the boundary of Venezuelan Guiana, as claimed by Venezuela:

And whereas a Company has been lately formed . . . for the purpose of seeking for gold and working any deposits thereof to be found within the tracts aforesaid: . . . this is to inform those British subjects and all others concerned, . . . that **Her Majesty's Government cannot** undertake to **afford protection** to British subjects so employed **in these tracts** as aforesaid, and that all such British subjects can only be recognized as a community of British adventurers, acting on their own responsibility and at their own peril and cost. *Same, pp. 148–149.*

1875. Governor Longden.

Difficulties arose **as to frontier questions,** which were **settled in 1850.** *B. C., VI, 212.*

The sole question, therefore, connected with Garrett's arrest which seems to admit of **doubt** is **whether the declaration of 1850 does or does not preclude either Great Britain or Venezuela from entering upon the territory in dispute between them to arrest a criminal** flying from either territory to evaed justice.

It would be a misfortune to both countries if it should be held that the territory lying between them is a sanctuary for criminals from both to flee to, . . . if

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850—(Continued).

it be publicly held that no criminal can be arrested in the disputed territory, it is only in reason to expect that crime will be encouraged by the immunity from the punishment.

A party of constables was sent in pursuit of **the murderer,** and he **was apprehended** in a house **on the banks of the Amacura** River. . . . The country appears to be a wilderness . . . It is in fact **a part of the disputed territory** referred to by Colonel Wilson in his despatch to Lord Palmerston of the 30th December, 1850, with regard to which he exchanged declarations with the Venezuelan Government that "neither Government should occupy or encroach upon the territory in dispute." As far as this Government is concerned, **this declaration has been carefully observed, and there are no resident British authorities within the district.**

The criminal **Garrett was,** as I have said, **arrested in** the wilderness, in **a country** the possession of **which has by the Agreement of 1850 been acknowledged to be in dispute.** *B. C., VI, 213.*

1875. Earl of Derby.

Declarations were exchanged in 1850.

I have informed Her Majesty's Secretary of State for the Colonies that in my opinion **it could not have been intended that this agreement should preclude either Government from arresting criminals in the disputed territory,** and that it would be most undesirable that it should have that effect. *Same, p. 215.*

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

A murder having been committed at the **Penal Settlement,** which, **according to the convention of 1850** and the proclamation of 1867, **cannot be regarded as within British territory,** the company employed counsel for the accused to put in a plea of jurisdiction, the crime having been committed in disputed territory. The plea was of course overruled, but, equally of course, inconsistently. *V. C., III, 154.*

1881. British Case.

In . . . 1881 . . . the Venezuelan Government had **granted a concession of the whole disputed territory** to General Pulgar. . . . **In 1883 and 1884** . . . the Venezuelan Government granted **the whole** of the **territory between** the **Orinoco and Essequibo** to foreign concessionnaires in two separate grants, which covered the whole area of the territory claimed by Great Britain.

The first of the two grants was to C. C. Fitzgerald who established the Manoa Company. The grant included . . . the whole of the coast district between the Orinoco and the Pomeroon.

The second grant, to Herbert Gordon, covered the whole area between the Manoa grant and the Essequibo River, with the exception of a strip on the west bank of the Lower Essequibo.

These limits were not expressly stated in the grants, but were marked upon the maps which accompanied them. *B. C., 73.*

1884. Governor Irving, Demerara.

The line is not defined by the concession, but **the (Manoa) Company have defined it for themselves** by **exhibiting** in their map and prospectus **the Moruca River as the limit of their grant.** *B. C., VI, 225.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850—(Continued).

1884. Governor Irving, Demerara.

This is a definition against which the Colonial Government is bound to protest. **Its effect would be to sever from the Colony the whole of the territory lying between the Moruca and the Amacura Rivers, within which the Colonial Government has exercised jurisdiction for a long series of years,** to hand over to the tender mercies of a foreign Joint Stock Company a considerable population of aboriginal Indians, many of whom have taken refuge in this territory from Venezuelan ill-usage, and who have learnt to regard themselves as living under British rule and under the protection of British law; and to surrender to a foreign Power a control over the inland water communication of the Colony which would now be a source of embarrassment to the Government.

B. C., VI, 225.

1884. [1895] Lord Salisbury.

Early **in 1884 news arrived of a fourth breach by Venezuela of the Agreement of 1850, through two different grants which covered the whole of the territory in dispute.** *V. C.-C., III, 281.*

1886. British Case.

In 1886, the Venezuelan Government having ceased to observe this arrangement [of 1850], **Her Majesty's Government declared itself no longer bound by it.** *B. C., 18.*

1886. F. R. St. John.

I was . . . able . . . to point out that **the disputed territory commenced at the Amacura** River, ten miles westward of the Barima, and . . . that **the erection of a lighthouse [at Barima] would still constitute a violation of disputed ground.** *B. C., VII, 117.*

I stated that the only instances of British authorities visiting the disputed territories had been, as far as I knew, for police purposes. *Same, p. 118.*

1886. Minister of Venezuela.

This Agreement [of 1850] has remained unaltered up to the present time, since neither of the parties thereto limited it in any way, nor have they made to each other the least communication on the subject from that date.

Now, if such an Agreement means anything, it has not been lawful either for Great Britain or Venezuela to occupy disputed places. . . . But **the rational meaning of the Agreement is that it was intended to maintain the status quo.** It has thus been understood by the Venezuelan Republic, who, though claiming as her own places possessed *de facto* by Great Britain as far as the Essequibo, has left them so provisionally.

On the contrary, Great Britain has continued to advance her occupations. *V. C., III, 235–236.*

1887. Lord Iddesleigh.

Her Majesty's Government . . . do not, however, wish you to say anything further concerning the pursuit of fugitives into the disputed territory by the Venezuelan police, as it is not desirable to encourage the Venezuelan Government to adopt such action.

An attempt **to erect** such **a lighthouse** without the consent of Her Majesty's Government **would be a departure from the reciprocal engagement taken by the Governments of Venezuela and England in 1850** not to occupy or encroach upon the territory in dispute between the two countries. *B. C., VII, 118.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850—(Continued).

1887. F. R. St. John.

Evaeuation by us of territory **between Orinoco and Pomeroon** is **required.**

B. C., VII, 121.

1887. Señor Urbaneja.

It is clear that **Great Britain has violated this Agreement** [**of 1850**], which was her work; that **she has penetrated** into forbidden places, visited the Rivers Guainia Morazuana, and Amacura, and Barima Creek, affixing Notices on the trees on the river banks that her laws were there enforced; . . . that she established in Amacura a public office, . . . sending thither a magistrate in order to inquire into and decide police and criminal cases; that she authorized the working of mines on **Veneznelan territory, and finally appropriated it on the ground,** as alleged, **that the dispute of limits was pending.**

Same, p. 124.

1887. F. R. St. John.

To erect such **a lighthouse** [**at Barima Point**] without the consent of Her Majesty's Government **would be a departure from the** reciprocal **agreement** taken by the Governments of Venezuela and England **in 1850** not to occupy or encroach upon the territory in dispute between the two countries. *Same, p. 125.*

1887. Lord Salisbury.

The Venezuelan Government . . . require the evaeuation by this country **of the territory** situated **between** the **Orinoco and Pomeroon** Rivers.

Her Majesty's Government . . . are **not prepared to aeeede to the demand.** *Same, p. 125.*

1887. Señor Urbaneja.

On the 12th instant, . . . you communicate to me by order of the Government of Her Majesty, that the latter having been informed of the recent **visit of two Veneznelan Commissioners** to that portion of the territory which is claimed by **Great Britain** as part of British Guiana and of what they there did, **will not permit any interferenee with British subjects in those plaees.**

Same, p. 132.

1887. Lieutenant-Governor Bruce.

Among the applications which have been received **for mining lieenses . . .** are **many** which **apply to** lands which are within **the territory in dispute . . .** I have received instructions of the secretary of state to caution expressly all persons interested in . . . acquiring an interest in the disputed territory, that **all licenees** concessions or grants **applying to any portion of such** disputed territory will be issued and must be accepted **subjeet to the possibility that,** in the event of a settlement of the present disputed boundary line, **the land . . . may become** a part of the **Venezuelan territory,** in which case no claim to compensation from the colony or from Her Majesty's Government can be recognized. *V. C., III, 164.*

1890. Venezuelan Case.

In 1890, **the Venezuelan Government received an intimation** from Sir Andrew Clarke and Captain Lowther **that Great Britain was disposed "to evacuate the invaded territory,** and to submit the case to the arbitration of a friendly Power, provided Venezuela would declare diplomatic relations to be re-established between the two countries." *V. C., 217.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850—(Continued).

——. Venezuelan Case.

Subsequent to the year 1880, **Great Britain, in violation of the** said **agreement of 1850,** and of the Treaty of Munster, **forcibly** entered upon and **took possession** of the territory lying between the Essequibo river and the line first published in 1886, since claimed by Great Britain to be the Schomburgk line. Said territory included not only the entire region which was in dispute in 1850, but **also** territory belonging to Venezuela, the title to which had never been questioned prior to 1886. *V. C., 226.*

——. British Counter Case.

This proposition is inaccurate. The line published in 1886 was the original Schomburgk line as it exists upon the map drawn by him, and the alleged entry and taking possession of the territory lying between the Essequibo River and that line was **no violation of the Arrangement of 1850.** It is **untrue** that Great Britain entered any territory belonging to Venezuela, or any territory, the title to which had never been questioned prior to 1886. *B. C.-C., 135.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The present occupation by Great Britain of a portion of the territory now in dispute, **being in violation of the Treaty of Munster, and of the agreement of 1850,** and having been effected subsequent to the year 1880, in the interior, and subsequent to 1884 on the coast, cannot be made the basis of title to that region. *V. C., 235.*

——. British Counter Case.

The occupation by Great Britain of the territory now in her possession **was not a violation of the Treaty of Munster or of the Arrangement of 1850.** Great Britain never undertook to abandon territory over which she had at the time of the said Arrangement complete control, or to abstain from continuing the development of that territory. *B. C.-C., 142.*

——. British Case.

The line which had been provisionally **proclaimed in 1886** was, on the whole, **fairly observed by both parties until the aggressive action of the Venezuelans,** which ended in the **destruction** of the **Uruan station and violation of** *de facto* **British territory in 1894.**

The only event of importance since that date was the **Harrison incident in 1896,** when the Venezuelans again violated the line at the Acarabisi and arrested Mr. Harrison, a Government surveyor engaged in making surveys for a road between the Barama and the Cuyuni.

At the time of the signature of **the Treaty of Arbitration the same** *status quo* **was tacitly observed.** *B. C., 77–78.*

As the boundary question remained for so many years unsettled, it became impossible to prevent British subjects and Indians from collecting and settling in the districts **between** the **Mornka and** the **Amakuru,** believing that in a territory claimed by **Great Britain** where she **had for years past exercised jurisdiction and granted concessions** they would be more secure than under the unsettled rule of Venezuela. **Although Great Britain, after 1850, abstained from encouraging these settlements, she could not prevent them, nor** could she **undertake to hand them over to a nation of different race and language.**

Same, p. 135.

MEANING OF TREATIES—AGREEMENT OF 1850—(Continued).

——. British Case.

In 1886–87, the increase of population and the danger of leaving a large tract of land without any sort of government, **left no other course open** to Her Majesty's Government **but to determine finally on the Schomburgk line** as indicating the territory the title to which Great Britain would not admit to be open to question. *B. C., 135.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF ARBITRATION, 1897.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The burden is upon Great Britain to establish how far encroachments upon territory, originally Spanish, can, under the stipulation of the Treaty of Munster and **under the rules adopted by the present treaty, confer title upon herself.** In the meantime, and until such proof shall be forthcoming, Venezuela considers it unnecessary to set forth at length the history of Spanish and Venezuelan occupation and control during the present century. *V. C., 198.*

At no time, either before or after the date of the Treaty of Munster, **did the Dutch, for** a period of **fifty consecutive years, exercise exclusive political control** or lawfully occupy any part of the territory lying **between the Essequibo and Orinoco** rivers. *Same, p. 225.*

——. British Counter Case.

Both before and to a still greater extent after the date of the Treaty of Munster **the Dutch continuously and for a period greatly in excess of fifty years exercised exclusive political control** over the territory **between the Essequibo and the Orinoco** Rivers. *B. C.-C., 133.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

Venezuela has accepted this rule [*Rule a, Article IV.*], but she submits and will claim that time is but one of many elements essential to create **title by prescription.** Prescription to be effective against nations, as against individuals, must be bona-fide, public, notorious, adverse, exclusive, peaceful, continuous, uncontested, and maintained under a claim of right. **Rule (a) fixes 50 years as the period of prescription, but leaves its other elements unimpaired.**

V. C., 229.

——. British Counter Case.

The proposition herein enunciated is **not accurately stated.** Time and possession are, broadly speaking, the only essential elements of prescription.

B. C.-C., 137.

It is clear that **by virtue of Article IV, Rule** (a) of the Treaty of Arbitration, **Great Britain is entitled to retain whatever territory has been held by her, or has been subject to her exclusive political control for** a period of **fifty years,** although the result might be to give to Great Britain territory which had never been Dutch, and might even conceivably have at one time been Spanish. Moreover, **there has been nothing to prevent the extension of British settlement and control, if the regions into which such extension was made were at the time lying vacant.** Territory added to the British Colony by such extension cannot be awarded to Venezuela, however recent the British possession may have been. *Same, pp. 107–108.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—TREATY OF ARBITRATION, 1897—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

It is true that any occupation by Great Britain since 1847 cannot of itself confer a valid title to territory which may be adjudged to have belonged by right to Venezuela. But **no question of adverse holding or prescription can arise except** where one Power has occupied territory by right belonging to the other; and, except in such cases, present possession, however recent, cannot be disturbed . . . so **Her Majesty's Government** would be **entitled to** retain the whole territory up to **the Schomburgk line,** on the simple ground that at the date of the Treaty of Arbitration they were in possession, and that the territory in question cannot be shown to have ever belonged either to Spain or Venezuela.

B. C.-C., 114.

There is **no rule of international law** by which it can be maintained that whatever part of Guiana was not at any time in Dutch or British possession was therefore necessarily territory of Spain or Venezuela.

The lawfulness or **unlawfulness of any occupation** of territory is, in the present dispute and **by virtue of Article IV, Rule (a), only material where it has been maintained for less than fifty years.** *Same, p. 126.*

——. Venezuelan Case.

The present occupation by British subjects and persons under British protection having been effected **subsequent to 1880 in the interior, and subsequent to 1884 on the coast,** and having been undertaken after due warning from the Venezuelan Government that titles thus sought to be acquired would not be recognized by it, and after notice from the British Government that persons so entering into said territory must do so at their own peril, said subjects and persons may be regarded by Venezuela as mere trespassers, and Venezuela is under no obligation to recognize any British titles which such subjects or persons may have acquired to lands situate within said territory. *V. C., 236.*

——. British Counter Case.

The present occupation by British subjects and persons under British protection **has been lawfully made** in pursuance of the natural development of territory already under the control of the British Government, and belonging to them, and having regard to the terms of the Treaty of Arbitration, Great Britain cannot on any ground of international law be dispossessed from such possession.

B. C.-C., 142.

MEANING OF TREATIES—CHARTERS OF DUTCH WEST INDIA COMPANY.

1621. [1897] George L. Burr.

The company received its first charter on June 3, 1621.

The charter **was meant . . . to include the entire coast of America.**

V. C.-C., II, 18.

The original charter of the Dutch West India Company, in 1621, granted in its second article: That, further, the aforesaid Company in our name and by our authority, within the limits hereinbefore prescribed, shall have power to make contracts, leagues, and alliances with the princes and natives of the lands therein comprised, as well as to build there any fortresses and defenses . . .

MEANING OF TREATIES—CHARTERS OF DUTCH WEST INDIA COMPANY—(Continued).

for the preservation of the places, maintenance of good order, police and justice. . . . Furthermore, **they may . . . do everything that the service of these lands (and the) profit and increase of trade shall demand.**

Such are **the provisions creating and limiting the territorial jurisdiction of** the West India **Company.** They **were never changed.** *V. C.-C., II, 24.*

1621. Venezuelan Case.

Pursuant to the terms of this charter [of 1621] the Company became at once **vested with whatever rights the States-General may have had in Guiana.** *V. C., 55.*

1621. British Case.

The Company, under their charter, had a **right to a monopoly of trade.** *B. C., 82–83.*

1621. Venezuelan Counter Case.

The States-General . . . granted to the Dutch West India Company in 1621, . . . **only** such **monopoly of trade** as it was in their power to grant, to wit, a monopoly **against other Dutchmen,** not a monopoly against the world. **The territorial limits of that monopoly were** no less than **the whole of North and South America** and a good part of Africa. *V. C.-C., 74.*

1621. British Counter Case.

The Charter of the West India Company expressly **recognizes the right of the Company to acquire territorial jurisdiction.** *B. C.-C., p. 40.*

1647. Venezuelan Case.

The charter of 1621 expired in 1645. On March 22, **1647, the States-General renewed** it for another quarter of a century. **The limits remained unchanged,** and were not restated. *V. C., 56.*

1665. [1896] George L. Burr.

For the Government of Guiana, or of any of its colonies, no enactment of the States-General is to be found. The control of its possessions in this quarter seems left wholly to the Company. And **in none of these enactments of the States-General . . . have I found** any provision for the trade outposts which play such a part in the colonial records of Guiana, or **any intimation as to the territorial claims** involved in the establishment of these.

However, . . . when in 1665, in the controversy over New Netherland, the British ambassador argued that the West India Company's charter was more limited than the patents granted by the English King, the States-General replied that "that granted to the West India Company is as ample as any which the King hath granted or can grant. And **the Company is expressly authorized by the second article of its charter to plant colonies, occupy lands,** and furthermore, as fully and amply as any patent from the King can extend, and such is expressly declared under the Great Seal of the State." *V. C.-C., II, 26.*

1674. Venezuelan Case.

A new Company, created by fresh charter in 1674, entered on the inheritance of the old at the beginning of 1675. The **territorial limits of the old had included the entire coast of** both North and South **America;** those of **the new included,** on the mainland of those continents, **nothing but "the places of Isekepe [Essequibo] and Banwmerona [Pomeroon]."** *V. C., 56.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—CHARTERS OF DUTCH WEST INDIA COMPANY—(Continued).

1674. British Case.

In 1674 a new Chartered Company was formed with the same **rights and limits** as those possessed by the former Dutch Company. Pomeroon and Essequibo are specifically mentioned in the grant. *B. C., 28–29.*

1674. Venezuelan Counter Case.

[In] the new charter of 1674 . . . the limits of the Company's monopoly **were cut down** to a small part of "those possessed by the former Dutch Company." On the mainland of America **nothing was granted except Essequibo and Pomeroon.** *V. C.-C., 75.*

1674. [1897] George L. Burr.

The fate of the old Company had long been sealed, and on September 20, 1674, the States-General created by charter an entirely new one. **Its territorial limits were vastly narrower.** *V. C.-C., II, 19.*

As the new and **final charter of 1674 granted** the new Company formed by it **nothing else** on the American mainland **than "the places of Essequibo and Pomeroon,"** the Orinoco could hardly again come into question, even as a trade limit, unless the Orinoco were counted the boundary of Pomeroon. That it was so counted never appears in the legislation of the States-General, and seems expressly precluded by the terms ["the territory of the State, extending . . . to beyond the river Waini, not far from the mouth of the river Orinoco"] of the remonstrance addressed by the States-General to Spain in 1769. *Same, p. 23.*

There result, then, from this review of the legislation of the States-General the conclusions:

1. That **neither in any charter** of the Dutch West India Company, nor in any "reaffirmation" **or extension of any charter, is there mention of the Orinoco as a limit.**

2. That in none of the published legislation in behalf of that Company, is the Orinoco made a boundary of territorial right, possession, or jurisdiction.

3. That its second and **final charter of 1674 seems to exclude the Orinoco** from the territorial possessions of the Company. *Same, pp. 23–24.*

But what became of **Dutch claims,** if such there were, to those portions of the Wild Coast, unoccupied **at the date of this new charter** [of the Dutch West India Company of 1674] **is a question for the lawyers.** No light is thrown upon it by the contemporary records of the States-General's action. *Same, p. 181.*

1674. Venezuelan Case.

The charter of 1674 was renewed at various times; first on November 30, 1700; again on August 8, 1730; once more in 1760; and finally on January 1, 1762. **Each** time the **renewal was without change of limits.** The Company was dissolved at the close of the year 1791. *V. C., 57.*

1751. Memorial of Shareholders of West India Company.

Of not the least support can be the . . . pretexts that Essequibo and Pomeroon should be reckoned among the common possessions of the General Company, since, . . . in the place of **the Charter,** where mention was made of Essequibo, their High Mightinesses **only fix the limits of the General Company, and in no way define possessions of the same.** *B. C., II, 72.*

MEANING OF TREATIES—DUTCH TRADING REGULATIONS.

——. British Case.

They [the Dutch West India Company] from time to time made orders asserting their **exclusive right to certain inland trades** also. *B. C., 83.*

1629. [1897] George L. Burr.

The States-General . . . on October 13, [1629], . . . issued an "**Order of Government** both as to policy and as to justice, in the places conquered and to conquer in the West Indies."

"The Councillors," says the fifteenth article, "shall further seek at every opportunity to establish friendship, **trade, and commerce** with neighboring and near-by lords and peoples, also alliances and compacts, to the damage and enfeebling of the King of Spain, his subjects and allies. *V. C.-C., II, 25.*

1632. Venezuelan Counter Case.

The so-called "sailing regulations" of 1632, and others which followed, . . . were not regulations of the Company for its own trade, but regulations of the States-General forbidding Dutch warships from visiting the coast of Guiana. . . . They could not and did not prohibit the vessels of other nations from going there.

The **trading regulations of 1648**, which were drawn up prior to the Treaty of Munster, though promulgated a little later, threw open to free trade the Spanish coast of the Carribean and the Gulf, and the Orinoco served merely as a point of departure for these, there being still reserved for the Company, not Guiana only, but the entire remaining coast of America and that of West Africa. *V. C.-C., 74–75.*

1648. British Case.

[In 1648] the States-General again issued **trading regulations** [in which] . . . **the whole** of the **coast** between the Orinoco and the Amazon **was treated as belonging to the West India Company.** *Same, pp. 26–27.*

1648. George L. Burr.

On August 10, 1648, the Company issued yet another of those **regulations as to trade.** . . . It is clear at a glance that what is here thrown open to free trade is again the Spanish coasts of the Carribean and the Gulf, and that the Orinoco serves as a point of departure for these, while what is reserved for the Company is the entire remaining coast of America, with that of West Africa. Were this a territorial claim, it would imply Dutch ownership of all America and Africa. It is in fact a trade restriction implying in itself **no territorial claims whatever,** though territorial possessions doubtless had their share in determining this restriction of trade. *V. C.-C., II, 23.*

CHAPTER VI.

BRITISH TRADE AND TIMBER CUTTING.

BRITISH TRADE.

——. British Case.

From the early part of the 17th century the Dutch, and since their acquisition of the Colony the **British, controlled the trade of the whole district now in dispute.**

As early as the 17th century the Dutch had a station at Barima, and the district there and its inhabitants and trade remained throughout under the control of the Dutch and British. *B. C., 119.*

——. [1897] H. B. Bridgewater.

My father trafficked in Barima with the Indians. . . . My father had been trafficking with the Indians there for a length of time. *B. C., VII, 215.*

——. [1897] Samuel Josephs.

I first came to the **Barima and Aruka** Rivers eighteen years ago, and was **trafficking among the Indians of those rivers.** *Same, p. 216.*

——. [1897] Angus Campbell.

I am a native of British Guiana. . . . I am 48 years old. . . . When I was from 8 to 10 years old I remember that **my father used to** leave home to **travel about the Barima** River. He used **to traffic with the Indians** of those parts and used to bring back yams, fowls, and so on. Sometimes he went alone on these journeys, sometimes with other people, especially with Robert Bridgewater. *Same, p. 216.*

1886. E. F. im Thurn.

Some **licenses**—I think only two—**for** the **sale of liquor and other goods,** have already been taken out in the [Barima] district. *B. C., VI, 242.*

1889. E. F. im Thurn.

Practically for the first time, in 1889, the **revenue from licenees** has been collected in the Barima Sub-district. *B. C., VII, 263–264.*

The **Barima** has been declared **a port of entry,** with a **custom house at Morawhanna.** *Same, p. 265.*

1891. E. F. im Thurn.

The stations at Amakooroo, Barima Sand, and Morawhanna are also district **custom houses.** *Same, p. 269.*

BRITISH TRADE—(Continued).

1891. E. F. im Thurn.

18 sloops and schooners, of a total tonnage of 197 tons, made between them **141 journeys, with cargo, from Morawhanna alone,** to Georgetown **during** the twelve months ending March 31, **1891.** *B. C., VII, 281.*

1892. E. F. im Thurn.

The collection of revenue, has for the first time during 1891–92, as far as the **Northwestern District** is concerned, been carried out for a full year. . . . The number and value of the **licences** collected have been as follows: **Number,** 377; **Value,** $1,266.72. *Same, p. 286.*

1894. E. F. im Thurn.

License Duties on dogs, guns, tobacco, wine, shops, etc., **collected in the North-Western Fiscal District** during 1892–93: Number, 463; value, $662.40; during 1893–94: Number 587; value, $899.03. *Same, p. 311.*

BRITISH TIMBER CUTTING.

——. British Case.

The journals and reports of the Superintendents of Rivers and Creeks and of the Postholder at Moruka also show that planting, **boat-building, and wood-cutting were actively prosecuted in the Pomeroon district. . . . Mention is also made of** residents and **woodcutters in the Essequibo, Massaruni, and Cuyuni.** *B. C., 65.*

During the British period timber was regularly cut under direction of the Government **in Essequibo, Massaruni and Cuyuni.** In 1823 there was a "spar-cutting place" up the Essequibo. A Petition for timber-cutting rights in Waini was presented in 1836, which referred to the grant of previous licences in that river. **Much wood-cutting was done in the Pomeroon** during the present century, giving employment to large numbers of Indians, and those who cut wood without a licence were liable to be prosecuted by the Postholder and fined. *Same, p. 112.*

The **timber cutting on the Essequibo, Massaruni, and Cuyuni was controlled by the Dutch and British** Governments. *Same, p. 162.*

Timber-cutting has been licensed on the Pomeroon, the Moruka, the Waini and the Barima by the Dutch and British Governments, and by them **only.** *Same, p. 163.*

1832. [1840] R. H. Schomburgk.

Timber estates in Demerara and Essequibo in 1832.

Whole Colony	9
St. John's Parish	2
Trinity Parish	1

V. C., III, 314.

BRITISH TIMBER CUTTING—(Continued).

1832. G. P. Wishrope.

There is a spar-cutting place up the Essequibo. Mr. de Bretton, **a white person, lives there.** It is a tide above the Buck place where I saw the bodies. I have known that place of De Bretton's eleven years. . . . Mr. De Bretton is an Englishman. *B. C., VI, 48.*

1834. Rev. John Duke.

Further up **where there is a juncture of the Pomeroon and the Arapiaca** I preached . . . at Mr. Justice **Pickersgill's wood cutting establishment,** and a little higher up the latter river, baptized two negro children, the property of a colored gentleman named Alstein, who owns a similar establishment.

B. C.-C., App., 275.

1836. British Case.

In 1836 there were many plantations **in the Pomeroon** besides **boat-building and wood-cutting establishments.** *B. C., 64.*

1836. Postholder in Pomeroon.

There are no other settlements [than plantations Dumbarton Castle, Calidonia, Chapel, Phœnix Park and Land of Promise] until you arrive at a **boat-building establishment,** which is eight hours from the Post [immediately at the mouth of the Pomeroon on the west bank], and some little distance above that, there are several **wood-cutting settlements.** *B. C., VI, 61.*

1838. Governor Light.

There is **one wood-cutting settlement on the Pomaroon** which may be considered as fit for mercantile purposes, and is prosperous. *V. C.-C., III, 177.*

1838. Wm. Crichton, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The . . . **Indians settled in the Morocco** Creek and . . . the numerous tribes in the Wyena River, and through to the right bank of the Barima River, . . . **benefit** . . . the **Colony** . . . **in the labour they afford as woodcutters** on the various establishments of that nature.

B. C.-C., App., 283–284.

I counted **200 hard wood posts at** the entrance of the Creek [**Morocco**], which he [Rev. Mr. Hermant] acknowledged were his property. *Same, p. 284.*

1839. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

There is no flag, flag-staff, ammunition, or arms at the Post [Ampa] belonging to the Colony. There are two cannons said to belong to the former Postholder. . . . There is no person at the Post but the Postholder and two servants.

Messrs. **Clarke and Smith,** Mr. **Ansdele,** and Mr. **Odwin,** also Mr. **Breton, are the only woodcutters on at all a large scale.** *B. C., VI, 87.*

The **establishments in the Pomeroon are chiefly boat-building** ones, and **troolie establishments.** *Same, p. 88.*

BRITISH TIMBER CUTTING—(Continued).

1840. Local Guide of British Guiana.

The inhabited part of the coast extends from the mouth of the Pomeroon . . . to the mouth of the Corentyn. . . . **The banks of the Essequibo are inhabited only by a few scattered wood-cutters.** *V. C., 168.*

1840. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

March 13.—For **cutting wood on Crown land,** having no licence. All pleaded guilty to having cut the wood, but stated that they had permission from his Excellency the Governor. Fined them ten dollars each. *B. C., VI, 89.*

March 15.—Went . . . to **Tiger Creek,** to Messrs. Smith and Clarke's **wood-cutting establishment.** . . . There is another vessel about to proceed up here to be loaded with wood. *Same, p. 90.*

April 5.—In the **Pomeroon.**

Proceeded to Mrs. McClintock's place. She had twenty-six Warrows at work, chiefly at the arnotto cultivation; also **cutting firewood.** *Same, p. 91.*

Mr. George Jeffry has also **a large wood-cutting establishment in Supinaam Creek.** There is **also** a wood-cutting establishment carried on in **Merteens' Creeks** by the Messrs. Casely. The two last establishments have **saw-mills** attached thereto. Almost all the labour of these establishments is carried on by Indians. *Same, p. 104.*

The **wood-cutters** here [**Pomeroon**] are Messrs. Pickersgill, Holmes and Bunbury; all the labour performed by Indians. *Same, p. 105.*

Received a letter from the Postholder in Essequibo, stating that he had seized **thirty-one pieces of Green-heart cut above Marshal's Fall in the Massaronny.** *B. C.-C., App., 291.*

There are **no wood-cutting establishments near** this [**Fort Island**] Post.

Messrs. Smith and Clarke **woodcutting establishment** is **near** the Post [**Ampa**]. There are **also,** not far from the Post, Mr. Ansdell's **in the Massaronny, and** Mr. Breton **in the Essequibo; also** a Mr. Odwin **high up in the Massaronny.**

Most of the establishments [at Pomeroon Post] are Troolie cutters or boat building. There is no wood as yet brought to the Post by the Indians.

Same, p. 292.

1841. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

May 30.—Arrived at the Post in **Pomeroon** . . . The Postholder . . . has cut a considerable quantity of **wood for sale.** *B. C., VI, 112.*

At the **Morocco Mission** the Indians are busily engaged **cutting timber** for the erection of their chapel.

[At] Mr. Clarke's wood-cutting establishment, [**at** Post **Ampa**] . . . **four vessels** have been **loaded with timber** . . . for the home market.

Same, p. 115.

BRITISH TIMBER CUTTING—(Continued).

1841. W. C. McClintock, Postholder in Pomeroon.

Your reporter, according to instructions received, did . . . employ ten Indians to cut materials for the repairs of the Post.

The gang . . . **cut** as many **Tacooba posts**, 12 feet, as paid off all their expenses, leaving a balance of 400, equal to 400 guilders, if sold in the river, for the repairs of the Post. *B. C., VI, 113.*

1841. A. F. Baird, Postholder at Ampa Post.

May 30.—The barque *Spence* . . . having completed taking in a **load of timber at Tiger Creek**, weighed anchor . . . and dropped down the river.

June 18th.—Returned to the Post . . . with 5,000 feet W. P. lumber.

June 19th.—Landed the lumber, &c., from the schooner.

B. C.-C., App., 294.

1843. *Local Guide* of British Guiana.

The banks of the Essequibo are inhabited only by a few scattered wood-cutters; and above the rapids, which occur about 50 miles from its mouth, there are no inhabitants except Indians. *V. C., III, 406.*

1844. A F. Baird, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

To the Industry **saw-mill**, the property of **Mr.** George Jeffrey, is attached a large tract, say **about 4,000 acres**, . . . [**near**] **Duccalabba Creek**. . . . On this land there is no building or cultivation, **all the valuable timber has been cut except spars**; there is still abundance of firewood.

The Industry is one of the oldest settlements in the Supenaam River, and was first established by a Dutchman of the name of Holtz, who erected a wooden saw-mill. . . . A Mr. Kilderman . . . succeeded him. . . . After his death the Industry was purchased by the late Mr. Hugh Junor, who carried on **an extensive wood-cutting establishment.**

George Jeffrey . . . a few years after . . . erected the present **large iron mill** with two frames capable of driving a double set of saws, at a **cost** of **£1,750.**

A Mr. Henderson was proprietor of the **Grampian Hills.** He died in 1819 or 20. He had a large gang of **wood-cutters.**

Indiana is about 22 or **23 miles from** the **mouth of** the **Supenaam**, and was first settled by Messrs. George and William Jeffrey, who had to retire that length into the interior to procure logs for the mill, **all the large timber lower down** having been **cut away** by the former named settlers. *B. C.-C., App., 298–299.*

The **only wood-cutting establishment** in the vicinity of the [**Ampa**] Post is **that of Mr. Clarke**, at Tiger Creek, on the opposite shore. *B. C., VI, 130.*

1846. W. C. McClintock, Postholder in Pomeroon.

During the whole of this quarter he was occupied looking after a gang of Worrow Indians whom he employed to **cut hardwood posts** with other materials to paal off the front dam of the post. *Same, p. 143.*

BRITISH TIMBER CUTTING—(Continued).

1850. [1895] Robert Tennant.

Timber did not commence to be an article of export till 1850, some years after the cultivation of coffee was discontinued.

All the timber lands belonged to Government, and a "grant" for felling is to be had on very easy terms—viz., the cost of the survey and a royalty of a few cents . . . per cubic foot. Nearly all the **best timber lands** adjoining the navigable rivers, where the trees can be felled and floated easily down to market, **have been "gone over,"** but there are hundreds of thousands of acres in the interior still untouched by the axe, which are virgin forests. . . . Wood-cutters are paid generally by piece-work. *V. C. C., III, 256.*

1853. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Was engaged for several weeks . . . **getting the timber intended for the repairs of the Post dwelling-house hauled out of the bush,** and also in having as much thereof conveyed to Moruca mouth as . . . [was] enabled.

Moruca, where the piles . . . were cut.

Feels himself compelled . . . to appeal to his Excellency for . . . the privilege of cutting the timber and plank on the Crown lands.

B. C., VI, 192.

Removing large **timbers from Upper Pomeroon to Moruea**—upwards of 50 miles.

The timbers intended for the construction of a lockup, are cut, squared, and hauled out, but not yet conveyed. *Same, p. 194.*

1856. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

According to the instructions . . . from his Excellency the Governor he felt himself authorized to grant **permission to the Indians who have paid money to cut wood for sale,** and on the ungranted lands of the Crown, . . . upon Ciceka, a hill situated on the right bank of Arapico (or Arrapiaco) creek, one of the principal tributaries of the **Pomeroon** River. *Same, p. 201.*

1879. E. F. im Thurn.

The whole of the **western bank of the Essequibo** River, which from the mouth to its first fall, some sixty miles above, is more or less thickly peopled by British subjects, and **from which a large part of the wood used in and exported from the Colony is obtained.** *V. C., III, 155.*

1880. E. F. im Thurn.

The timber tract . . . extends toward the interior as far as the lowest cataracts on the various rivers. *Same, p. 408.*

The forest tract immediately succeeds the timber tract, and . . . is everywhere covered by dense forest, as yet untouched by the wood-cutter.

Same, p. 409.

BRITISH TIMBER CUTTING—(Continued).

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

Nominally no timber is cut in the district, except by Indians. The latter carry down small quantities of timber to the Essequibo coast from the Arapiakroo and Tapacooma Creeks. Some is also, as I have already stated, cut in the same places by other than Indians. But **there has been no timber grant in the district,** at least **for very many years.** A very considerable quantity of remarkably **fine cedar was till recently cut from the Barima, and is still cut from the Amakooroo, but this, practically, has all found its way to Venezuelan markets,** without benefiting this Colony in any way. *B. C., VII, 259.*

1888. Michael McTurk.

Owing to the falls on the rivers, **only a comparatively small area** of country **can be used for timber-cutting,** and **this space has been cut over twice, and in some places three times.** *Same, p. 320.*

The timber trade on the river [Essequibo] has been a little better last year than the previous one, but the space over which the timber is being cut is a limited one owing to the short distance upward the rivers are navigable for timber craft. *Same, p. 324.*

1889. Michael McTurk.

The timber trade has increased during the past year, and the prices are greater than they have been for very many years. . . . The **illegal cutting of timber from the ungranted Crown lands still continues.** *Same, p. 324.*

1890. E. F. im Thurn.

No actual step has been taken yet towards the **development of a timber industry in the district.** *Same, p. 263.*

1891. E. F. im Thurn.

There are no legalized wood-cutting operations carried on in the North-Western District. A small amount of **red cedar** has been taken to Georgetown **from the Amakooroo; but this was nominally, and perhaps really, cut on the Venezuelan side of that river,** and imported into the Colony from there. *Same, p. 275.*

No timber is cut except for local use by the Indians. *Same, p. 279.*

1892. Michael McTurk.

The **timber trade** still maintains a **precarious** existence. *Same, p. 331.*

The **Shipment of greenheart timber from the Essequibo still continues,** and several cargoes have been despatched during the year. *Same, p. 333.*

1896. Michael McTurk.

During the year a line of rails has been laid and a truck placed on it, across the portage at Little Matop on the Cuyuni River, for the use of persons taking their batteaux and stores across on their way to the placers above. *B. C., VII, 336.*

BRITISH TIMBER CUTTING—(Continued).

1896. Michael McTurk.

The approach to the upper end of the line has been unavoidably left unfinished owing to the want of material in the shape of timber to complete it. The many rapids in the Cuyuni, particularly in the immediate neighbourhood of this portage, renders it impossible, except at very great risk of life and expense, to get **timber** from any distance above to the spot. **The timber in the locality has been exhausted. There is suitable timber below, but it is quite impossible to bring it up against the stream and over the rapids.** *B. C., VII, 336.*

The timber trade has shown an increase over the previous year.

Greenheart is at present the only timber exported from the Colony. Our forests contain many varieties of both useful and ornamental woods, but they are known to few, and rarely made use of.

It is a matter for regret that in a Colony like British Guiana, covered as it is for many miles inland with dense forests of fine timber, so little is actually known of the quality of its woods, even by the regular wood-cutters. Attention is entirely devoted to greenheart, walaba, and a few other kinds of timber used for export or local consumption, and other kinds are not considered.

Same, p. 338.

1897.

Wood-cutting licenses in existence March 31, 1897, in county of Essequibo.

Essequibo—Tiger Creek	6
—Bonasika Creek	4
—Scattering	7—17
Mazaruni	5
Pomeroon	3
Total	25

V. C.-C., III, 217.

CHAPTER VII.

INDIANS.

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—IN GENERAL.

1593. Antonio de Berrio.

Having overrun all the island [Trinidad] and made the description of the **natives** that are there, there are found 7,000, and so many **Indians** married that they would exceed **35,000 souls.** *B. C., I, 4.*

[1603]. W. Usselinx.

Especially among the **clothed Indians** residing a few days' journey inland. *Same, p. 25.*

1638. Corporation of Santo Thome.

One grieves for so many women and children, who are here [Santo Thome] looking for death at the hands of **inhuman savages, eaters of human flesh, and of heretics, enemies of our Holy Catholic faith.** *Same, p. 103.*

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The war which **various [Indian] nations** there [in Cuyuni] carry on with one another has been the cause, etc. *Same, p. 186.*

1688. Jacob De Jonge.

I have been informed by his Excellency the Heer van Sommersdijck, in a letter of the 5th January, 1688, that since the **Indian war** was spreading itself in the neighbourhood, it was advisable for me to proceed to River Essequibo to help to free that river, . . . The greatest "Owls," or Chiefs, are apparently on the side of Heer Sommersdijck. *Same, p. 206.*

1733. Government of Trinidad.

They hinder the propagation of the Catholic faith by their threats and wars, in which they are continually and exclusively engaged, with the object of eating human flesh and satiating their cruelty. *B. C.-C., App., 177.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvardo.

There is **not merely one celebrated Chief** of the Islands of Caroni, **but several**; the second is, that those of the sources of the Creek Aquire are many, and of equal reputation and strength. *B. C., II, 110.*

1756. Director-General in Essequibo.

No Indian's testimony can hold good against that of Christians (a custom that rests on good grounds, because most of them are not to be trusted, and many of them can be made to say whatever one wishes for drink, or other considerations.) *Same, p. 125.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

A great part of this extensive province [**Spanish Guiana**] is **occupied, especially towards the centre, by divers nations of barbaric Indians,** who are but little known and very difficult to reduce, owing to their wandering life, to their sheltering themselves in the thickets of their woods and forests, and to their attachment to, and extreme love of, independence, which they prefer to all the greater advantages of civilized and rational life. *B. C., V, 52.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1790. Don Fermin de Sincinenea.

The numerous tribes of Indians who dwell between the said Essequibo and the mouths of the Orinoco, already noted, **must be looked upon with suspicion.** *B. C., V, 77.*

1813. D. van Sistema.

The **manners of the different Indian tribes are much the same.** Indolence is the prevailing passion. . . . Their residence, in general, is from 12 to 20 miles distant from the river. *Same, p. 215.*

1823. Wm. Hilhouse.

The **Indians are,** like all uncivilized nations, **addicted to drunkenness.** The Warrows the most so, after them the Arawaks, then the Caribisce; and the most sober are the Accaways. *B. C., VI, 27.*

The Indian, though in peaceable times lounging in his hammock and courting for his presents any hand that will bestow them, becomes, when he paints for war, a new subject. **The only commander he will follow is the man that can hunt and march through the bush, swim the flood, and live like him and with him.** The appointment of persons to this capacity [Protector of Indians] without these requisites inspires the Indian only with contempt—he despises the authority, and becomes insubordinate and unmanageable. *Same, p. 31.*

1846. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The general **unproductiveness of the high lands** of this district after the first crop **compels the Indians to wander about in search of other hills.** *Same, p. 145.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The **Worrows** . . . are designated as . . . **the hewers of wood and drawers of water.** The **Caribs** are known as the **warriors,** the **Arrawaks the aristocracy,** and the **Accaways,** or more commonly called Waikas, **the agriculturists.** *Same, p. 171.*

1849. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

To disappoint the Indian—who is already fickle and suspicious—only tends to make him still more so. *Same, p. 173.*

Indians are easily led and willing to obey. *Same, p. 176.*

1861. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Missions, Waramuri and Cabacaburie, have achieved wonders by **weaning the Indians,** almost completely, **of their previous wandering habits.** *B. C.-C., App., 307.*

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

These people [**Indians in Pomeroon** judicial district] **all live in small settlements,** usually consisting only of a single family, up the small and obscure side-creeks. *B. C., VII, 257.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—AKAWAYS.

——. British Case.

The principal Indian tribes inhabiting the territory known as Guiana were the Caribs, the **Akawois or Waikas**, the Arawaks, and the Warows or Guaraunos. *B. C., 9.*

Next in importance to the Caribs were the **Akawois.**

No fixed limits are indicated for the area of the Akawoi settlement in earlier times. The tribe was found in the neighbourhood of the Post of Arinda, on the Essequibo, the Upper Cuyuni, the Demerara, and the Pomeroon. It is probable that this nation, like that of the Caribs, was nomadic in its habits, and was to be found scattered throughout the Dutch Colonies of Essequibo, Berbice, and Surinam.

In the early years of the British occupation the **Akawois** were described as the most pugnacious of the Indian tribes, the Caribs, having to a great extent lost their ascendency and being greatly reduced in numbers. The **Akawois** were at that period described as occupying the country between the great fall of the River Demerara, the Massaruni, and the Upper Pomeroon. *Same, p. 10.*

1666. Major John Scott.

Matteson . . . had managed a trade 22 yeares for the Spaniard from ye Citty of St. Thome, in Oranoque, with the **Shahones, Sepoyes, and Occowyes,** [Akaways] whose habitacions are 200 leagues south-west from St. Thome, neare the mountaines of the sunne. *B. C., I, 168.*

The **Occowyes** [Akaways] **Shawhonus**, and **Semicorals** are great powerful nacions, that live **in the uplands of Guiana.** *Same, p. 169.*

1680. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The **Accoways who live up country.** *Same, p. 183.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

E. Athing, . . . faithfully reported all that took place amongst the Indians and especially amongst the **Acuways** living up in Demerary—a quarrelsome nation which will not endure the least injustice and which is continually at war with the Caribs. *B. C., III, 150.*

1776. Director-General and Councillors of Essequibo and Demerary.

Some nation which, according to old custom or their relations with us, it was not permitted to bring to slavery, such as the Carib, Arrowak, Warrow and **Akowa** nations. *B. C., IV, 141.*

1778. Government Journal at Essequibo.

In Boumeron . . . a sort of **Akuway** nation named **Arenakottes.** *Same, p. 190.*

The **Arenakotte** [**Akaway**] nation which last dwell above in Caroeni, a branch of the Oronoque, there being still other Arenakottes who dwell in Ciperoeni above the Post, and do business under the whites. *Same, pp. 190–191.*

1778. Court of Policy.

A sort of bastard nation of the **Acuway** Indians called **Arenakottes,** who live inland above the Creek of Supinaam. *Same, p. 192.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—AKAWAYS—(Continued).

1802. Commandant of Berbice, Demerary and Essequibo.

The interior of Guyana is inhabited by various tribes of Indians, who are generally termed "Buks." Those residing nearest the sea . . . are the Arawaak, the **Akawye**, the Worrows and the Charibbs. But of late very few of them have made their appearance, and it is to be apprehended that this circumstance has arisen from dissatisfaction. It would, however, be better policy to keep these people in good humour, and . . . their attachment may be secured at a very small expense. *B. C., V, 172–173.*

1818. Thomas Cathrey, Protector of Indians of Essequibo River.

These people [**Akaways**] are in general a trading and wandering tribe. They go every year to the Spanish Savannah and Settlements; to the Macusse and Adray nations as soon as their cultivation grounds are prepared and planted. *B. C., VI, 13.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The **Accaways** are the most warlike of any tribe in the Colony, and, notwithstanding the smallness of their number, set all the other tribes at defiance. They elect their own Captains, and acknowledge no Protector, and are particularly repugnant to the interference of white persons in their domestic government, or the settlement of whites in their territory. *Same, p. 25.*

The **Accaways** are of small stature, but capable of bearing great fatigues and privations. They are a nation of pedlars, carrying on a constant traffic with the coast tribes and those of the interior. *Same, p. 26.*

They are peculiar in treating their women with more kindness than any of the other tribes. It is true the household, and great part of the field labour, devolves upon the females; but, except in very flagrant cases, they do not treat them with severity, and in all family arrangements they are consulted with considerable deference. There is no instance on record of an admixture of their blood with the negroes, which is a common circumstance amongst the other tribes.

The men are uncouth in their manners, independent, and quarrelsome. Their Captains are sure to be men capable of drubbing their followers into obedience, which is the only way they have of enforcing respect.

In employing them care must be taken to have no communication whatever with the inferior Indians. This is also applicable to all the tribes.

They occupy the country between the rapids and the Great fall of Demerary, the Massaroony, and Upper Pomaroon. *Same, p. 27.*

The Indians are, like all uncivilized nations, addicted to drunkenness. The Warrows the most so, after them the Arawaaks, then the Caribisce; and the most sober are the **Accaways**. *Same, p. 27.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Kaituma is inhabited by Warrau and Waika [**Akaway**] Indians. *B.C., VII, 20.*

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

In consequence of the general indisposition that prevails amongst all classes on the sugar estates of the Arabian coast, combined with the very great scarcity of provisions that at present exists throughout most Indian settlements, the

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—AKAWAYS—(Continued).

Akaway Indians of Winey and Barama have destroyed their habitations, and gone to reside with other **Akaways** in the upper parts of the Rivers Coyoney and Massaruny. *B. C., VI, 141.*

1846. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Your reporter is glad to be able to announce the return of several **Accaway** Indians from the Upper Coyoney to Barama Creek, where they formerly resided. *Same, p. 144.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Barama is a large tributary of the Winey River, inhabited by Worrows, Carrabeese, and **Accaway or Waika** Indians. *Same, p. 172.*

1883. E. F. im Thurn.

The population of the whole district is very scanty and is very scattered. Most of the inhabitants are Red men—True Caribs chiefly on the Barama and Upper Barima, **Ackawoi** on the Morooka and upper Waini, Arawaks on the Morooka, and many Warraus everywhere at the mouths of the two rivers. *V. C., III, 317.*

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

Different tribes of Indians living within the [Pomeroon Judicial] district, as well as the special parts inhabited by each.

Ackawois [dwell at] Pomeroon, Issororoo Branch; Waini, upper part. *B. C., VII, 257.*

1889. Michael McTurk.

The Indians now inhabiting these parts [Uruan and Yuruari] are principally Kamaracotas, who, although they do not call themselves Carabisce, speak that language. There are also a few of the **Accawois** tribe from the Mazaruni. *Same, p. 322.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

Some other tribal names occur in the documents in connection with the present arbitration. Some of them are merely synonyms, *e.g.*, Guaraunos for Warows, and Waikas or Guaycas for **Akawois**. *B. C.-C., App., 408.*

ARAWAKS.

——. British Case.

The principal Indian tribes inhabiting the territory known as Guiana were the Caribs, the Akawois or Waikas, the **Arawaks**, and the Warows or Guaraunos. *B. C., 9.*

1595. Don Felipe de Santiago.

Entering by any of the above-mentioned mouths, and going up the River Orinoco in the direction of the new Kingdom of Granada, various territories of several tribes of natives are met with, such as the **Aruacas**, Yayos, Sapoyos, Caribs, and Napuyos. *B. C., I, 9.*

1598. A. Cabeliau.

On the 17th [February 1598] there came on board from the continent, out of the aforesaid river [Caurora] three other canoes, in which were about sixty persons—men, women, and children, and **this tribe**, together **with the tribes Hebio and Arwacens**, continued to come on board. *Same, p. 19.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—ARAWAKS—(Continued).

1615. Report on the West Indies.

The savages who live on the coasts of this river [**Wiapoco**] had fled—they **are called Noruacas** [**Arwacas**]. *B. C., I, 40.*

1619. Fray Pedro Simon.

The river Baruma, [Pomeroon] which is the first in those provinces where the **Arawak** Nation dwells. *U. S. Com., I, 258.*

1638. Maldonado.

The Chaguana Indians dwell about these territories [lower Orinoco], where they have a village of about 1,000 able-bodied men, and another village of Tivitives, and on this bank [north bank of the Orinoco], the village of the Guayanos is also. . . . And on the other side of the river [is] the town of the **Aruacas, a very powerful people.** *B. C., I, 120.*

1665. British Case.

Next in importance to the Akawois was the tribe known as the **Arawak** nation, who were described by Scott in 1665 as being "the best-humoured Indians of America," being both very just and generous-minded people, and as inhabiting the region between the Rivers Corentin and Waini. Nearly two hundred years later they were described by Hilhouse as "of all the tribes the most docile, cleanly, and of the best stature and personal appearance" but at the same time as being immoral, fickle, and inconstant, and possessing none of the warlike spirit of the Caribs and Akawois.

The Dutch employed them at the Post of Moruka; for the fishery in the Orinoco, and the salting fishery generally; and also in the recapture of fugitive slaves.

After the British took possession of the Dutch Colonies the Arawaks readily sought employment as laborers, especially on the plantations up the rivers, though averse to labour among the negroes on the coast. The Arawaks were regarded as the aristocracy of the Indian tribes and superior to all of them in the scale of civilization. No precise locality can be indicated as their usual place of abode. *B. C., 10–11.*

1666. Major John Scott.

From the west side of Curianteen to Wina there lives about **8,000 families of Arawagoes** [Arawaks]. *B. C., I, 169.*

1673. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Peace had been made with the Caribs in Barima and the **Arawaks**, and they had intercourse with each other. *Same, p. 173.*

1758. Commandant of Guayana.

The **Aruaca** Indians, dwelling there [Moruca] for the purposes of trade, are divided into three settlements or villages, each of ten or twelve small houses, for an Indian family. And the villages are separated the one from the other by a distance of more than a league, and are situated on the banks of the said River Moruca. *B. C., II, 142.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—ARAWAKS—(Continued).

1776. Director-General and Councillors of Essequibo and Demerary.

Some nation which, according to old custom or their relations with us, it was not permitted to bring to slavery, such as the Carib, **Arrowak**, Warrow and Akowa nations. *B. C., IV, 141.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

Having asked the said Piache [an **Arawak** Indian doctor] how many families there were in the Creek of the said Bauruma [Pomeroon], he told me that there were thirteen of his relatives alone, the total as he showed by adding them together might reach 200 persons, without counting boys and children.

The **Arnac** Indians are in general of well proportioned stature, most of them have handsome features, and are not greatly enervated. They are disposed to farm work, but still more to barter or trade, and consequently do not fly like the rest when they see white people. Their clothing is simply a loin-cloth of linen, they paint themselves slightly with annatto, but they are very fond of turtle grease for anointing their heads, to protect them, as they say, from the power of the sun.

The women are well made and have better features than the men, they are very neat and wear their hair in Catalan fashion, making a plait and rolling it up and sticking a large, broad silver pin through it to keep it in its place. Their clothing is simply an apron of one span square, worked and woven with beads of various colors. They are very fond of combs, scissors, ribbons, earrings, finger rings of silver, small crosses of the same, garnets, mirrors and other trifles ; but what they appreciate most are certain kinds of beads which the Maipures Indians make out of tiny shells, and which the said **Arnaes** call Quiripa. *B. C.-C., App., 236.*

The whole of the aforesaid Bauruma is inhabited by indians of the **Arnaca** tribe who have most beautiful farms of yucca, corn and other fruits.

V. C., II, 438.

1802. Commandant of Berbice, Demerary and Essequibo.

The interior of Guyana is inhabited by various tribes of Indians, who are generally termed "Buks." Those residing nearest the sea, and, consequently most frequently come among the settlers, are the **Arawaak**, the Akawye, the Worrows and the Charibbs. But of late very few of them have made their appearance, and it is to be apprehended that this circumstance has arisen from dissatisfaction. It would, however, be better policy to keep these people in good humour, and as their wants are but few, and of the most trivial description, their attachment may be secured at a very small expense. *B. C., V, 172–173.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The **Arawaaks.**—Of all the tribes these are the most docile, cleanly, and of the best stature and personal appearance. Living in the immediate vicinity of the white settlements, they are the most civilized, but they are also the most indolent and deceitful, and cowardly, and of the most debauched habits.

They have no scruple in forming connection with the whites, negroes, or any colour, and have not the least idea of national or personal pride or honour. They treat their women in the most brutal manner on the slightest grounds of offence, and are fickle and inconstant to a proverb amongst the other tribes.

Their docility, vicinity, and knowledge of fire-arms makes them very eligible for sudden calls and expeditions of no great duration or import ; but for protected

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—ARAWAKS—(Continued).

[? protracted] service, or one in which resistance is expected, they are not to be depended upon. They are prone to desertion, and have none of the warlike spirit of the Caribisce or Accaways.

Their cultivation is very trifling, so much so that they live principally on plantains procured from the plantations, and they are in consequence called plantain-eaters by the other tribes. They are good fowlers, but indifferent huntsmen, and worse fishers; their principal forte is making pegals, bows and arrows, and Indian toys.

It is of these Indians, who principally compose the Missions of the Oronoque, that Father Gomillo [Gumilla] speaks, when he describes them as deficient in intellect, poor in spirit, and in every way inferior to the negro, whom they will readily obey, though no negro will acknowledge obedience to them.

B. C., VI, 27.

1831. William Hilhouse.

Many Indians live between the Falls of the Essequibo and the mouth, particularly **Arrowacks** in the Tapacouma Creek.

There are tribes of **Arrowacks**; . . . there are upwards of thirty. The tribes move much about from place to place amongst each other, frequently change their residence. *Same, p. 41.*

1833. Protector of Indians in Pomeroon.

In the district of your reporter the principal tribes who inhabit nearest the cultivation are Caribs, **Arrowacks**, Warrows, and some Spanish Indians.

Same, p. 48.

1834. Wm. Hilhouse.

Of the **Arawaaks** and other tribes in the district of the Pomeroon Post I can only say that the last ten or twelve years has reduced them to a state of mental and physical degradation which has no parallel in any other European possession. *Same, p. 52.*

1836. Postholder in Pomeroon.

There are three tribes of Indians within twenty-four hours' journey from this Post, say Warrau, **Arawacks** and Caribs. There are in all about from 700 to 800, including males and females. There are also about from 200 to 250 Spanish Indians, residing about six hours' distance from this Post up the Morocco Creek. *Same, p. 61.*

1839. Wm. Crichton, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Indians . . . of the **Arawack** nation . . . are decidedly superior to all the others in the scale of civilization. *Same, p. 78.*

1840. R. H. Schomburgk.

The **Arawaaks** and Warraus live at the coast regions, and their small settlements extend scarcely one hundred miles inland; I estimate their number at 3,150. *V. C., III, 314.*

1843. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent in Pomeroon.

The **Arrawack** Indian, although so frequently employed on the sugar estates of the Arabian coast, have notwithstanding the greatest aversion to perform any kind of labour connected with the manufacture of sugar, but however averse they may be to field work, their services as jobbers are greatly valued and much encouraged by the planter. *B. C., VI, 127.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—ARAWAKS—(Continued).

1883. E. F. im Thurn.

The population of the whole district is very scanty, and is very scattered. Most of the inhabitants are Red Men—True Caribs chiefly on the Barama and upper Barima, Ackawoi on the Morooka and upper Waini, **Arawaaks** on the Morooka, and many Warraus everywhere at the mouths of the two rivers.

V. C., III, 317.

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

Different tribes of Indians living within the [Pomeroon Judicial] district, as well as the special parts inhabited by each.

Arawaks [dwell at] Tapacooma Lake; Arapiakroo River; Wakapoa Lake; Arooka River. *B. C., VII, 257.*

1897. George L. Burr.

For the earliest period . . . the Waini, unlike the rivers to the east of it, was the home, not of the mild **Arawak**, but of the Carib. *V. C.-C., II, 110.*

Though Arawaks, like Raleigh's pilot, lived scattered among the Warrows of the coast to the west of the Pomeroon, yet, according to all the early narrators, this region was mainly Carib; and they agree . . . in making the Pomeroon, or its little neighbor, the Moruca, the first occupied by the **Arawaks**.

Same, p. 116.

1898. Michael McTurk.

The **Arrawacks**, who appear to have come to the territory in question from the West Indian Islands, appear to have chiefly occupied the territory between the Orinoco and the Essequibo wherever they found any place of some elevation above the surrounding flat country. *B. C.-C., App., 404.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

There are three chief Indian stocks in this part of Guiana, the Warow, **Arawak**, and Carib, each using a distinct language, and that of these stocks at least one, the Carib, is distinguishable into a number of sub-tribes—Macusis, Arekunas, Akawois or Waikas, Partamonas, and others—each of which uses a dialect of the stock Carib language.

The geographical position of these tribes within the area seems to have been much the same in the earliest recorded times as now, and is almost certainly connected with the history of their respective migrations into the country. . . . The **Arawaks**, probably somewhat late-comers, who formerly occupied some or all of the West Indian islands, were gradually forced southwards, in front of the great Carib migration, down that chain of islands and on to the mainland, when they occupied the coast-land, from the Orinoco to the Essequibo and beyond, wherever it rose a little above the swamps. *Same, p. 408.*

CARIBS.

——. British Case.

The principal Indian tribes inhabiting the territory known as Guiana were the **Caribs**, the Akawois or Waikas, the Arawaks, and the Warows or Guaraunos.

B. C., 9.

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—CARIBS—(Continued).

——. British Case.

Of the above tribes, by far the most numerous and powerful throughout the whole period of Dutch occupation of Guiana was the Carib nation. In the later period of British occupation, though still claiming and receiving precedence among the aborigines of the Colony, and known as the warriors among the native inhabitants, their numbers had become greatly reduced, and they had become in some instances industrious cultivators of the soil. But in the early days of the Colony the **Caribs**, surpassing as they did all other nations in personal bravery, were the great freebooters on all the coast **from** the Island of **Trinidad to** the Mouth of the **Amazon**. They were strong enough to control the waterway of the Orinoco, and they permanently occupied the lower portion of the right bank of the Orinoco as far as Barima.

In the interior of Guiana they were found on the Upper Essequibo, the Massaruni, the Upper Cuyuni, the Pomeroon, and the Barima, and they ranged at will through the forest region. *B. C., 10.*

1593. Don Antonio Berrio.

All the country [along the banks of the upper Orinoco] **is without natives, on account of the fleets of the Caribs,** who ascend the river and have eaten them up, and the others have abandoned the plain and gone to the woods. . . . All the Indians assured me that in descending the Orinoco I should find great settlements of Caribs, and lower still I should find a great river which is called Caroni, which descends from Guayana, and, on account of a great waterfall, cannot be navigated; but that there, and a little above, where there is a Chief called Morquita, the cordilleras end. . . . **God was pleased to send us guides in the form of two** pirogues of **Caribs, who were stealing people for their cannibal feasts** and food, and who came with me for presents. **They were Caribs of Barima,** towards which I journeyed in their company, down the Orinoco as far as the dwellings of the River Caroni, which will be more than 350 leagues; and during this voyage we experienced much friendship, and two of their Chiefs came into my pirogue, and I gave them a Spaniard, and they disclosed to me great secrets of the country, and confirmed all the information that I had received above, and I found all that had been told me true. I asked these Caribs why they took such a long journey with so much labour, when they were so numerous and courageous, and had Guayana so near. They replied that the Guayenese were numerous and were very near, and can make war upon them by land, and for this reason they wish to be friendly with them. *B. C., I, 2.*

1595. Don Felipe de Santiago.

Entering . . . and going up the River Orinoco . . . various territories of several tribes of natives are met with, such as the Aruacas, Yayos, Sapoyos, **Caribs**, and Napuyos. *Same, p. 9.*

1598. A. Cabeliau.

On the 15th February [1598] we perceived a boat, called by the Indians a canoe, which came about 2 miles from the continent out of the **River Caurora,** in which were six men, one woman, and a little child of the **Geribus** [**Carib**] **and Jau nation,** and they were quite naked, and it was long before they dared to come on board. *Same, p. 18.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—CARIBS—(Continued).

1612. Sancho de Alquiça.

Boats are not to be found when they are wanted in this town [St. Joseph de Oruna in Trinidad], and when they are found, **Indian rowers** are **not to be got, on account of their having been so harried by the Caribs**, that in consequence of the great ravages they make amongst them they have retired inland, and do not come to this town unless they are fetched; and this is a matter of considerable difficulty, as not less than twenty-four soldiers can go at a time, for if less go, it is like sending them to destruction. *B. C., I, 27.*

1621. City of Santo Thome.

The enemy will come to an understanding with all the multitude of the **Carib nation, which dwells in** those islands to the windward, such as those of **Tobago, Granada, Matalino, and Dominica**, and many more besides, and the **sea-coast to the River Maranon**, uniting with all the **Caribs**, natives of them, who are the **great** pirates and **freebooters and cannibals of all those coasts.** *Same, p. 52.*

1624. Sloane MS.

It [Ezikebe] is inhabited by **Caribs and Aruakas.** The Caribs inhabit the upper part of the river and the others the lower part. *Same, p. 61.*

1631. Marquis de Sofraga.

They [**corsairs**] **join with the Carib Indians** who inhabit those coasts. *Same, p. 70.*

1634. Bishop of Porto Rico.

Taking three armed vessels at my own cost with nearly sixty persons, soldiers and Indians of war, **as a protection against the** numbers of **Caribs who infest these coasts.** *B. C.-C., App., 11.*

1637. Don Juan Desologuren.

Between the coast and Cacanare **there are 50,000 Indians, mostly Caribs**, and the others may almost be counted their subjects such is their fear of them. *B. C., I, 78.*

1638. Maldonado.

From those places [Essequibo, Berbice, etc.] referred to there go forth every year a number of pirogues of **Caribs** to murder and rob along the entire coast during the summer, which is the most favourable time to do so. *Same, p. 124.*

1666. Major John Scott.

It is beyond all controversy that **Guiana** hath been time out of mind **ye station of ye Carrebs**, and all the Indians on the island [Guiana is here taken to be an island] owe their oridginall from thence.

The **most numerous nacion** of Indians in Guiana are ye **Careebs**, and these are inhabited **in Arieure** about **6,000 Careeb** families. **In Wiapoca, Macorea, and Abrewaco, 11,000 Careebe** families.

In the River **Marrawina**, about **800 Careeb families.** *Same, p. 168.*

In Suranam, Commowina, Suramaco, Copenham, and Currianteen are about **5,000 Careeb families.**

From Wina to the utmost part of Awarabish, on the west syde of Oranoque and the Rivers Oronoque, Poraema, and Amacora, are about **20,000 Careebs families.** *Same, p. 169.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—CARIBS—(Continued).

1673. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Peace had been made with the **Caribs in Barima** and the Arawaks, and they had intercourse with each other. *B. C., I, 173.*

1682. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Among the natives of the country, thank God, **there is peace** as yet. . . . On account of the **war between the Caribs and Accoways** the River Cuyuni no longer furnishes provisions. *Same, p. 185.*

1683. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have sent a negro up in Cuyuni in order, if it be possible, to establish **peace between the Akuways and the Caribs.** *Same, p. 185.*

1686. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

This nation [Carib] is very numerous (not, however, in those parts about Guarapiche or the Golfo Triste, described by the Capuchins, where they are few in number), for on the mainland various places are occupied by them, as, for instance, Amana, Pao, Caura, and all the coast from the River Orinoco to the Maranon. *Same, p. 195.*

1686. Sancho Fernandez de Angulo.

The **Carib Indians**, . . . are a nation **very numerous** in various parts, and in the Island of St. Vincent (one of the Windward Islands) they are proud, valiant, warlike, and the arbiters of peace and war, and trample on the other nations; they eat human flesh generally, and every year at a fixed time they gather together and go to the districts of the River Orinoco to make war on other nations, and they eat the Indians whom they kill.

In these [cannibal] feasts . . . they usually decide on warlike expeditions which are very pernicious, both against the Spaniards and against other Indian nations. *Same, pp. 197–198.*

1723. Viceroy of New Granada.

On the banks of the said river [Orinoco], and inland from it, are innumerable infidel and **Carib Indians** who inhabit and people that region. *V. C., III, 368.*

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

I suppose, fourthly, that the Guayquiries, including the Aguaricotas, Mayopes, and Salinas, are for the most part **Caribs**, some, because they are the sons of Caribs, others through inheritances, marriages, and friendship; and even if I were to say that part of the Guayanese are the same I should not be wrong, for from Guayana not only up to the mouth of the Meta, but up to the Maypures, twenty-three days' sail or more, these are Caribs already, and consequently traitors. *B. C.-C., App., 168.*

And those [Indians] who do not go over to their [**Carib**] side, they will sweep away just as they have destroyed, at the present time, more than forty-two tribes, of which there is one, namely, that of the Saypos, which was very numerous, but whereof no more than one boy now remains. *Same, p. 170.*

The **Caribs**, my friend, are overbearing, insolent and bold, and if they had not met with resistance there would have been by this time neither Missions nor missionaries. *Same, p. 172.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—CARIBS—(Continued).

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

Respecting what I say against Araguacare. This man, my friend, was loyal until he was made a captain; but now he is no longer Araguacare, but another Yaguaria, and through him and the rest of the **Caribs** it is already known for certain that the Guayanese, Guayquiries, Mapoyes, Aguaricotes, and Salinas **are declared Caribs**, and consequently greater traitors, as they are those we have in the Missions. The utmost excess appeared to be reached when a Salina captain sold one of his uncles . . . to the Caribs; but this is surpassed by a chief of these Guayquiries who has actually sold me to the **Caribs of Caura**.

B. C.-C., App., 172–173.

The worst is that a Guayquire Chief (not the one who sold me) through such speeches, and through being the son-in-law of a **Carib**, wanted to kick me in the presence of the said Don Feliz and the other soldiers of my escort. *Same, p. 174.*

1733. Government of Trinidad.

It must be borne in mind that the said **Caribs** are not natives of the Orinoco, but intruders, and that Law 13, Title 2, Book 6, allows war to be made upon those of that tribe who come to infest these provinces with armed force, and who eat human flesh, and sanctions the enslavement of those above 14 years, except the women. *Same, p. 178.*

1734. Father Joseph Gumilla.

This . . . only proved the means of aggravating the **haughty and cruel character of the Caribs.** *B. C., III, 86.*

1735. Governor of Cumana.

The **Carib** nation, which is the most numerous and rules over all the other nations, having arrogated to itself the title of the King of the Orinoco, and being constantly at war with the other nations, as it has no other occupation nor way of living, for they neither till nor cultivate their lands, but sustain themselves by waging war against the other Indians, whom they enslave and carry away to sell to the Dutch and other foreign nations; there being years in which the slaves sold by them are no less than from 600 to 700. *V. C.-C., III, 42.*

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

There are twenty leagues of river [below Angostura] on which many **Caribs** are established, and especially those of Aguire, Caroni and Tacorapo, who carry on traffic, the latter sailing up the Caroni, . . . communicate by land at no great distance with the Indian Caribs, who are established above Angostura, on the rivers Caura, Rio Tauca, Puruey, Curumutopo, and in other places.

B. C.-C., App., 186.

This Fort being taken, the garrison of soldiers will without doubt die or be murdered, because the **Caribs** do not grant any kind of quarter. *Same, p. 187.*

1747. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

The **Caribs** who dwell within the Orinoco occupy about 70 leagues of the south bank from the mouth of the River Caroni, distant 6 leagues to the west from Guayana, to the mouth of the River Caura. *B. C., II, 53.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES CARIBS—(Continued).

1747. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

As in the 90 and more leagues [up the Orinoco] from the mouth of the Caroni the **Caribs** hold sway, the navigation is dangerous for those who are not their friends, or who are not accompanied by a force strong enough to repulse their attack.

The very many attacks on the Missions, their desolation and destruction, are proofs of the dislike with which they [Caribs] regard them.

The threats of the **Caribs**, which some Indians fear, their suggestions, which perturb others, and the free life of the forest, which appeals to all those recently settled, are likewise causes of the sudden dispersement which they have been wont to suffer. *B. C., II, 54.*

1753. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

I know by experience that the **Caribs** of the Orinoco will not abandon their territory to come and dwell in other parts of the banks of the river, however much we may flatter them with advantageous offers, nor will they condescend to admit missionaries. *Same, p. 90.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

Assuming then that the savage **Carib** tribe is spread along the tributaries of the Orinoco, equally towards the east and towards the west, and likewise in the woods of the southern slope which form the defence of Essequibo, it is evident that they will be continually going to and fro through all parts, attacking the other tribes who inhabit both banks of the Orinoco, and also in the interior, the Missions of the Capuchin Fathers and of the Observants, in order to capture their poitos and destroy by fire and sword those who are already reduced.

Same, p. 109.

With them [**Caribs**] Chiefs are nothing more than a union of persons of both sexes, composed of sons, brothers, first cousins, and nephews, who form an association and occupy a certain district with their ranches and he is considered the most powerful among them who can bring together the greatest number of people. They have no respect or subordination whatever to the Headman, and have no other laws than those of their own fancy. *Same, p. 111.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

I am unable to name all the nations which the **Caribs** pursue with the object of enslaving them. But the tribes dwelling on our frontiers, and the most generally known, are the Barinagotos, Maos, Macos, Amarucotos, Camaracotos, and Anaos, Paravinas, Guaicas, etc. *Same, p. 147.*

The Paraman where the **Caribs** dwell in great numbers.

This slave trade has so completely changed the **Caribs** that their only occupation is constantly going to and returning from war, selling and killing the Indians of those nations already mentioned. And not only the Caribs of the forests, but even those of the Missions participate in these wars. *Same, p. 148.*

1760. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

The **Caribs** from the Paragua had proceeded to the River Parime; some from Caura had likewise gone to the neighborhood of Essequibo, and the rest were moved to follow them. *Same, p. 184.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—CARIBS—(Continued.)

1761. Prefect of Missions.

In the year 1758 the Mission of Terepi was also lost. **The Caribs** of whom it was composed, 48 in number, had fled the preceding year, but were retaken, and showed signs of perseverance. They were established in the same place; but **moved by their inconstant character,** they **again fled.** *V. C., II, 339.*

1761. Don Jose Diguja.

The **Caribs,** a ferocious and warlike tribe overrunning all this extensive province [of Guayana] and part of those of Barcelona, Caracas and Santa Fe.

Same, p. 342.

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

Various separate **Carib** Indians, . . . in consequence of their roving and warlike nature, go long distances from their settlements.

In some of the said ranges, even of those which are below the equinoctial line, the cold is excessive, for which reason **the** said **Caribs** trade little therein, being afraid of getting benumbed, as they say. *B. C., III, 60.*

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

I had received tidings from Upper Massaruni that the **Carib nation** was **at war with** that of **the Acuways,** and that the latter had massacred all the women and children in a Carib village on the Massaruni. *Same, p. 119.*

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

We are at present in very precarious circumstances, the Acuways and **Caribs** being now in open war. *Same, p. 178.*

1770. Postholder in Cuyuni.

The greater part of the **Caribs** have departed from Cuyuni to Masseroeny to make dwelling places there [Moruca] and some have gone to Upper Siepanamen to live there. *B. C., IV, 76.*

1776. Director-General and Councillors of Essequibo and Demerary.

Some nation which, according to old custom or their relations with us, it was not permitted to bring to slavery, such as the **Carib,** Arrowak, Warrow and Akowa nations. *Same, p. 141.*

1785. Diary of the Commander of Revenue Cutter in Orinoco.

I ordered them to be asked whether there were any negroes living at Amacura with **Carib** Indians and they said there were none, nor even **Carib** Indians there.

At the mouth of the Barima . . . some Guaruano Indians had a hut inland; and . . . some Guaruano Indians appeared . . . and . . . they told me that they were Indians from Sacupana fleeing from the **Carib** Indians, and that on Barima creek and Amacuro there were about three thousand Indians fleeing from the severity (the floods?) of the Orinoco.

V.C.-C., III, 332-333.

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES CARIBS—(Continued).

1802. Commandant of Berbice, Demerary and Essequibo.

The interior of Guyana is inhabited by various tribes of Indians, who are generally termed "Buks." Those residing nearest the sea, and, consequently most frequently come among the settlers, are the Arawaak, the Akawye, the Worrows and the **Charibbs**. But of late very few of them have made their appearance, and it is to be apprehended that this circumstance has arisen from dissatisfaction. It would, however, be better policy to keep these people in good humour, and as their wants are but few, and of the most trivial description, their attachment may be secured at a very small expense. *B. C., V, 172-173.*

1813. D. van Sistema.

The **Charaibes** are generally understood to be the most warlike, but they are less numerous than the Maconcies; it is, nevertheless, certain that they all acknowledge the Charaibe Manerwa to be their Chief in time of war.

Same, p. 215.

1823. William Hilhouse.

The Indian tribes within the limits of the Colony are as follows:—**Caribisce,** Accaway, Arawaak, Warrow, Macouchi, Indians of the Savan, which, though nominally Arawaaks, have some peculiarities which constitute them a separate tribe—Paramuna.

The **Caribisce** are generally reputed the most warlike; but it is certain that, at the present day, they have no ascendency over the other tribes. Within this Colony they are far from numerous, and reside so far in the interior that they are almost totally unacquainted with the use of firearms. They cultivate the soil, and are more stationary than the other tribes, and though of good stature, they are less able to bear the fatigue of active and prolonged service. They, however, claim precedence, which the other nations do not appear to object to. They are found in the Cayoni, Upper Essequibo, Upper Pomeroon, and Manawareena, and Wackpow Creeks, but not one in the Demerary River. *B. C., VI, 26.*

1833. Protector of Indians in Pomeroon.

In the district of your reporter the principal tribes who inhabit nearest the cultivation are **Caribs**, Arrowacks, Warrows, and some Spanish Indians.

Same, p. 48.

1836. Postholder in Pomeroon.

There are three tribes of Indians within twenty-four hours' journey of this Post, say Warrau, Arawacks and **Caribs**. There are in all about from 700 to 800, including males and females. There are also about from 200 to 250 Spanish Indians residing about six hours' distance from this Post up the Morocco Creek. *Same, p. 61.*

1840. R. H. Schomburgk.

Of the **Caribi,** the once widely-extended people, . . . there remain but few in British Guiana.

The **Caribis** inhabit the lower Mazaruni and Cuyuni; about 100 are located at the Corentyn, 80 at the Rupununni, 30 at the Guidaru, and their **whole number** . . . does not at present surpass **300**. *V. C., III, 314.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—CARIBS—(Continued).

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Barama is a large tributary of the Winey River, inhabited by Warrows, **Carrabeese**, and Accaway or Waika Indians. *B. C., VI, 172.*

1883. E. F. im Thurn.

The population of the whole district is very scanty and is very scattered, Most of the inhabitants are Red men—**True Caribs** chiefly on the Barama and upper Barima, Ackawoi on the Morooka and upper Waini, Arawaaks on the Morooka, and many Warraus everywhere at the mouths of the rivers.

V. C., III, 317.

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

Different tribes of Indians living within the [Pomeroon Judicial] district, as well as the special parts inhabited by each,

True Caribs [dwell at] Pomeroon, upper part; Manawarin; Barama; Barima, upper part. *B. C., VII, 257.*

1897, George L. Burr.

For the earliest period . . . the Waini, unlike the rivers to the east of it, was the home, not of the mild Arawak, but of the **Carib**.

V. C.-C., II, 110.

Though Arawaks, like Raleigh's pilot, lived scattered among the Warrows of the coast to the west of the Pomeroon, yet, according to all the early narrators, this region was mainly **Carib**; and they agree . . . in making the Pomeroon, or its little neighbor, the Moruca, the first occupied by the Arawaks.

Same, p. 116.

1898. Michael McTurk.

The **Carib** tribe, which can be divided into a considerable number of sub-tribes, such as the Macussies, Arckunas, Ackawois or Waikas, and others, all of which use different dialects of the Carib language, occupy all the interior parts of the Colony beyond the country occupied by the Arrawacks. **The true Caribs** are to be found more or less on all the large rivers of the Colony, and as far inland on the Essequibo as Apoeterie, at the mouth of the Rupununi. They are, however, more numerous on the Barama, Barima, and Pomeroon than elsewhere.

B. C.-C., App., 405.

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

There are three chief Indian stocks in this part of Guiana, the Warow, Arawak, and **Carib**, each using a distinct language, and that of these stocks at least one, the **Carib**, is distinguishable into a number of sub-tribes—Macusis, Arekunas, Akawois or Waikas, Partamonas, and others—each of which uses a dialect of the stock **Carib** language.

The geographical position of these tribes within the area seems to have been much the same in the earliest recorded times as now, and is almost certainly connected with the history of their respective migrations into the country. The Warrows . . . represent the earliest occupiers . . . The Arawaks, probably somewhat later comers, who formerly occupied some or all of the West Indian islands, were gradually forced southwards, in front of the great **Carib** migration, down that chain of islands and on the mainland. . . . Lastly, the great migration of **Carib** tribes came in the wake of the Arawaks.

Same, p. 408.

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—MAKUSIS.

——. British Case.

The last-named tribe [**Makusis**] was much raided by the Caribs and Akawois, and it was from this nation that the Indian slaves, or "poitos," were largely obtained. What precise localities this tribe occupied it is difficult to trace, but in the year 1833, when their numbers had become greatly reduced, they were found at the headwaters of the Essequibo. *B. C., 9–10.*

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Postholder of Arinda states that . . . he had intended to proceed up the River Rupununi, but had found the **Macoussis** and Wapissanes, the two nations living there, at war. *B. C., III, 120.*

1771. Commandant of Guiana.

Mount Dorado . . . adjoining the aforesaid lake [Parime] at the mouth of the creek of Guaricuru, inhabited or guarded by the **Macusi,** Arecuna, and many other nations of savage Indians from the interior of this Province. *B. C., IV, 97.*

1790. Lopez de la Puente.

It would be much to our advantage to acquire the friendship of the **Macusis,** a considerable tribe, and the largest that dwells in the interior of the country. This would not be difficult by means of the Guaycas, by making them some presents, such as looking-glasses and other bagatelles of that kind. *B. C., V, 121.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The **Macouchis.**—These Indians are few in number, and but little known. They live in great terror of, and almost in subjection to, the Caribisce and Accaways, who possess many slaves of this tribe, and in former times trafficked in them with the whites. They are sulky and timorous, but cruel and revengeful, and generally dip their weapons of offence in the Worali poison, which is supposed to be the reason why the other tribes have leagued against them to their almost total extirpation.

They are neither numerically or physically calculated for any service. *B. C., VI, 27.*

1839. Rev. Thomas Youd.

I have visited the Indians who lie still further south of Pirara, . . . and between the Rivers Essequibo and Rupununy.

The different tribes which I have met are the **Macusie,** Wapishana, Attorie, and Taruma nations, but south of all these the Wie-Wie tribe are settled upon the source of the Essequibo. *Same, pp. 64–65.*

1840. R. H. Schomburgk.

The most powerful tribes now extant are the **Macusis** and Arecunas, who inhabit the extensive plains on our southern and southwestern boundary. *V. C., III, 314.*

WARROWS.

——. British Case.

The principal Indian tribes inhabiting the territory known as Guiana were the Caribs, the Akawois or Waikas, the Arawaks, and the **Warows** or Guaraunos. *B. C., 9.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—WARROWS—(Continued).

1666. Major John Scott.

In little villages by the sea-side lives about **400 families of Warooes in Maroca and Wina**, and in the islands of Oranoque River and near the mouth of that river, lives about **5,000 families of Warooes.** *B. C., I, 169.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **Warouws**, who inhabit the islands in the mouth of the Orinoco. *B. C., III, 111.*

1767. British Case.

The **Warows** originally inhabited the swampy morasses and islands in the mouth of the Orinoco, as well as the lower reaches of the Barima. . . . In 1767 they migrated in great numbers to the Barima district. . . . In this locality they still remained after the British had taken over the Dutch Colonies, and are to be found there to the present day.

The **Warows** had none of the warlike characteristics of the Caribs and Akawois. They are described as a nation of boat-builders . . . they were expert fishermen, and it was by them that the noted Maracot fishery of the Lower Orinoco was kept up. The women were skilful in the manufacture of baskets and . . . hammocks, . . . Under the British Government this tribe became more industrious, and contributed more labour to the sugar plantations than any Indian tribe of Guiana, and though despised by the other nations, and regarded as hewers of wood and drawers of water, they proved to the planter the most useful of labourers. *B. C., 11–12.*

1776. Director-General and Councillors of Essequibo and Demerary.

Some nation which, according to old custom or their relations with us, it was not permitted to bring to slavery, such as the Carib, Arrowak, **Warrow** and Akowa nations. *B. C., IV, 141.*

1802. Commandant of Berbice, Demerary and Essequibo.

The interior of Guayana is inhabited by various tribes of Indians, who are generally termed "Buks." Those residing nearest the sea, . . . are the Arawaak, the Akawye, the **Warrows** and the Charibbs. But of late very few of them have made their appearance, and it is to be apprehended that this . . . has arisen from dissatisfaction. It would, however, be better policy to keep these people in good humor, and . . . their attachment may be secured at a very small expense. *B. C., V, 172–173.*

1813. Acting Governor Codd.

Nothing in the world, for example, would induce a **Warrow** Indian to quit the district which alike furnishes him with fish and his beloved *eta*, or wild cabbage. *Same, p. 215.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The **Warrows.**—This is a nation of shipwrights. From their infancy they are trained to the construction of canoes and corials, and it is truly astonishing with what nicety, perseverance, and ingenuity they excavate the most immense trees into vessels of the most perfect symmetry, and, without any instrument but the axe, form the hull capable of a velocity of motion superior to any produced by the rules of European art or practice. *B. C., VI, 27.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—WARROWS—(Continued).

1823. William Hilhouse.

Their model appears to be the body of a fish, say the querryman; but they reverse the propelling motion, making the head of the canoe the tail of the fish, and *vice-versa*.

They are of middling stature, and very dark complexion. They derive their subsistence from the water, being all expert fishermen. Their cultivation is very trifling; their food being principally fish with few vegetables, and, at a pinch, they make a kind of bread of the pulp of the Eta tree.

They are, for Indians, very industrious, but of filthy habits, and of no great personal courage, but, when sober, docile and submissive. They are great drunkards, and, when drunk, excessively quarrelsome and outrageous. On expeditions they may be useful where the country is swampy and overflowed, as they are very expert in forming temporary crafts, and are almost amphibious; but they have little knowledge of fire-arms. *B. C., VI, 27.*

1833. Protector of Indians in Pomeroon.

In the district of your reporter the principal tribes who inhabit nearest the cultivation are Caribs, Arrowacks, **Warrows**, and some Spanish Indians.

Same, p. 48.

1836. Postholder in Pomeroon.

There are three tribes of Indians within twenty-four hours' journey from this Post, say **Warrau**, Arawacks and Caribs. There are in all, about from 700 to 800, including males and females. There are also about from 200 to 250 Spanish Indians residing about six hours' distance from this Post up the Morocco Creek.

Same, p. 61.

1840. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Arawaaks and **Warraus** live at the coast regions, and their small settlements extend scarcely one hundred miles inland; I estimate their number at 3,150. *V. C., III, 314.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Kaituma is inhabited by **Warrau** and Waika [Akaway] Indians.

B. C., VII, 20.

There are several **Warrau** settlements on the banks of the Caruwavu. . . . The Manari is mostly inhabited by **Warraus**, but there is a settlement of Waikas.

Same, p. 22.

1846. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The **Worrow** Indians who are the most numerous, being, as they are, the principal inhabitants of Morocco Creek and its tributaries, as also of the Rivers Winey, Bareema, and Amacoora and their various streams. *B. C., VI, 145.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Worrows are likewise useful in the fabrication of corials and canoes, and the celebrated Spanish launches, sometimes so large as to carry seventy persons, are made by them also.

The Worrows . . . inhabiting the Rivers **Winey, Bareema, and Amacuru.** *Same, p. 170.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—WARROWS—(Continued).

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The **Worrows** . . . are designated . . . the hewers of wood and carriers of water. *B. C., VI, 171.*

Barama is a large tributary of the Winey River, inhabited by **Worrows**, Carrabeese, and Accaway or Waika Indians. *Same, p. 172.*

1883. E. F. im Thurn.

The population of the whole district is very scanty and is very scattered. Most of the inhabitants are Red men—True Caribs chiefly on the Barama and upper Barima, Ackawoi on the Morooka and upper Waini, Arawaks on the Morooka, and many **Warraus** everywhere at the mouths of the rivers.

V. C., III, 317.

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

Different tribes of Indians living within the [Pomeroon Judicial] district, as well as the special parts inhabited by each.

Warraus [dwell at] Amakooroo ; Barima, near mouth ; Morooka.

B. C., VII, 257.

1897. George L. Burr.

Though Arawaks, like Raleigh's pilot, lived scattered among the **Warrows** of the coast to the west of the Pomeroon, yet, according to all the early narrators, this region was mainly Carib ; and they agree . . . in making the Pomeroon, or its little neighbor, the Moruca, the first occupied by the Arawaks.

V. C.-C., II, 116.

1898. Michael McTurk.

The aboriginal Indians who inhabit the country between the Orinoco and the Essequibo, although apparently divided into a large number of groups, may be classified into three principal stocks, namely, the **Warraus**, the **Arrawacks**, and the **Caribs**, each of which use a distinct language. The **Warraus** appear to have been the earliest occupiers of the country, and they inhabited, as they still do, the swamps both in the actual delta of the Orinoco and eastwards of that river almost as far as Pomeroon. *B. C.-C., App., 404.*

1898. E. F. im Thurn.

There are three chief Indian stocks in this part of Guiana, the **Warow**, Arawak, and Carib, each using a distinct language, and that of these stocks at least one, the Carib, is distinguishable into a number of sub-tribes—Macusis, Arekunas, Akawois or Waikas, Partamonas, and others—each of which uses a dialect of the stock Carib language.

The geographical position of these tribes within the area seems to have been much the same in the earliest recorded times as now, and is almost certainly connected with the history of their respective migrations into the country. The Warows . . . represent the earliest occupiers of the country of whom any trace remains. At the first arrival of the Europeans they occupied, as they still do, the swamps both in the actual delta of the Orinoco, and eastward of that river almost to the Pomeroon. *Same, p. 408.*

Some other tribal names occur in the documents in connection with the present arbitration. Some of them are merely **synonyms**, *e. g.*, **Guaranos for Warows**, and Waikas or Guaycas for Akawois. *Same, p. 408.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—VARIOUS TRIBES, UNCLASSIFIED.

——. British Case.

Other tribes of less importance [in Guiana were] the so-called Arawak-Akawois, or **Wauwejans**, who were considered descendants of both the former tribes, though distinct from each of them, the **Maganouts, or Manoas**, a powerful and warlike nation dwelling in the region watered by the Upper Essequibo and Massaruni, the **Paramonas**, and the **Macusis**. *B. C., 9.*

Mention must also be made of the **Panacays** who appear to have lived in the neighbourhood of the Upper Cuyuni, and of the **Pariacots**, who seem also to have inhabited the same district. *Same, p. 10.*

1595. Capt. Felipe de Santiago.

On the banks of all these mouths [of the Orinoco] mentioned many natives of two tribes, known as the **Chaguanes and Tivitives**, dwell, both of them living in swamps. Entering by any of the above-mentioned mouths, and going up the River Orinoco in the direction of the new Kingdom of Granada various territories of several tribes of natives are met with, such as the **Aruacas, Yayos, Sapoyos, Caribs, and Napuyos**. *B. C., I, 9.*

1638. Maldonado.

Under tents or in canoes, covered with bihao leaves and palm mats, which they call **antivitives**. *Same, p. 123.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

The **Pariagoto** Indians, who inhabited the ramifications of the Imataka Mountains. *V. C.-C., III, 53.*

The **Parives** are more idle than the other Indians, and as they found their courage upon being continually in motion and attacking other tribes, they are very roving, and work their farms with the poitos they capture, from among whom they select the most robust men and the best-looking women, and sell the rest to the Dutch. *B. C., II, 111.*

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

Some Indians of the **Chiama** nation, by us [Dutch] called **Shiamacotte**, and who have already (over ten years) been dwelling under the [Moruka] Post. *Same, p. 121.*

1755. Postholder in Wacquepo.

Some Indian **Chiamas** living in these parts . . . The aforesaid Indians have been living here already some years, and being free men I cannot compel them to depart from here. *B. C., II, 122.*

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

The nation of Manoas (called here along the bank **Magnouws)** being dissatisfied with the treatment they received from the Portuguese of Brazil, had resolved to come to this Colony to make a Treaty of Commerce with us. *Same, p. 222.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—VARIOUS TRIBES, UNCLASSIFIED—(Continued).

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

The creole Tampoko . . . reported that the Postholder and assistant at Arinda had not run away, nor been killed, but that the nation of the **Manoas**, here called **Magnanws**, had been making a raid through the country and had come to the Post and carried off both the Postholder and the assistant; that they had taken all the goods and destroyed the buildings. This nation is an ally of the Portuguese of Brazil. *B. C., III, 152.*

1767. Commandeur in Demerary.

[The Arowak Acuways] are far superior to the Caribs in courage and daring; they are at the present moment on friendly terms with the Caribs, and are the sworn enemies of the real Acuways, who live up in the river Rupununi; here in the river they are called the Aruwak Acuways, because they are descended from Aruwaks and Acuways, but their right name is **Wauwejans**. *Same, p. 160.*

1769. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

We thus prevented the attack which was plotted against the Indian tribe of **Cuenicotos**, who are on the southern boundary of these Missions, and to the north of the river Apononi. *B. C., IV, 22.*

1771. Commandant of Guiana.

The **Purucotas** . . . of the River Parime. *Same, p. 99.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

The **Guaranna** tribe is the most inconstant and variable among almost all the tribes that occupy all the creeks of the Orinoco. *B. C.-C., App., 234.*

1788. Don Miguel Marmion.

The Meta from its mouth up to the first settlements . . . is nearly a desert, or at most inhabited by the **Guajibos** Indians, a nomadic nation, impossible to subdue, cowardly and very treacherous. *B. C., V, 55.*

1802. Commandant of Berbice, Demerary and Essequibo.

The interior of Guyana is inhabited by **various tribes** of Indians, who are generally termed "Buks." Those residing nearest the sea, . . . are the Arawaak, the Akawye, the Worrows and the Charibbs. But of late very few of them have made their appearance, and it is to be apprehended that this circumstance has arisen from dissatisfaction. It would, however, be better policy to keep these people in good humour, and . . . their attachment may be secured at a very small expense. *Same, pp. 172–173.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The **Paramuna** inhabit the interior between the Upper Demerary and Essequibo; they are subservient to the Accaways and Caribisce, few in number, and not qualified for service. *B. C., VI, 27.*

1833. Protector of Indians in Pomeroon.

In the district of your reporter the principal tribes who inhabit nearest the cultivation are Caribs, Arrowacks, Warrows, and **Some Spanish Indians**. *Same, p. 45.*

THE INDIANS CONSIDERED BY THEMSELVES—VARIOUS TRIBES, UNCLASSIFIED—(Continued).

1840. R. H. Schomburgk.

The . . . **Aborigines within** the boundaries of **British Guiana** . . . consist of the following tribes: Arawaak, Warrau, Caribi or Carribisi, Accawai or Waccawaio, Taruma, Macusi, Arecuna, Wapisiana, Atorai or Atoria, and Woyawai. *V. C., III, 314.*

1853. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Indians of the **Maiongung** nation . . . settled on the River Wieney. *B. C., VI, 193.*

1865. Editor of British Counter Case.

[Four **Maiong-kongs**], a tribe residing about the source of Cuyuni River. *B. C.-C., App., 308.*

[**Arecunas**] A tribe living about Roraima, and north of the source of the Cuyuni. *Same, p. 309.*

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

Different tribes of Indians within the [Pomeroon-Judicial] district as well as the special parts inhabited by each. **Spanish Arawaks** [dwell at] Morooka, upper. *B. C., VII, 257.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—HOSTILITY TO.

1637. Jacques Ousiel.

The great fort [of the Dutch in Trinidad], which is likewise a stockade, built only as **a defence against the Caribs.** *B. C., I, 83.*

1679. Commandeur in Essequibo.

There lately came tidings of the approach of a strong fleet of **Caribs** from the Corentyn with intent to visit this [Essequibo] river and Pomeroon, having perhaps a secret understanding with the Caribs dwelling here **to make a common attack upon us.** *Same, pp. 181–182.*

1680. Pitri Dirguian.

He stated that they had left Berbis in quest of some **Caribs** who had **killed several Hollanders**; that they had found said Caribs at the mouth of the river Orinoco and killed them. *V. C.-C., III, 14.*

1681. Commandeur in Essequibo.

By reason of the Accoway war in Cuyuni, . . . **No one dares to trust himself among that faithless tribe.** *B. C., I, 184.*

1684. Commandeur and Planters in Essequibo.

Two or three **hostile** [bands of **natives?**] **from Coppenam** surprised and attacked the barque of Captain Gideon Biscop, lying in the Barima . . . and killed the said Captain with all his men. *Same, p. 188.*

1685. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The dispersed and hunted-away **Caribs** from the Copename River are flying to leeward about Barima, Weyni, Amacoora, **often alarming this coast,** and sometimes slaying some unlucky Arowak Indians or Christians. *Same, p. 188.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—HOSTILITY TO—(Continued).

1689. [1897] George L. Burr.

It was at the hands of French and **Caribs** from Barima **that the Pomeroon colony fell,** in April of 1689. *V. C.-C., II, 123.*

1723. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

Necessary to send two equipped boats up **in the falls of Essequibo** for a month, with three or four Christians, in order **to keep an eye upon the Maganouts,** since evil reports were daily heard from that nation. *B. C., I, 253.*

1724. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

According to reports received the Maganout nation were killing all whom they could lay hands on up in Essequibo, and they were driving away all other nations who were our friends. His Honour maintained that it was very **necessary for the protection of the whole Colony to extirpate and annihilate these rebels, if possible.** *B. C., II, 2.*

1725. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

Reports are daily **received concerning the Maganout nation,** and . . . attention should be paid to the matter, whereupon it was resolved to send two proper soldiers to the Plantation Nieuw Cortrijk [about 20 miles up the Essequibo from its junction with the Cuyuni-Mazaruni and on the east bank] . . . to **keep a good lookout,** . . . in case of treason they are ordered to give immediate information to Mr. van der Kaay, as well as to the nearest plantation, which is Oosterbeek [about 15 miles up the Essequibo from its junction with the Cuyuni-Mazariuni and on the east bank], and which shall further be obliged to send immediate warning to the Commandeur, and to give these soldiers a 3-pr. and ammunition, this being considered necessary, since **the Maganouts must first pass there if they wish to come by water and injure this river.**

Same, p. 3.

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Postholder of Wacquepo and Moruka came the day before yesterday [July 18, 1746], to inform me that a nation of **Indians** have come down **from Orinoco** and have **attacked the Caribs subject to us** in the River Wayni [? the Akawaini, a small tributary of the Pomeroon. *See U. S. Com. Rep., III, pp. 283–284. Also B. C., II, pp. 48 D and 70 C.*], have killed several, and have threatened that they would extirpate them all. . . . I have strong reasons to suspect that the Indians have been sent by the Spaniards of Cumaná.

Same, p. 45.

1748. Court of Justice.

Upon the charges of Gerrit van Leeuwen, a colonist, . . . Gerrit van Leeuwen . . . deposed that **the Indian named Tobias,** being **his slave, had** had **the audacity to strike him on the head** with a piece of timber and grievously wound him **whilst he lay asleep** at night in the River Cuyuni.

The Indian . . . did openly confess without being put to any kind of torture that he had done so . . . we considered the aforesaid Indian deserving of death, and therefore passed the following sentence.

B. C.-C., App., 190.

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

A war with the natives would be the ruin of the Colony. *B. C., II, 65.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—HOSTILITY TO—(Continued).

1751. Acting Commandeur in Essequibo.

The aforesaid Postholder [in Arinda] has also reported to me that those of the **Maganout nation are attacking and driving away the other nations** far up in the Essequibo, and that, . . . they **had killed a** certain **trader named Pieter Lons.** *B. C., II, 71.*

1752. Director-General in Essequibo.

Since my return here they [the **Caribs**] pitifully **murdered** a certain B. de Beaumont, as well as **six of the men** he had with him when on their return journey with tobacco. The other two, although severely wounded, were rescued by our colonist, J. Smit, who was returning from Orinoco with horses.

Same, p. 76.

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

The nation of the **Acuways,** which is very strong in the interior, and some of whose villages both in Essequibo and in Massaruni and Demerary are situated next to our plantations, **commenced by attacking the dwellings of some free creoles belonging to the plantation Oosterbeek and massacring those they found there.** *Same, p. 120.*

1756. Director-General in Essequibo.

As peace has not yet been made with the **Acuways** of Mazaruni and Essequibo, **I am obliged to leave the garrison at the old fort.** *Same, p. 129.*

1756. Assistant at Arinda.

On the 27th May, [1756], I was told by an Ackewey of Demerara that the **Ackeways,** who did so much mischief last year, are again **getting** themselves and their slaves **ready to war against the Christians.** *Same, p. 130.*

1758. Stephen Hiz, postholder in Cuyuni.

Asked . . . what was the object of occupying that Post [on the Cuyuni], he answered . . . to apprehend negro slaves who escaped from Essequibo; and **to obstruct and restrain the Carib tribe, so that they might not do any injury, by way of that river,** either to those of the said Colony or to the neighbouring Spaniards and domesticated Indians.

Asked with what motive he took up arms against the Spaniards, . . . he answered . . . that he wished to rise in order to escape, **being under the impression they were Caribs.** *Same, p. 165.*

1769. Postholder in Cuyuni.

I have heard from a Carib that the **Caribs of the Mazaruni** were coming down with this flood to carry off the Caribs of Cuyuni to the Mazaruni, and were also **coming to the Post to kill me** and Gerrit van Leeuw. . . . It is my intention . . . to remove the Post to an island Toenamoeto, lying between two falls, and on that island the post will be better and healthier. I have already commenced to make a clearing there. *V. C., II, 189.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS ALLEGED IN CASES AND COUNTER CASES.

——. British Case.

The policy of maintaining an **alliance with** the **Indians and** of **protecting them** from outrage and wrong either at the hands of Europeans or of one another was continued [by the British]. *B. C., 17.*

In 1638 it was reported to the King of Spain that **the Dutch** . . . were **in close alliance with the Caribs.** *Same, pp. 25–26.*

At the time of the Treaty of Utrecht (1714) the Dutch . . . had established friendly relations with the Indian tribes of the interior, who looked to them as their arbiters in tribal disputes, and offered them assistance in time of hostile attack. *Same, p. 32.*

As early as the seventeenth century and thenceforward, the Company found it necessary, not only to regulate trade itself, but also to exercise control of a political nature over the district in which trade was carried on. **It was imperative that the Indians** with whom the trade was carried on should be prevented from making war upon one another, and **should be protected from outrage at the hands of Europeans.** *Same, p. 84.*

The Dutch considered the Indians of Guiana as their subjects, and **the Indians,** on their part, **looked to the Dutch Government** in the Colony **for protection** against any ill treatment at the hands of the Spaniards. Thus, in 1724, the Court of Policy, on learning that the Maganouts (Manoas) had attacked the Caribs and Akawois, gave instructions for the commencement of hostilities, because the Akawois and Caribs killed were "under the protection of this river." *Same, p. 97.*

In their relations with the Spaniards and with other tribes of Indians, the Caribs . . . acted under the control of the Dutch, and recognized their protectorate. **The Dutch** on their part **assumed the responsibilities of a Protecting Power.** *Same, p. 98.*

The Indians of that district [Mazaruni] shared in the subsidy given by the Dutch, and had their **Captains appointed by** them, like the Indians of Cuyuni and Essequibo.

In the Upper Cuyuni as early as 1746, and again in 1757, the **Caribs were prevented from attacking** the **Spanish Missions** in that neighbourhood, **because the Dutch Commandeur regarded them,** and had reason to believe that the Spaniards also regarded them, **as belonging to Dutch jurisdiction.** *Same, p. 113.*

The **Indians** of Guiana submitted to, **acknowledged, and supported the sovereignty of the Dutch and British** respectively within the territory now in dispute.

The Dutch and, subsequently, the British, **claimed and exercised the right of appointing the Captains of the Indians** who were officially recognized as such by the Government of the Colony. *Same, p. 119.*

The **Indian Captains were appointed by the Dutch** and British Governments. *Same, p. 162.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS ALLEGED IN CASES AND COUNTER CASES—(Continued).

——. British Counter Case.

In 1701 the Dutch, who had then made peace with them [Caribs], **called upon them for their aid against the French and the Spaniards** in the war which then threatened the Colony. *B. C.-C., 64.*

Dutch subjects were resident at different times **in various parts of the Upper Cuyuni** Valley, **and were in alliance with the Indians there.** *Same, p. 75.*

All the **Indians of** the [**Barima**] district **considered themselves** to be **under the jurisdiction of the Dutch.** *Same, p. 77.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

Dutch relations with the Indians . . . **were never** of such a character as to afford **a foundation for a claim of Dutch sovereignty** to the territory in dispute. *V. C.-C., 24.*

The **Dutch did** not attempt to **exercise jurisdiction over the Indians**, but only over Dutchmen. . . . So in the case of Marichal; the Carib chief who appeared before the Court and confessed . . . saying . . . "*I committed the deed*," the Court found that Marichal had not instigated him to do the deed, acquitted the Dutch colonist, and **took no notice** whatever **of the confessed crime of the Carib chief.** *Same, pp. 94–95.*

Except over the Indians living in the Colony itself, or in the immediate vicinity of the posts, the Dutch authorities exercised no political control whatever; and . . . even over the Indians at the posts, **such control as was exercised depended** largely, if not entirely, **on the permission of the Indians themselves.** *Same, p. 95.*

That the Dutch did not control *all*, but merely *some* of these Indians . . . would certainly be nearer the truth. . . . The fact is that no such general control was ever exercised, either with the consent of the Indians or otherwise. . . . **The only Indians** who ever came **under any sort of Dutch control were the Indians who were settled within the Colony, or who were collected about the posts.** *Same, p. 99.*

That the **Dutch exercised no jurisdiction over the Indians beyond these posts** seems clear. *Same, p. 102.*

The **Dutch did not assume** over the Indians **that command which is an essential element of sovereignty.**

This manner of dealing with the Indians implies a state of *friendship* rather than a condition of *allegiance or servitude*. This was in fact what was sought by the Dutch and what actually at times existed. It was a friendship without any *obligation* to assist on the part of the Indians. It was **an alliance for** the **mutual benefit** of *both* without any thought on the part of the Indians that they were surrendering their freedom or that they were recognizing Dutch sovereignty. *Same, p. 103.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS ALLEGED IN CASES AND COUNTER CASES—(Continued).

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

The **Dutch never claimed to be sovereigns over the Indians**, . . . they **never treated the Indians as subjects**, . . . the two were at times bitter enemies and . . . at best **they were quondam friends and allies, nothing more.** *V. C.-C., 105.*

In Dutch times the Indians selected their own Chiefs, and such authority as was vested in them emanated from the Indians themselves. The gewgaws, which these Chiefs at times received from the Dutch authorities, tickled their vanity, and their *recognition* as Chiefs by the Dutch probably gave them a feeling of still greater satisfaction; but never did they, nor the Dutch for that matter, suppose that such act conferred any authority on the Chief. The Chief was the principal man of his family or tribe, and it was precisely **because he was Chief** that **the Dutch courted his friendship.** *Same, p. 108.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS INVITE, PERSUADE, INDUCE, ETC.

1637. Don Juan Desologuren.

The licence of their lives has made them **masters of all the people of those islands** from which their merchandize is drawn, . . . **the Indians embrace their company,** because they imitate the barbarity of their lives and allow them to enjoy full liberty without constraint of tributes, labour, or the sweet yoke of the Gospel, heavy in their opinion. *B. C., I, 77.*

1680. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The trade in hammocks and letter-wood has this year not had the desired success, on account of the war between those [Indians] of Cuyuni, Essequibo, and Mazaruni, and the Accoways who live up country; and **we have repeatedly** . . . **tried to persuade** the highest Chief to make peace . . . to that end offering axes and other wares. **They even threatened,** if we would not let them continue the war, to depart in great numbers to Barima and elsewhere. These being the most important traders in dye, **I was,** to my sorrow, **compelled to desist;** and hereby [*i. e.*, by the Indian war] the River Cuyuni, our provision Chamber, is closed. In addition we lately have been embittered by the death of Gilles, an old negro of the Company, recently poisoned up in the Cuyuni, as the Caribs pretend, by the Accoways. On that account the aforesaid old negroes have become afraid to have intercourse with that tribe; **I shall,** however, **bethink me of means for conciliating that tribe.** *Same, pp. 183-184.*

1686. Essequibo Council Minutes.

Another Carib Captain in Mazaruni, named Makourawacke, . . . had slain, at a Carib [village] . . . some Akuwayas dwelling not far from the annato store before mentioned, and **friends of ours** and of the Caribs.

Friends [of the slain Akuways] seeking revenge, . . . having killed both married women and children of the Caribs, have so intimidated the rest that they . . . have fled to the forest.

When Makourawacke, with his tribe, were wishing to go to war with the Akuwayas up in Demerara, they were then **dissuaded** . . . and advised to . . . make war far away in Mazaruni, and moreover inland against their common enemy, not against their and our **friends who dwelt close by the Caribs and the nunatto store.** *Same, p. 202.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS, INVITE, PERSUADE, INDUCE, ETC.—(Continued).

1696. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We have resolved to instruct you hereby . . . to . . . **do everything to preserve quiet and peace among the Indians.** *B. C., I, 213.*

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Council has sent to Barima . . . **to invite hither the Chief of the Caribs** who murdered the Acuways in Mazaruni, to be present at the Session. *B. C., II, 123.*

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

I shall write to Post Arinda as soon as possible to instruct the Postholder to **induce the Carib nation,** by the promise of a recompense, to take up arms in this matter (mutiny of slaves in Berbice). *Same, p. 223.*

At the beginning of these troubles [slave rising in Berbice] I had sent to Upper Essequibo to **warn the Indian nations, and, if possible, to get them to take up arms.** They did, indeed, hold their arms in readiness, but went no farther. *Same, p. 224.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Colonist E. Pipersberg is the only man to my knowledge who has been any distance **up the** river [**Mazarmni**] in pursuit of thirteen of his runaway slaves, whom he got back, too, from **a nation which had never seen a white man,** and which **refused him admittance to its land,** he having got his slaves back through the medium of a free Indian known to that nation, and by means of payment. *B. C., III, 109.*

I have **not been able to get any Indians** up to the present **to aid me in re-establishing the Post in Cuynni, and without their help it cannot be done,** . . . I am in great difficulties with this work, and the re-establishment of that Post is, in my opinion, of the greatest necessity. *Same, p. 117.*

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

A murder . . . having been committed by the Indians themselves. One of the murderers, brought here and imprisoned, has killed himself before being brought to trial, wherein he would probably have been acquitted, and his corpse has been hung on the gallows for the satisfaction of the deceased's friends. The principal one has not been apprehended, and **I have told the complainants that they must themselves apprehend him** and bring him here, in which case he should receive his well-deserved punishment. *Same, p. 126.*

1767. Commandeur in Demerary.

Had I not proposed that we ought to **try and persuade the Owl** of the Aruwak Acuways, either **by promises or presents,** to come down below the falls with his force of Indians, and there to wait for the coming of the negroes, or to go and meet them with his people. *Same, p. 160.*

1767. British Case.

[In] 1767 . . . the **Arowak-Akawois** were **ready to give** their **help** to the Dutch. *B. C., 94.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS, INVITE, PERSUADE, INDUCE, ETC.—(Continued).

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

Having also been **obliged to remove** Pierre Martin, **the Postholder of Cuynni (because the Indians will on no account have a Frenchman there)** as well as the one in Maroco, I have no one there now but the two assistants.

B. C., III, 164.

1772. British Case.

This assistance the Akawois again offered in 1772 on the outbreak of a fresh revolt. *B. C., 95.*

1772. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have never seen any Acuways come to our assistance with arms. They are good friends, but nothing further. Last week, however, five of them came down and went to Van der Heyde, saying that their nation would come down the Demerary to aid us. *B. C., IV, 105.*

1776. West India Company.

Means of protection will have to be resorted to [to stop slaves deserting] either by well manning the posts, or by small forts, or by outliers, or all of these, together with the aid of the free **Indians**, from whom it seems to this body that probably the most advantage is to be expected, and whose **friendship must therefore be cultivated by all available means, and all causes for offence avoided.** *Same, p. 161.*

1778. Court of Policy, Essequibo.

The Indians [**were**] . . . **asked** . . . to accept of the presents.

Same, p. 187.

If they have any grievance amongst them, to come forward and make it known, and that if they are wishful of visiting here, they shall always be welcome and be well received. *Same, p. 188.*

1778. Essequibo Letter.

If they [**Dutch**] **should** there [**Mornka** Post] among the Indians, **instead of flattering** them in a friendly way, **introduce military rule,** and become feared and dreaded by these last, the Indians who till this day have remained will forever place themselves at a distance from us. *Same, p. 193.*

1790. Report of Commissioners on Condition of Essequibo and Demerara.

Since these [**Indians**] are free-born people, and **not to be brought under subordination,** and not always to be won even by money or presents, it follows that **one must** in this matter **act with circumspection**. The **service** which can be expected of them must take its origin **only in good will and inclination** toward their neighbours, or even in the rudiments of pride; that is to say, in their considering themselves honoured by being able to render service to the whites. For this reason, it should not be looked upon as an act for which we pay them, but as a favour received from them, in return for which we make them a present as a remembrance and to foster friendship for the future. And especially must care be taken that no Indian be ever cheated or ill-treated by a white.

B. C., V, 80–81.

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—DEPENDENCE UPON, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS ORDER, THREAT, DEMAND.

1733. British Case.

In 1733 the **Caribs** of Barima . . . had **received directions from** them [**Dutch**] to prevent any settlement of Swedes in that district. *B. C., 115.*

1734. The King of Spain.

[The **Dutch**] **told** the aforesaid [**Carib**] **Indians** [in Barima] **not to show the Swedes a good place** for their settlement, and they themselves would give them all they required. *B. C., III, 81.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

They [Caribs] have also expressed a desire to surprise the Mission [reported to have been founded, by the Spaniards, on the Cuyuni] and level it to the ground, which **I, not without trouble have prevented,** because they belong to our jurisdiction, and all their trade being carried on in the Dutch Colonies, such a step would certainly be revenged upon us by the Spaniards. It is very perilous for this Colony to have such neighbours so close by. *B. C., II, 46.*

1752. Court of Justice.

Some Caribs from the Barima came and complained that one Christian Tonsel continually tyrannizes over them all, and that he took away their children and friends as pledges for debts.

Tonsil is sent for, and, . . . reprimanded and ordered to deliver to the Carib his children, . . . **The Caribs** being at the same time **sharply admonished** not to detain or conceal any slaves belonging to Christians, **under pain of being heavily punished therefor.** *Same, p. 73.*

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have already sent several orders for some of the **Aruwaks** . . . **to come to me** in order that I may examine them and send them to the Chiefs of the Acuways to try and establish peace. . . . I have sent **orders** . . . everywhere **to bring me some Aeuways here either by persuasive or forcible measures,** and I have hopes that when I get some to speak to I shall be able to make peace with them. *Same, p. 121.*

1755. Arraytana, a Carib Chief.

Performed the journey to Essequibo . . . because I had been summoned by the orders of my ally, His Excellency, who told me . . . that . . . the reason why he had summoned me [was] in order to tell me that **I must hold myself in readiness to come and help him resist the Spaniards.**

I asked my ally, his Excellency, for permission to go to Upper Essequibo [*boven Essequibo*] in order to make my bread in Masseroeny before my journey to Essequibo.

Would you not kill those who seek you? I answered, No; because your Lord, my ally, only recently forbade me most expressly to do no harm to the nation, who are his friends or allies. *Same, p. 126.*

1756. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **Carib Chief,** Aretanna, . . . appeared in person, in consequence of my **orders sent to him.**

I had charged Adriaen Christiaense . . , to summon the aforesaid Indian. *Same, p. 125.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—DEPENDENCE UPON, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS ORDER, THREAT, DEMAND—(Continued).

1758. Prefect of Missions.

The Caribs are deserting them [**Dutch**] because they **compel them** to fell large forest trees with great labour. *B. C., II, 146.*

1758. Military Commandant in Essequibo to Spanish Commandant in Orinoco.

Our Governor has always striven to keep up good relations and friendship with his neighbours; you yourself, Sir, have had a convincing proof of this when he took the trouble to write to you to warn you, as soon as he had received advice that the Caribs had formed the plan to attack your Missions; which warning, and his **repeated interdictions to the Caribs, even accompanied with threats,** have prevented the execution. *Same, p. 173.*

1758. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have ever tried to cultivate the friendship of the Spanish nation, our nearest neighbors. **I have always used all my power to prevent the savage Caribs doing them the least wrong.** *Same, p. 178.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

I received a report from the Post in Cuyuni that the **Indians** are being bribed and incited to such a degree that they are **unwilling to do the least thing for the Postholder,** and that when he orders them to go alongside the passing boats to see whether there are any runaways in them, they obstinately refuse to do so, and **when he threatens to shoot** upon them **they reply that they have bows and arrows with which to answer.** *B. C., III, 143.*

1768. British Case.

These [**Barima**] **Caribs** were so **thoroughly under the control of** the **Dutch** Commandeur that when attacked by the Spaniards and certain Dutch deserters they **did not dare to defend themselves without his permission.** *B. C., 116.*

1769. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We also fully approve of the **orders** your Honour gave **to** the Caribs of Barima. *B. C., IV, 29.*

1803. Court of Policy.

Tne **vexatious treatment** which has been **received by** the **Indians** on the part of the **Postholders** by **demanding labour from them,** for which they are not obliged, neither can they be forced to do. *B. C., V, 181.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS FRIEND, ALLY, NEIGHBOR, ETC.

1714. West India Company (Secret instructions).

They shall meet the same as far as possible in a peaceful manner, and seek to **gain the friendship of the natives.** *B. C., I, 242.*

He shall then represent . . . that they **have come there as friends,** in order to deal in friendship with those people, and to establish a trade with them. *Same, pp. 242–243.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS FRIEND, ALLY, NEIGHBOR, ETC.—(Continued).

1714. West India Company (Secret instructions).

The aforesaid persons [servants of the W. I. Co.] shall . . . note . . . with what nation or people they [**Indians of the Upper Essequibo**] carry on trade, and **whether they are free** men **or** vassals of others, and if the latter, **under whose command they stand.**

Whether it would be **possible to take possession in their country,** and whether it would be possible to keep such possession. *B. C., I, 243.*

1732. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I sent him [Jacobus van der Burg one of the Company's servants] **above the falls** in Essequibo on the 15th October, 1731, with orders to go as far as he possibly could, to deal with the Indians in a most friendly manner, and further **to see whether he could not induce any Chiefs to come here,** so that I might talk to them myself by means of interpreters. *B. C., II, 16.*

1740. Court of Policy.

[Granted] to J. la Riviere, to cut a bread-garden in the upper parts of the Creek Itterbicie **without interfering with the Indians.** *B. C., VII, 191.*

1756. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Your action with respect to the Acuways also has our approval, since we are fully convinced that nothing can contribute more to the safety of the colonies, than a kind, but at the same time circumspect, treatment of **the neighbouring native tribes.** *B. C., II, 127.*

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Rivers of Pomeroon and Weyni, full of Indians of the **Carib, Arawak and Warouw** nations, whose help is always required . . . and who have also to be kept in a **continual sort of subjection** in order to prevent the escape of runaway slaves, and to facilitate their capture. *Same, p. 226.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

Our Caribs, both from these rivers and even from Barima, **have loyally done their best** and are yet doing it, constantly roving about between the two Colonies [Essequibo and Berbice]. *B. C., III, 105.*

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

Nothing has yet been heard of any strangers in the interior, and he has made such **arrangements with the Indians** that whoever might turn up would be immediately seized and sent to the fort. *Same, p. 120.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

I told him [the creole Tampoko] that he must . . . **expressly forbid the Caribs**, in my name, to molest our Acuway subjects. *Same, p. 142.*

1767. West India Company (Zeeland Chambers).

We likewise approve of the hint which you caused to be given in your name to the Caribs, namely, that they must not molest **the Acuways subject to the Company.** *Same, p. 150.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS FRIEND, ALLY, NEIGHBOR, ETC.—(Continued).

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

He [Moruka Postholder] **shall treat the free Indians friendly** and gently, and not wrong them in any way, nor shall he allow them to be ill-treated, wronged, or oppressed by any one else, but endeavour as much as possible to **entice them to live at** and in the vicinity of **the Post.**

He shall also make the Indians keep a strict look-out after the runaway red and black slaves. *B. C., III, 154.*

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

Our colonies here on the coast having on the one side **restless neighbours** who cannot long remain still, and on the other side the Spaniards, who have already given us and still give us so many reasons for suspicion that we can really not be careful enough. *Same, p. 164.*

Now **our Caribs** of Essequibo and Massaruni will take up arms [against the Acuways]. *Same, p. 178.*

1768. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The friendship of the Caribs, though otherwise to be fostered by all possible and permissible means, might, instead of being advantageous to the Colony, become very disadvantageous. *Same, p. 180.*

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

The **Caribs of Barima** . . . complained that some of our deserters with a party of Spaniards were continually molesting them in Barima and robbing them of everything. I asked them whether they were not men and had no hands to defend themselves. They answered "Indeed, they had," but that they did not know whether they might do so. I replied that they must indeed be careful to give the Spaniards not the slightest reason for complaint, but that if they were unjustifiably attacked they might stoutly defend themselves. This pleased them very much, because **I had not yet been willing to grant them so much liberty.** *Same, p. 182.*

1769. Remonstrance of States-General.

Caribs [in Mazaruni] (an Indian nation, **allies of the Dutch and under their jurisdiction**). *B. C., IV, 29.*

1769. Director-General in Essequibo.

The nation of the **Caribs**, my Lords, are looked upon as nobles among the Indians. It is a very good thing **to have them as allies or friends,** for they render excellent services, but they are formidable enemies, capable of more bravery and resistance than one would think. When their principal or great Owls come to me, they immediately take a chair and sit down, and will eat and drink nothing but what I have myself, and they call me by no other name than that of "mate" or "brother." A good way up the river there are several villages of that nation which white people have never seen. These are well populated, and the inhabitants get what they want through those of their nation who deal with us. **We can rely upon them as friends in case of need.** *Same, p. 3.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INDEPENDENCE OF, AS SHOWN BY THE WORDS FRIEND, ALLY, NEIGHBOR, ETC.—(Continued).

1769. Director-General in Essequibo.

The chief of the Caribs, who **is** now **here,** goes up the river to-day. He has promised me to attack the murderers of the Postholder, and to hold all his people in readiness in case we might have need of them. **Commandant Backer** told him this morning that he would like to come up the river, and **asked him whether he would then let him be master. He answered, "No; I am master of the Caribs. You can be master of the whites** and of the other nations, and then we can together becomes masters of everything." I let him see one of the silver ring-collars which I still have, and promised to give it to him, and to give him some clothes (of which they are very fond) if he behaved well.

B. C., IV, 11.

1772. Director-General in Essequibo.

[The slaves having revolted, I] immediately **sent to my good friends the Caribs** on all sides **asking them to come to our help,** which they did not fail to do, for they came down from all parts, and as I write they are three hundred strong on the coast under Councillor Van der Heyde. *Same, p. 105.*

1774. Court of Policy in Demerary.

Indians . . . of a nation whom we regard as **free, and whose** help, assistance, and **friendship is of** such **importance to us** that your Lordships yourselves very earnestly recommended us to live in harmony with them but a short time ago. *Same, p. 125.*

1775. Memorial to Director-General and Councillors of Essequibo.

Pirates and evil-intentioned persons, who, incited by and allied with the Spaniards make raids upon our coasts and kill, carry off, and drive away **our Indians, our protectors,** from our very Posts and territory. *Same, p. 129.*

1778. Director-General in Essequibo.

The chief task of a Postholder consists in trying, **by friendly** and **familiar intercourse** to **win over the Indians** more and more, and accustom them to us.

Same, p. 186.

1779. Journal kept for the Government in Demerary.

The following **Indians** were **presented with commissions as Captains** or Owls of their nation:

Carrouwe, of the Aruwak nation.

Perivuris, Arroywaynyma, Maycoanaree, Morabu, Moraru and Morawary, of the Carib nation.

Abraham and Cloos, of the Warouw nation. *Same, p. 207.*

1785. Director-General in Essequibo.

We must gratify these people [**Caribs**] in every respect, for they, **on our side,** are **our only resource against the negroes.** *B. C., V, 36.*

I am laying myself out for **again winning the friendship of the Indians** again entirely for our nation, notwithstanding manifold evil-treatment in previous times and manifold changes since 1781. *Same, p. 38.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INSOLENCE, DEMANDS MADE AND DUTCH TREATMENT OF INDIAN COMPLAINTS.

1729. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Commandeur has received divers complaints from the free Indians dwelling in the lower portion of this Colony concerning the great tyranny to which they are subjected by some inhabitants, from which **it is to be feared that** if those vexations are not prevented and put a stop to **the Indians**, following the example of others, **will** also **leave their dwellings and proceed elsewhere**, thus occasioning great embarrassment here. The Commandeur and Councillors have, therefore . . . expressly **forbid all servants** of the Honourable Company, as well as the respective inhabitants of this Colony, **to exercise** any or the least **tyranny over the free Indians** dwelling in or around this river or further under the jurisdiction of the Honourable Company, or to employ force in compelling them to work. *B. C., II, 9.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Indians were in the highest state of indignation [against the Spaniards]; . . . four of their chiefs were on the point of coming down in order once more to come and **complain to me.**

I intend to tell the Chiefs of the Indians when they come to me, that **I can provide no redress for them**, and that **they must take measures for their own security.** *Same, p. 58.*

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I have . . . caused the natives to be informed of this [order to arrest Jan Stok who raided Arinda Post], and caused them **to be promised satisfaction**, with a request to send their Chiefs, so that they may be personally present. This some have already assented to, . . . I believe, however, that as soon as they learn of the arrest of this man they will quite return to calmness.

However, to obviate all further misfortunes (for a war with the natives would be the ruin of the Colony), I think it would be best . . . to prohibit until further orders traffic with the Indians on the Rivers Essequibo, Massaruni, and Cuyuni. *Same, p. 65.*

1756. Director-General in Essequibo.

Accusations made against Pieter Marschal concerning the war with the Acuways.

Marschal was declared innocent of the charges, although I, and many with me, think him really guilty.

He, consequently, returned to his plantation, **but** on his arrival there **the Acuways** . . . appeared again in large numbers, and **compelled him**, if he wished to save his life, **to take flight** as speedily as possible, so that he was obliged to leave. . . . I should by no means advise him to think of returning to his place, because, **whether** he be **guilty or not** guilty, **the Acuways would certainly kill him.** *Same, p. 125.*

1761. Director-General in Essequibo.

Spaniards and Spanish Indians in Cuyuni have been down to the lowest fall, where your Lordships' indigo plantation is situated, driving all the Indians thence and even it is said, having killed several. **The Indians sent in complaint upon complaint.** *Same, p. 201.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—INSOLENCE, DEMANDS MADE AND DUTCH TREATMENT OF INDIAN COMPLAINTS—(Continued).

1761. Director-General in Essequibo.

So long as I have [held] . . . command here I have embraced every opportunity of preventing the Indians from annoying them. *B. C., II, 202.*

1768. Director-General in Essequibo.

All **the Indians have declared** that **they will have no Freneh at the Posts,** a troop of more than 100 Warouwans, all well armed, having already arrived at the Post Maroco, saying that they came to see whether there was a Frenchman there, and **intending to kill him if it were so.** *B. C., III, 161.*

Pierre Martin has come down the river from Cuyuni, the **Indians flatly refusing to** come and **live** anywhere **near the Post so long as he is there** [he being a Frenchman]. **They will have a Dutehman, they say.** *Same, p. 162.*

1768. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

It being hard to catch hares with unwilling hounds, you cannot do otherwise than **aceede to the wish of the Indians** in Cuyuni and Moruca, **and send no Frenehmen** thither **as Postholders.** *Same, p. 180.*

1785. Governor-General in Essequibo.

I had the honour some days ago to have here some (who were **Caribs**) who were **very insolent, and** in the presence of the negroes **said that if they obtain no presents, they,** if once again a revolt occurred, would not alone abstain from helping the whites, but would assist the negroes and **murder the whites** with their bananas, salt fish, men ; so much they desired gifts and salempour (clothes), cotton, knives, mirrors, &c., out of the store-house. *B. C., V, 36.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—TREATIES WITH INDIANS.

——. British Counter Case.

It can be established beyond all question that at the date of the Treaty the **Dutch,** to the knowledge of the Spaniards, were in friendship and had **made allianees with the native raees of Gniana, espeeially with the Caribs** who held the country on the east bank of the Lower Orinoco. *B. C.-C., 40–41.*

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

The nation of Manoas (called here along the bank **Magnonws**) being dissatisfied with the treatment they received from the Portuguese of Brazil, had **resolved to eome to this Colony to make a Treaty of Commeree with us.** *B. C., II, 222.*

1776. Commandant in Rio Essequibo.

De Beschryvinge Van Guiana . . . by Hartsinck . . . in describing the River Berbice . . . states :—

These rivers and creeks were inhabited by the Arawakas, Warouwas, and Schotjes . . . and higher up by the Akuwayas and Caribs. . . . **We have made Treaties of Friendship with all these raees,** *and they may not be sold as slaves.*

"At the commencement of this century some Captains of the Schotjes were sent to the Netherlands **to eonclude Treaties of Peaee with our people.** They

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—TREATIES WITH INDIANS—(Continued).

were well received, and sent back with presents and with clothes and handsome furnishings. . . . However, . . . in . . . 1672 they owned a trading house on the River Canje, but they could not withstand the firearms of the Netherlanders, being compelled to retreat, . . . leaving their coasts to their conquerors, who thenceforth lived in peace and friendship with the remaining Indians. They left them in an entire freedom, and promised by **the Treaty of Peace** that no Caribs of that coast, or Aruwakas, Warauwas, or Akuwayas should ever be reduced to slavery. *B. C., IV, 142–143.*

1776. Director-General in Essequibo.

About the half-free slaves I have repeatedly inquired, but I can nowhere find proofs that this half-freedom is hereditary.

There must have been made in the old times, a **Convention between the Europeans and the free Indian natives**, of which he, (Hartsinck) also makes mention, but of which, likewise, nothing can be found here. *Same, p. 143.*

1813. Protector of Indians.

Though my appointment as Protector of the Indians is of no more than three or four years' standing, yet I have been in the habit of calling, on the behalf of Government, for the assistance of the Indians at different periods since the year 1795, during which space of time **I know of no Treaty or Agreement with** the Chiefs of **Indian tribes** implying anything of the nature of subsidy or tribute; nor in my intercourse with these nations was I ever authorized by this Government to make any promise of the kind, though I know, from a residence of thirty-three years in the country, presents were generally made by the Dutch Government, and as often expected. *B. C., V, 204.*

1897. George L. Burr.

The treaties of the Dutch West India Company with native tribes are carefully preserved; but there is none with the Indians of Guiana No such treaty is known to the extant records of the Company or to the documents transmitted from the colony. . . . Nor have I found anything in the records to suggest that the Dutch here ever looked on the Indians as possessing any ownership of land. *V. C.-C., II, 87.*

Of treaties with the Indians **there is no record.** *Same, p. 88.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—ATTITUDE ASSUMED BY THE DUTCH TOWARDS OTHERS AS TO INDIAN RELATIONS.

1730. Commandeur in Essequibo.

On the 26th May of last year [1729] I received an unexpected visit from a French gentlemen named **Nicolas Gervais, Bishop of Orran**, coming from the Orinoco.

He **expressed** to me his **intention of** making a stay in or about this Colony and **seeing whether** there might not be **some means of converting the Indians** of these lands to Christianity, . . . **I demonstrated** to him **the impossibility** thereof, **and**, furthermore, **that it was not in my power to grant** him such **permission.**

You will see from the enclosed letter, . . . how that prelate has unhappily been murdered by the Indians in Aguirre. *B. C., II, 10 11.*

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—ATTITUDE ASSUMED BY THE DUTCH TOWARDS OTHERS AS TO INDIAN RELATIONS—(Continued).

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Carib Indians . . . desire to surprise the [new] **Mission** [**in Cuyuni**] and level it to the ground, **which I,** not without trouble, **have prevented, because** they belong to our jurisdiction, and . . . **such** a step **would** certainly **be revenged upon us by the Spaniards.** *B. C., II, 46.*

1748. Commandeur in Essequibo.

Seeing that all my remonstrances and letters to the Spaniards are of no avail, and no redress is obtainable, **I intend to tell the** Chiefs of the **Indians** when they come to me, **that I can provide no redress for them, and that they must take measures for their own security.** Then I feel assured that in a short time no Spaniard will be visible any more above in Cuyuni. I have always, but with great difficulty, restrained them, and prevented all hostilities by fair promises.

Same, p. 58.

The Spaniards were beginning to approach more and more up in Cuyuni; but a **war** having some weeks ago arisen **between** the **Carib nation and** that of the **Warrows,** which is carried on very obstinately, this will stop their further progress, and possibly, if the Caribs obtain the upper hand, they will be driven somewhat farther away, **without our having** in the least degree **to meddle therewith.** *V. C., II, 101.*

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

Many of the colonists . . . have requested me to send out an invitation to the Carib Indians to take the field against the Acuways, but . . . I have not yet decided to do so. *B. C., II, 120.*

1757. Court of Justice.

Resolved, . . . to strictly refuse the Caribs . . . powder and shot in the event of their coming down, and to request his Excellency to **give information of** this rumour [as to the **Caribs attack** upon the Mission] as speedily as possible to the Commandant of Guayana **in order to avert all suspicions** which the Spaniards might form **with regard to this colony.** *Same, p. 131.*

1763. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Postholder of Arinda has reported . . . that the nation of Manoas (called here along the bank Magnouws) being dissatisfied with the treatment they received from the Portuguese of Brazil, had resolved to come to this Colony to make a Treaty of Commerce with us, and that a strong body had set out with that object. Also that the Carib nation, jealous of its trade, . . . had now assembled, . . . and had lain in ambush for the Manoas in order to prevent their progress. This caused a sharp fight, in which both sides lost heavily; but the Caribs were totally defeated and put to flight. The Manoas . . . postponed their journey till this year, and sent word to the Postholder that they would come down in such numbers as to have no fear of the Caribs. On the other hand, the Caribs are assembling from all sides in order to oppose them, so that it is possible that we shall this year see one of the bloodiest and most obstinate fights that has probably taken place in these parts for 100 years or more. **I hope the Caribs may get a good hiding, because I have always wished to see a few Manoas here.**

Same, pp. 222–223.

RELATIONS TO ESSEQUIBO DUTCH—ATTITUDE ASSUMED BY THE DUTCH TOWARDS OTHERS AS TO INDIAN RELATIONS—(Continued).

1765. Director-General is Essequibo.

I had received tidings from Upper Massaruni that the **Carib nation was at war with** that of **the Acuways**, and that the latter had massacred all the women and children in a Carib village on the Massaruni.

Not without some reason did **I fear** that **we should again be mixed up in this** as we were a few years ago, especially through the indiscretion of some itinerant traders and avaricious settlers, who allow themselves to be drawn into these quarrels upon the slightest inducement of profit, supporting one or other of the parties either with arms or with advice, which being discovered by the other side, always leads to fatal results, and might be of great danger to the Colony itself.

I . . . set out upon my journey, leaving Commandant Bakker written instructions . . . in case he should be compelled . . . to send any soldiers there, to give . . . **strict orders** to act simply on the defensive, and **not to interfere** directly or indirectly **in the quarrels of the Indians.**

The . . . Caribs . . . were . . . waiting . . . to fall upon the Acuways, . . . Wherefore he had done all that he possibly could to pacify the two nations, and had fairly succeeded. *B. C., II, 119–120.*

1765. West India Company.

We are perfectly at one with your Honour that the restoration of the Post in Cuyuni is of the highest necessity, and accordingly it was most acceptable to us to learn finally that **Indians had been found to offer a helping hand, provided an assurance of protection** against the Spaniards **was given them, which it was easy to promise.** *Same, p. 122.*

1765. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

In the war between the Carib and Acuway nations, **observe a strict neutrality,** which we agree with you in thinking extremely important.

Same, p. 125.

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

We are expecting a bloody battle every day [between the Caribs and Acuways].

I have charged the Commandeur . . . to proceed to Upper Demerary in order to be on the spot, . . . and **to take especial care that strict neutrality is maintained by the citizens.** I have further charged him not to interfere, directly or indirectly, in the matter, nor to help either of the nations in the slightest manner, and to make an effort, if there be still time, to reconcile the two parties and prevent bloodshed, through the mediation of the Arawaks, who are friends of both sides. I have myself succeeded in doing this several times already, both by persuasion and threats. *Same, p. 133.*

1831. A. van Ryck de Groot.

I am a Protector of Indians. **If an Indian made complaint to me I should act as a mediator, not as a Magistrate.** If the injuring party did not choose to appear, I should not feel myself authorized to compel him to do so. In their quarrels I should consider I had nothing to do unless they called on me as mediator. *B. C., VI, 41.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS; ALLIANCES FOR HOSTILE PURPOSES—IN GENERAL.

1613. Capt. Melchor Cortes.

The Dutch . . . [in their fort on the Corentine river] **defended themselves** courageously **with the assistance of the Carib folk,** who likewise fought with equal courage, until it became evident that they were doing great damage to the Spanish troops from the fort, owing to the large number of **Caribs who were helping them**; so it was necessary to set fire to the fortress, . . . and when the fort was burnt out they found inside it six men dead and burnt. And . . . a very large quantity of booty, axes, knives, cutlasses, and other things, with which they kept the Carib race at their disposal, whose daughters they used to marry. . . . Eight [Spaniards] were wounded . . . **through the Caribs having fought so valiantly** and being so numerous that on all sides they endeavoured to prevent the dislodgement of the said Dutch, on account of the great advantage they derived from them. *B. C., I, 33.*

1613. Don Juan Tostado.

In June of 1613 he of Guiana . . . while disarmed and (sailing) for a run along the coast, encountered the **Caribs and Flemings.** *Same, p. 36.*

1614. Lieutenant of Guiana.

The insolence and ill-treatment which the **Aruacas suffered from the Flemish and Caribs** were such, etc. *Same, p. 36.*

1614. Don Juan Tostado.

Which comes of their [Carib] strong alliance with the Flemish, always moving together as they did when they attacked the **Arnacas.** *Same, p. 37.*

——. British Case.

The **Dutch** were **allied with the Indians against the Spaniards** of Santo Thomé and Trinidad. *B. C., 12.*

1614. British Case.

In 1614 the **Dutch invested** . . . **Trinidad in conjunction with the Caribs.** Reinforcements and ammunition were sent from Spain with a view to protecting that island, which was in imminent danger. *Same, p. 22.*

The English and **Dutch allied** themselves **with** the **Carib Indians against the Spaniards.** *Same, p. 23.*

1637. Corporation of Trinidad.

The said town [Santo Thome] has been taken, burnt and plundered by the enemy, the **Dutch** and **Indian Caribs** from the **River Bervis,** and **other tribes** from **Orinoco, Amacnro, and Essequibo.** The **Dutch** threaten this Island of Trinidad with a powerful fleet, and **are in league** with the numerous **Indian tribes,** and with the very natives of this island, who are all risen, the Dutch being so mixed with the Indians that they marry with the Indian Carib women, as well as with those of the other tribes.

On the 14th October of this year, 1637, the Governor, Don Diego de Escobar being in Guiana, the **Dutch and the Indian tribes of Aruacas, Caribs, Tibetibes and Nepuyos came in great numbers** to this Island of Trinidad.

B. C., I, 88.

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS; ALLIANCES FOR HOSTILE PURPOSES—IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1637. Governor of Margarita.

The **Dutch enemy,** on the 14th October of this year [1637] **burned and sacked the town of San Joseph de Oruna,** the principal settlement of the Spaniards in the said Island of Trinidad, **bringing with them** for this purpose **a number of Indians, Caribs, Arnacas, and Nepuyos.** *B. C., I, 90.*

1637. Miguel de Morillas.

The **Dutch** enemy **with a number of Indians of the Carib and other tribes,** attacked the said place [Santo Thome] and burned the houses.

The fact was that on the 14th October of this same year [1637] being Wednesday, early in the morning, **the enemy** [**Dutch,**] **attacked the town of San Joseph de Ornña** in the said Island of Trinidad, with twenty pirogues, **bringing with them great numbers of Carib Indians and Arnacas and Napuyos,** the latter being natives of the Island of Trinidad. *Same, p. 91.*

All the **Arnacas and Caribs were allied** with them. *Same, p. 92.*

1637. Jacinto de Mendoca.

On the 14th October, being St. Calixtus' Day, early in the morning, **the enemy** came with twenty pirogues, and coming up the River Caroni, **assaulted the town of San Joseph de Oruna,** a settlement of Spaniards on the said Island of Trinidad, **with a great number of Carib Indians and Arnacas and Nepuyos,** who are natives of the same island. *Same, p. 92.*

1637. Lorenzo Manuel.

The enemy [**Dutch**] had assaulted the said place of Santo Thome de la Guayana **with a large force of Carib Indians.**

On the 14th October of this year [1637], early in the morning, the said **Dutch enemy came** up the River Caroni to the Island of **Trinidad,** with twenty pirogues, **and attacked** the town of San Joseph de **Oruna, a settlement of the Spaniards** of about twenty-eight or thirty inhabitants, **bringing with them a great number of Indian bowmen, Caribs, Arnacas, and Nepuyos,** which latter are natives of the Island of Trinidad. *Same, pp. 93-94.*

An Indian, named **Andres,** . . . captured at the assault on Guayana, [Santo Thome] . . . said in Spanish that **the enemy had** . . . **many men and many tribes of Indians who assisted them.** *Same, p. 94.*

1637. Corporation of Trinidad.

On Wednesday morning, the 14th October [1637], the **Dutch, allied with** corsairs of the **Carib and other tribes, attacked** this town [**St. Joseph de Oruña** in Trinidad], . . . and burned the town and the principal church, so that nothing escaped.

He [**Andres**] is a Spanish-speaking Indian in the service of Captain Cristobal de Vera, whom the enemy took from Guayana [Santo Thome] when they seized the place. *Same, pp. 94-95.*

An Indian was taken belonging to Cristobal de Vera, speaking Spanish, and a Christian, called **Andres, otherwise Cabeza de Bugre** [Fish Head]. *Same, p. 99.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS; ALLIANCES FOR HOSTILE PURPOSES—IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1637. Don Lopez de Escobar, Governor of Guiana.

The Dutch are fortified in Essequibo, in union with the Indians their confederates, who are many, for they collect all the nations of those parts, and all the coast of Guayana and of Orinoco propose to come and attack the said town [Santo Thome].

The **Indians frequent them** [**Dutch trading ships**] very willingly for the sake of the considerable articles of barter they give them.

A powerful **enemy** who is **confederated** with all the **Indians.** *B. C., I, 107.*

I am informed that **the Dutch** continue to approach nearer to this town [Santo Thome] and that some of them **have settled among the Caribs their allies.** *Same, p. 108.*

1637. Archives of the Indies.

The enemy [**Dutch**] who **came** in such strength, **combined with the Carib Indians,** and, like robbers, they knew all the entrances so well that they were not perceived until they knocked at the doors and began setting fire to the houses.

Although the enemy remained for some days in the river, on account of the preparations which they heard of from the Indians, whom we regarded as friends but who were much more devoted to them than to us, they did not venture to come to close quarters. *Same, p. 115.*

1638. Governor of Caracas.

Escobar, Governor of Guayana and the Corporation of that city, have informed me . . . of the **distress and trouble** in which they are placed **through the hostility of the Hollanders, and** the **Indians** and Caribs and other nations **joined with them.** *Same, p. 100.*

1638. Corporation of Santo Thome.

The enemy [Dutch] hold seven towns on this coast, and all the **Caribs are joined with them,** and form a league and confederation with the object of destroying us, in order **to occupy this river** [**Orinoco**].

There are many natives of different tribes, all of whom the Dutch enemy try to attract with large quantities of articles of barter, which they distribute on all sides, merely with a view of attaining their object. *Same, pp. 102–103.*

1638. Maldonado.

The number of Christians who meet their death so cruelly at the hands of these savages [**Caribs**] will excite sympathy for making this concession, and numbers of poor residents will willingly go forth for the purpose of having security in all the coasts and farms, and on this remedy depends **their removal from alliance with the Lutherans.**

This **Island of Trinidad** has been very **frequently visited** by the peoples of different nations, and they have tried to settle the Punta de la Galera situated at the head of the island, and in order to have greater security in making the settlement, the **Dutch have united with the Carib Indians,** and have **attacked the town** and killed some Spaniards and **sacked it.** *Same, p. 125.*

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

I suppose . . . that, although Taricura is an Indian, and consequently his speeches might be despised, that he does not speak from himself alone, nor from confidence in their numbers, but from the **certainty of support from the Dutch.** *B. C.-C., App., 168.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES TO ENSLAVE UNCIVILIZED INDIANS.

1724. West India Company's Account Books.

Goods delivered in payment to 60 **Indians who have been at Post Wacquepo to serve 60 days against the Magenauts.** *B. C., VII, 179.*

1747. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

Their [**Carib**] pride and superiority over the other nations keeps them **in continual movement** against them, although they may be very distant, **with the view of slave-raiding, in order to sell them to the inhabitants of the Dutch Colonies**—Essequibo, Berbice, Corentine, and Surinam. *B. C., II, 53.*

1753. Director-General in Essequibo.

I intend . . . to attack them [the Mapissanoe Indians in the upper Essequibo] **with the assistance of the Caribs**, who have come and offered their services for this purpose. . . . This will take place much the more easily because they have also murdered some Caribs and Macusis, who are their nearest neighbours. *Same, p. 89.*

1760. Judicial report of attack by Spaniards upon the Dutch in Barima.

The said Dutch (in Barima) are waiting for a **batch of Indians whom they have ordered to be purchased through their allies, the Caribs**, who can go more freely up this river (Orinoco). *Same, p. 187.*

For the purpose of hindering the inhuman traffic of the Dutch with the Carib Indians, which the latter carry on **by the sale of infidels of other tribes, whom they capture in wars or by raids, and sell as slaves to the said Dutch** for small prices. *Same, p. 188.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES TO ENSLAVE SPANISH INDIANS.

——. British Case.

Other expeditions [to catch slaves] . . . were from time to time organized, the **Caribs never failing to respond to the calls** made **upon them.** *B. C., p. 95.*

1613. Corporation of Trinidad.

The **Flemish and Caribs steal the friendly Indians** and carry them to their settlements to employ them in cultivating tobacco. *B. C., I, 35.*

1637. Jacques Ousiel.

On the east side of the island named Punta Galera dwell two nations of Indians, the one called **Nipujos and** the other **Arawaks**, over 600 able men; these **are friendly to the Dutch**, especially the Nipujos, who are deadly enemies of the Spaniards; but the Arawaks occasionally serve the Spaniards in rowing their canoes, and cannot be relied upon so well. *U. S. Com., II, 87.*

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

"On my return journey I [Araguacare, Lieutenant-General of the Carib tribe on the Orinoco,] am going to kill them all; . . . when I have done this, I am going to summon my relations from Essequibo, (this is what Taricura calls the Dutch) and I am coming with them to burn Guayana, for **all this Orinoco is**

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES TO ENSLAVE SPANISH INDIANS—(Continued).

mine, and its inhabitants are my slaves, and so I can give and sell them to whomsoever I please. I do not wish them to belong to the Spaniards, but that the Dutch should have them. Do you not see that I bring Dutchmen to my wars without the people of Guayana saying anything to me, and they continue to live in my house for one or two years, or as long as they choose; and they and the French give me as many muskets and shot as I want, and the Spaniards take them from me if they see them, for they are very evil, while the Dutch are good, and give us many presents. I will bring numbers of Dutch, and they will not leave a white man alive in Orinoco; and on my return I will kill the Fathers.

B. C.-C., App., 167.

1733. Corporation of Trinidad.

Nothing can be expected from the said Carib tribe save the total ruin of the entire province of Guiana, for they keep all the other tribes of Indians in a state of terror, and exhaustion through the slaughter they commit among them; and those who are not killed by their hands they **sell as slaves to the Dutch** of the adjoining Colonies; and these Dutch in order to keep up this iniquitous and base trade with them, give them assistance in arms, ammunition, and men for use against the Spaniards. *Same, p. 176.*

By the offensive and defensive alliance which they [Caribs] have with certain Dutchmen, to the prejudice of the natural liberty of the Indians, . . . their objects are directed to **the destruction of the other tribes of Indians, whom they enslave in order to keep them** under their dominion, **or sell them to the Dutch,** as they are in the habit of doing. *Same, p. 177.*

1734. Father Joseph Gumilla.

Both nations [**Dutch and Carib**] come up from the sea to **rob and burn the villages of the Missions and carry off as many captives as they can, and sell them** at Essequibo, Berbice and Surinam. *B. C., III, 84.*

1745. Father Joseph Gumilla.

Besides the profit from slaves the Dutch are moved to **keep up their strong alliance with the Caribs,** by the value of the Balsam of Tolu (Aceite de Maria), and of a species of bixwort found on the Orinoco. To procure these some Dutch introduce themselves among the fleets of these Indians, painted according to the custom of the said savages, by which they encourage them, and add boldness to the lamentable destruction which they work. Added to which, many Caribs receive a great supply of arms, ammunition, glass beads, and other trifles, with the understanding that they are to be paid for within a certain time with Indians, which they must take prisoners on the Orinoco. And when the time has elapsed, the **Dutch creditors encourage and even oblige the Caribs to their bloody raids against the defenceless Indians of the Orinoco.**

V. C., II, 294–295.

1747. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I should already long ago have removed and demolished the first fort up in Cuyuni (which even now is **easy of accomplishment** on my part **through the Caribs**). *B. C., II, 49.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES TO ENSLAVE SPANISH INDIANS—(Continued).

1751. Acting Commandeur in Essequibo.

Persik . . . informed me that in the month of January [1751] the **Carib nation made a raid upon three Spanish Missions**, and murdered four or five priests, which caused much disorder and bitter feeling amongst the colonists there. *B. C., II, 70.*

1753. King of Spain.

The Catalonian Capuchin missionaries of the Province of Guayana have made known the injuries and **murders** which have been committed **in their missions by** certain villages of **Caribs belonging to these, through the influence of the Dutch of Essequibo**, as is supposed because they have taken refuge in that Colony, and because **the Governor** of it **gives them license to make slaves** of all the Indians whom they find. *V. C., III, 372.*

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

No one is better informed than your Excellency of the number and condition of the Indian Caribs dwelling on the banks of the Orinoco, and of the **ravages they have committed on our Missions, influenced and directed by the Dutch.** *B. C., II, 89.*

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

They **[Caribs] have made an alliance with the Panacays . . . and both together surprised that Mission**, [in Cuyuni] massacred the priest and ten or twelve Spaniards, and have demolished the buildings. *Same, p. 96.*

1757. Court of Justice.

Councillor Piepersberg having communicated both to his Excellency and to the meeting that he had been requested by Johannes Neuman, the Postholder in the Cuyuni, to say that the **Caribs** there **had determined to make a raid upon and devastate the Spanish Mission** situated up in that river.

Same, p. 130.

1758. Director-General in Essequibo.

It would **not** be very **difficult** for me, **by making use of the Caribs, to pay them back in their own coin** and drive them from their present position. But since the Indians are unwilling to go without having some white men at their head, . . . I shall not think of it without having received express authority.

Same, p. 144.

1760. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

The Caribs in the settlements made repeated journeys to the dwellings in the woods, obtaining permission from their missionary fathers **on the pretext** of bringing to the settlement some of their relatives, and **occupied themselves in** the same work [**slave-catching**] as those in the woods. Some remained there and others returned to their settlements. *Same, p. 183.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

He [Governor Sucre] made several expeditions to pursue **the Dutch** and other foreigners, who **in union with the Caribs** used to **raid the said provinces and the Orinoco.** *B. C., III, 18.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES TO ENSLAVE SPANISH INDIANS—(Continued).

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The **Caribs and Dutch**, who, by way of the Cuyuni and Mazaruni Rivers, and on the rear of the said Missions, had attemped **to wage hostilities against them** [**Spaniards**], have been harassed; and to prevent this in future **several expeditions** have been **sent out**, and one of these **surprised a stronghold, built by the Dutch** on the **River Cuyuni**, where they had gathered all the Indians of other tribes captured by the Caribs and sold to them for mere trifles.

B. C., III, 20.

By means of these advanced Missions the **Dutch protected by the Caribs**, have been prevented . . . from reaching . . . the Cuyuni and the Massaruni Rivers, **to commit acts of hostility**, to **kidnap Indians**, . . . and to **make new settlements** in the centre of this province. *Same, p. 21.*

The vigilance of my predecessors was not enough to prevent all the **ravages** that at different times had been **carried out by the Carib Indians always supported and encouraged by foreigners, especially by the Dutch.** *Same, p. 35.*

His Majesty issued the following Resolution: The Catalonian Capuchin Missionaries of the jurisdiction of Guayana have represented the injuries and **atrocities perpetrated in their Missions by some Carib settlements, under the influence of the Dutch from Essequibo**, as it is surmised, on account of their having taken refuge in the said Colony and because the Governor of the same grants them letters patent **to make slaves of all the Indians whom they meet.** *Same, p. 44.*

To-day it [Guayana fortress] is now sufficiently fortified **to prevent the foreigners' illicit trade and the entrance of the Caribs, their allies**, in the Orinoco, and their landing and hostile demonstrations against these Provinces, as they did before until the year 1747. *Same, p. 48.*

The Dutch natives in those Colonies who accompany the Caribs teach them to manage fire-arms, and **are even more inhuman than the Caribs, for which reason great vigilance is needful to restrain them and defend the said Missions**, which they endeavour to destroy in order that they may not serve as a check to their Colonies. *Same, p. 64.*

1769. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

After the rebellion of all the Caribs in the year 1750 in our five Missions of Miamo, Cunuri, Tupuquen, Curumo, and Mutanambo, . . . they then told us, what we had already surmised, that the **outbreak was instigated by the Dutch.**

I also saw and recognized a Dutch mulatto who came disguised as a Carib, to instruct and encourage the Caribs. His name, and he himself, is well known in these Missions. *B. C., IV, 21.*

At that time we suspected that **the Caribs** would **rebel** again as in the past, as they showed signs of insolence, which they do **at a word from the meanest Dutchman.** This comes from the protection they receive at Essequibo whenever they escape from our Missions; and now another plot has been discovered among the Caribs of our Missions and those of the Observant Fathers; **their intention being to revolt** and take refuge in the Parava, **under the protection of the Dutch.** *Same, p. 22.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES TO ENSLAVE SPANISH INDIANS—(Continued).

1769. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

The chief Caribs they [**Dutch**] **have are fugitives from our villages** and those of the Observant Fathers, and they are always trying to attract more. *B. C., IV, 23.*

The Caribs . . . labour continually, under the direction of the Dutch, in the destruction of our villages by various means, at one time burning them, as they did in 1750; at another time attacking them by main force; at another raising rebellion by diabolic craft and policy; . . . the Dutch, together with the Caribs, have destroyed . . . seven of our established villages, without counting those which they burnt and destroyed belonging to the Jesuit missionaries and to the Observants. *Same, p. 50.*

1772. Don Manuel Centurion.

Shortly after the expedition . . . had left this city to take possession of the famous Lake Parime . . . **the** Catalan **Capuchins** undertook a similar expedition; . . . as they were **on the** banks of the **Mayari** . . . they were **attacked by** savage **Indians, friends, allies, and relations of the Dutch** (as they proclaimed themselves with cries, and which was further proved by the fire-arms and ammunition which they used against our people). *Same, p. 106.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES FOR DEFENCE OF DUTCH.

1614. Antonio de Muxica Buitron, Lieut. of Guiana.

The insolence and ill-treatment which the Aruacas suffered from the **Flemish and Caribs** were such that he [Buitron] proceeded to the river called Corentine, 200 leagues from that city [Santo Thomé] where the **Flemish and Caribs** have a fortress. *B. C., I, 36.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Postholder of Wacquepo and Moruka came the day before yesterday [July 18, 1746] to inform me that a nation of Indians have come down from Orinoco and have attacked the Caribs subject to us in the River Wayni [perhaps the Akawaini, a small tributary of the Pomeroon. *See U. S. Com., III, pp. 283–284. Also B. C., II, p. 48 D; 70 C.*], have killed several, and have threatened that they would extirpate them all, . . . I have **strong reasons to suspect that the Indians have been sent by the Spaniards of Cumaná.** *B. C., II, 45.*

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

We have ordered the Captains to . . . **warn the Caribs and other Indians** at the earliest opportunity, **to make ready** as soon as possible ships to serve as outlying posts, and to send a messenger to Orinoco with a letter from me to the Commandant there. *Same, p. 95.*

I have had all the Indians, our allies, warned and armed, and they only await my orders to march and send expresses to our neighbours and allies. *Same, p. 99.*

The Indians above in Cuyuni, have only this week caused me to be assured that they will well guard the passage, and that I had nothing to fear from that side. *Same, p. 100.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES FOR DEFENCE OF DUTCH—(Continued).

1755. Director-General in Essiquibo.

As I now write this I have staying at my house the chiefs of the Panacay tribe up in the Cuyuni. **I must** absolutely **keep them friendly, for many weighty reasons.** . . .

The Chief of the Panacays (a mighty nation which has never before been here) **have expressly come down to offer their help against the Spaniards if required,** and they are going to settle down with their dwellings round the Post. *B. C., II, 119.*

1755. Arraytana, a Carib Chief.

My journey [to Essequibo] was because I had been summoned by the orders of my ally, his Excellency, who told me . . . that . . . the reason why he had summoned me, [was] in order to tell me that I must hold myself **in readiness to come and help him resist the Spaniards.**

I asked my ally, his Excellency, for permission to go to Upper Essequibo, [*boven Essequebo*] in order to make my bread in Masseroeny before my journey to Essequibo.

"Would you not kill those who seek you?" I answered, "No; because your Lord, my ally, only recently forbade me most expressly to do no harm to the nation, who are his friends or allies." *Same, p. 126.*

1755. British Case.

In 1755 the Panacays settled in the neighborhood of the Cuyuni Post **to prevent the encroachments of the Spaniards.** *B. C., 95.*

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

These [guns and cutlasses] will be urgently required, especially **if the piracies continue,** in which case **we shall be obliged to employ the Carib nation,** who cannot or will not fight without guns. *B. C., II, 217.*

On the 11th September, [1762] **the Carib nation** unexpectedly **sent messengers** down the river, **inquiring how matters stood with the Spaniards, saying that they would certainly not allow the latter to obtain a footing here,** and that they were ready to aid us with all their might.

I answered that there was no great danger yet, . . . but I requested them to be good enough to keep their arms and boats ready to come down at the least warning, and that in such an event we would provide them with powder and shot. This they accepted and promised. *Same, p. 218.*

1762. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We also send you herewith fifty muskets and cutlasses, so as if need be to arm therewith the natives **for the defence of the Colony.** *Same, pp. 220–221.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

In this emergency I have again had a talk with Van der Heyde about Cuyuni. He has told me that the Indians were won over to be helpful, but that **they wished in that case to be assured also of protection against the Spaniards.** *B. C., III, 118.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES FOR DEFENCE OF DUTCH—(Continued).

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

Friendly relations with the Indians are certainly of the greatest necessity to the Colony; the dangerous circumstances in which we found ourselves, and the **loyalty shown and assistance rendered at that time by the Caribs and Acuways**, have given **convincing proofs** of what advantage **their friendship, and how injurious their enmity, might be to the Colonies.** *B. C., III, 118.*

1765. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We were glad to see . . . that you intended . . . to keep a **watchful eye upon the movements of the Spaniards**, and to take proper measures against them, in case this should unhappily become necessary. Still we are of opinion that the **friendship and help of the Carib nation** would under such circumstances be to us of uncommon utility, . . . for which reason we **strongly recommend that you cultivate it as much as possible.**

Same, pp. 125–126.

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

I can rely upon the assistance of the Caribs in case we have to meet violence with violence, but so long as circumstances demand soft measures they are no earthly use to me, **their hatred against the Spaniards being deep-rooted and great.** *Same, p. 142.*

1769. Director-General in Essequibo.

I asked the Carib Owl this morning whether the Caribs were no longer men, and whether they had no hands with which to defend themselves, whereupon he replied, "Indeed, they have; **but the Spaniards have guns, and we only bows and arrows. Give us rifles, powder, and shot, and we will show you what we are.**" Even had I been inclined to do so I could not, having no further supply of these than just sufficient for the garrison. *B. C., IV, 13.*

1790. Lopez de la Puente.

As there is a petty King or Carib Chief, enemy of the rebellious slaves, and allied with the Dutch in the territory intervening, it would not be possible to go that way without being perceived, and then the Dutch would quickly arm **the Caribs to prevent our going to the interior, precisely as they did [in 1768].**

The greatest care would have to be exercised so that the **Caribs, friends of the Dutch, should not come to know of it, otherwise the affair would fail.**

B. C., V, 121.

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS; ALLIANCES FOR TRADE, IN GENERAL.

——. British Case.

They [Indians] were also from the earliest Dutch times largely **employed, on an organized system, in growing and preparing annatto** [oriane dye], **in collecting balsam** and other natural forest products, and in bringing these to the Posts to be forwarded to the Dutch markets. Large numbers of Indians were also habitually employed by the Dutch **in well-established fisheries** along the whole coast from the Essequibo to the Orinoco, and even beyond, but more especially in the mouths of the Waini, Barima, and Amakuru Rivers, and up the right bank of the Orinoco as far as the Aguirre. *B. C., 96.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS; ALLIANCES FOR TRADE, IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1604. J. Maldonado Barnuevo.

As the Dutch go among them giving three yards of Rouen print and other cotton stuffs, where the Spanish merchant only gives them one, and buying the products of the land, and all the merchandise they have for sale, at double the price paid or current in the country, **they** [Indians] **will prefer their** [Dutch] **trade and traffic to that of Spain,** as we see they now do with the English, French and Flemish. *B. C.-C., App., 5.*

1637. Corporation of Trinidad.

The forces of the enemy have increased in this Government on the mainland, with new settlements among the Carib and **Aruac nations,** who are **allied with them,** and they are settled on the River Essequibo.

When the Governor, Don Diego Lopez de Escobar, arrived to take possession of his government in the Island of Trinidad, he found the **enemy settled** therein in two forts **and in alliance with the natives.** *B. C., I, 109.*

1638. Governor of Guiana.

With many gifts of **articles of barter** and clothing, **which they give to the Indians, they hold all the country on their side, and being thus united and** in particular **to the Caribs,** who are in great numbers. *Same, p. 101.*

1638. Anonymous letter in the archives at Seville.

From the fortress [Essequibo], as already stated, **they** [Dutch] **trade** and traffic **with the Indians of** the same settlements, and with those who are established in **Aguire** and in **Abarima** and in Bauruma [**Pomeroou**].

Same, pp. 115-116.

It is known for certain from the same Aruacs who are the ones who always report these occurrences, that the **Dutch** sent to Flanders before they took Guayana [Santo Thome] for ships and barter, in order to settle it **through the influence they already possess with all the natives of the Orinoco and interior,** who are in communication with one another by land, . . . **they will do it** [**settle the Essequibo river**] **very easily through the good understanding between the natives and themselves.** *Same, p. 116.*

1638. Maldonado.

All [**Indians of the lower Orinoco**] **trade** and traffic **with the Dutch and others** of other nations. *Same, p. 120.*

The Caribs there [**Essequibo**] **give to the Lutherans the spices which they have,** as well to them as to those who arrive in ships which trade with those of the said fort. *Same, p. 124.*

1690. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The annatto is at present much in demand and at a good price; therefore we recommend you to employ all conceivable means to **get as much dye as is possible,** and **for that purpose** to **gather in again the dispersed Indians** and stimulate them thereto by promise of certain favorable conditions. *U. S. Com., II, 192.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS; ALLIANCES FOR TRADE—IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1701. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

February 5, [1701]. There also **arrived some Indians with** a small quantity of **poultry**, who, having received payment for the same, again departed. *B. C.-C., App., 140.*

1724. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

The Court [of Policy finds] it necessary to draw up these instructions [to destroy the Maganout Indians] since the **Akawois and Caribs** who have been killed, **and are under the protection of this river, are a source of great advantage to the same**, being frequently sent up above, salting, by the Honourable Company and by the colonists. *B. C., II, 2.*

1733. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

Every possible means is being employed here **to cultivate the trade with the Indians**, but the many branches into which the nation is split up, and the absence of good interpreters, are great obstacles to success. *Same, p. 17.*

1734. Father Joseph Gumilla.

Besides the profit from slaves the Dutch are moved to **keep up their close alliance with the Caribs**, by the value of the balsam of Tolu (Aceite de Maria), and of the annatto found on the Orinoco. *B. C., III, 84.*

1771. Commandant of Guayana.

Very few of the latter [**Arawaks**] have remained in the woods, for besides not being a numerous race, they have now for many years been **united to the Dutch, and incorporated in their Colonies** both in relationship and other ties. Of the Guarauno Indians there are many on the islands and creeks at the mouths of the Orinoco, but it is difficult to reduce them, because the neighbourhood of the Dutch of Esquivo gives them a sufficient supply of hatchets, knives, and other baubles which they value highly, in exchange for the fish and wax they obtain and pirogues and launches which they build in their native woods. *B. C., IV, 83.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES FOR TRADE IN SLAVES AND CAPTURE OF RUNAWAYS.

——. British Case.

The Dutch employed them [Arawaks] at the Post of Moruka; for the fishery in the Orinoco, and the salting industry generally; and also in the **recapture of fugitive slaves.** *B. C., 11.*

Friendly relations with the native Indian tribes, and effective control over them, were essential to the Dutch, for many reasons, but particularly because of the presence of a hostile and turbulent slave element, . . . always ready for revolt . . . as well as . . . to desert. . . . **To prevent desertion of slaves** the **Dutch** were **compelled to depend upon** the **assistance of** the Caribs, Akawois, and Arawaks, and other **Indian tribes**, to whom it was customary to **pay rewards for each slave re-captured.** *Same, p. 92.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES FOR TRADE IN SLAVES AND CAPTURE OF RUNAWAYS—(Continued).

——. British Case.

The services of **Indians** were **indispensible in preventing** the **escape of slaves** by sea.

The assistance of the Indians . . . in the case of mutiny or the still graver occurrence of a slave rebellion, was essential for the safety of the Colony. It frequently happened that slaves instead of taking one or other of the routes to foreign Colonies, made off to the bush, intrenched themselves in the swamps or in the forests of the interior, and defied the Dutch to drive them out. At such times the services of the Indians could not be dispensed with. *B. C., 93.*

Throughout the whole of the eighteenth century the Dutch had to contend with repeated **risings of** the **negroes**, in all of which the **Indians gave** them **assistance**, and in one . . . the native tribes from every part of the Dutch territory—from the Orinoco to Berbice—were actively employed **in** combined **military operations against the rebels.** *Same, pp. 93-94.*

——. British Counter Case.

The relations between the Dutch and the Caribs . . . was an element of strength, and materially confirmed and extended Dutch power in Guiana. **The Caribs** continually **offered their assistance** to the Dutch; **the Dutch could call upon them at any time to aid them either against revolted negroes, Dutch or slave deserters**, or Spanish aggression, but the Caribs offered their services to friends, and came as allies of the strong, not as protectors of the weak. *B. C.-C., 85.*

1638. Maldonado.

The **Caribs sell** these **Lutherans** the **Indian women** they steal from the villages, and **thereby they are in their service.** *B. C., I, 120.*

1724. Governor of Cumana.

As soon as I arrived in this Government . . . news was frequently sent me that many foreigners—the Dutch from Surinam and Berbice—came to these places trading, in vessels, and penetrating more than 100 leagues up the Orinoco, and more than 30 above Angostura, the Fathers lamenting **the trade carried on with the Caribs**, the sale of tools, stuffs, wine, spirits, guns, and other arms, which they exchanged **for a large number of Indian slaves.** *B. C., III, 78.*

By means of this fortress [at Angostura] your Majesty will prevent the trade and commerce of foreigners with the Caribs. *Same, p. 79.*

1733. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The outrunner, Van der Burg, who has been among the tribes up in Essequibo for more than a year altogether in order to trade, **sent me in September last one creole with two slave women and some copaiba balsam**, writing that he would himself come down in November. *B. C., II, 16.*

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I had information . . . that they [Spaniards] were thinking next year of founding yet another [Mission] lower down [the Cuyuni] whereat **the inhabitants are very much aggrieved, and the Carib Indians a great deal more so, since it perfectly closes the Slave Traffic in that direction from which alone that nation derive their livelihood.** *Same, p. 46.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES FOR TRADE IN SLAVES AND CAPTURE OF RUN-AWAYS—(Continued).

1750. Acting Commandeur in Essequibo.

I immediately caused information thereof [**escape of some slaves**] to be given to the Carib and the Awawois nations, and entertain no doubt that **they will be taken alive or dead.** *B. C., II, 70.*

1752. Director-General in Essequibo.

There is a rumour here that **some negroes have made their appearance up in Essequibo, . . . I . . . have,** under a promise of good payment, strongly **persuaded the Indians of the Akawois nation** living below the Post [Arinda] **to go out and capture them,** and they have promised me to do so. *Same, p. 76.*

1755. Don Eugenio Alvarado.

Oraparene is a man of advanced intelligence, and openly replied that he did not want to give up his Kingship and go into a state of misery in the Mission, where he could not have authority, . . . [wives] **freedom to capture poitos,** or to trade with his friends the Dutch. . . . To these reasons he added many others in favour of uncivilized life, and so he remains obstinately attached to that sort of existence. *Same, p. 111.*

The Dutch Colonies have a kind of alliance with the many savage tribes of Indians living in the forests, which run from north to south and separate the province of Guiana from the Dutch settlements. They hold with these Indians a commerce of barter and exchange, giving hatchets, knives, choppers, gaudy ornaments, and glass beads in **exchange for the poitos or slaves,** which these tribes of savages make between themselves. *Same, p. 118.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

The account you [Ferreras] were good enough to give me, [Garriga] of your journey, was as follows: . . . That the murderers [who destroyed the Mission Avechica] were some **Caribs,** who in the year (17)50 had rebelled in the settlement of Tupuquen, commanded by the Indian Caiarivare, the Alcalde of the said settlement of Tupuquen; and that the said aggressors were living in the interior, on the River Cuyuni and at the very mouth of the River Corumo; that they were **living with some Dutchmen from the Colony of Essequibo, engaged in Slave Traffic for the said Colony;** that the principal reason for their murdering the said Captain was because he was founding a settlement in the neighbourhood of Avechica, and thereby was closing the pass of the River Usupama; and . . . that the said Dutch, with these very same Caribs, are still living at the mouth of the River Corumo, buying Indian slaves. *Same, p. 145.*

1760. Director-General in Essiquibo.

I . . . took measures to have the whole sea-coast guarded by Caribs, so that it was impossible for the slaves to get to Orinoco. What I most feared was that they might take the road through Cuyuni where, since the raid upon the Post by the Spaniards there are no more Indians, and there was therefore no means of stopping them. *Same, p. 186.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES FOR TRADE IN SLAVES AND CAPTURE OF RUNAWAYS—(Continued).

1760. Director-General in Essequibo.

I had **sent warning** to all the Posts, **and had the coast guarded by the Carib nation, so that it should be impossible for the slaves to make off in that direction.** The road to Cuyuni was open to them, because since the raid upon the Post there by the Spaniards the river has not been occupied, and the road to Orinoco is an open and easy one. *B. C., II, 197.*

1761. Governor of Cumana.

The Dutch . . . go by this river [Orinoco], and those of Mazaroni and Cuyuni, **protected by the Carib Indians, pillaging and capturing the Indians** that are not Caribs, from this Province, **and reducing them to slavery,** in the same way as they do with the negroes, and sell them and employ them in their plantations and farms. *V. C., II, 342.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

[In the Upper Orinoco between 1579 and 1720] the Dutch, chiefly, bought from the Caribs and carried away all the Indians they could, for the establishment and cultivation of the plantations in their Colonies of Essequibo, Berbice, Surinam and Corentin. *B.C., III, 11.*

[The Spaniards] found in that stronghold [Dutch Cuyuni post] . . . **the current account which the said Dutch kept with the Caribs.** *Same, p. 20.*

1768. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

Against the desertion of the slaves from the Colony to Orinoco we know no other means of provision than the projected coast guards, *Same, p. 183.*

In the meanwhile, the measures which have been taken, . . . of **encouraging the free Indians to bring in the runaways are** . . . very good, if carried out, but still it seems to us that they are in no way sufficient to efficaciously stop and hinder the runaways. *Same, p. 184.*

1771. Director-General in Essequibo.

In all places **where Caraibans are** living in the neighborhood **there is little fear of desertion [of slaves].** *B. C., IV, 96.*

1772. Director-General in Essequibo.

The former **Postholders in Maroco were able to** do something to **arrest the** progress of this evil [**slaves running away**], they **having** at least **six or seven hundred Indians around that Post,** some of whom they could always have out at sea, but the unauthorized attacks of the Spaniards have driven these natives away. *Same, p. 101.*

1777. Court of Policy, Essequibo.

An order about . . . the cultivation of **friendship with the Indians,** &c., **for the purpose of preventing the flight of slaves** on that side . . . was agreed to. *Same, p. 184.*

1777. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

We confirm by these presents the orders already given several times to **cultivate friendly feelings with the Indians, which same may be of great service in recovering fugitive slaves,** and . . . that they may be always at the service of the Government, upon which the security of both colonies so greatly depends. *V. C.-C., III, 297.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES, INCONSTANT CHARACTER OF.

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

But even this friendship was by no means either constant or exclusive. **The Caribs were at times the friends, but at times also the enemies of the Dutch.** They attacked Dutch settlements and posts; they allied themselves with French and English against the Dutch; the very Barima Caribs . . . were the ones who guided the French from the Barima to the Pomeroon in 1689, and who helped in the destruction of the new Dutch Colony there.

V. C.-C., 104–105.

1638. Anonymous letter in the archives at Seville.

They [Dutch] are settled in Amacuro . . . with a great population of **Carib Indians** . . . It is known from Aruac Indians that although it is true that they **are in peaceful communication with** Guayana [**Santo Thome**] **they also receive bribes from the Dutch,** and have trade and intercourse with them. *B. C., I, 115.*

1662. Governor of Trinidad.

These foreign nations hold at their disposal all the **Indian natives** of these Windward coasts. *Same, p. 153.*

1681. Commander in Essequibo.

We know as yet . . . of no war, nor even of rumours thereof, and now **live on satisfactory terms with the natives** of this country.

Same, p. 184.

1724. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

The Court received a Report . . . that **the Maganonts** nation **had killed all the Caribs and Akawois they could get hold of,** and that those whom they captured alive they sold at other places . . . further . . . that that nation intended to come and kill the Christians and ruin this river at the first opportunity. *B. C., II, 2.*

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

It is the height of imprudence in the colonists that, . . . they . . . **put into the hands of that warlike [Carib] nation,** who beyond dispute are the bravest and most numerous on this coast, the **weapons which in future may bring about their own destruction.** *Same, p. 67.*

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

As I now write this I have staying at my house the chiefs of the **Panacay tribe up in the Cuyuni. I must absolutely keep them friendly, for many weighty reasons.** *Same, p. 119.*

The nation of **the Aenways,** which is very strong in the interior, and some of whose villages, both in Essequibo and in Massaruni and Demerary are situated next to our plantations, **commenced by attacking the dwellings of some free creoles belonging to the plantation Oosterbeek, and massacring those they found there.** *Same, p. 120.*

1758. Fray Jose de Therriaga.

It is well that the **Caribs** should keep **withdrawing from the Cuyuni, even if it be through fear of the Dutch.** *V. C., II, 325.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—ALLIANCES, INCONSTANT CHARACTER OF—(Continued).

1758. Santiago Bonaldes.

That **he made use of the Caribs** who infest these parts, and they conducted them in a friendly manner, taking all care that they should neither be observed nor heard, to a certain place (which he does not remember), where they met a white Dutchman.

All being arranged in good order [**for the attack on the Cuyuni Post**]. (In which disposition he took the opinion and judgment of the Caribs themselves.)

B. C., II, 159.

1758. Juan Jose Fragas.

That from thence they [the Spaniards en route to the Cuyuni Post] departed **in company with some Carib Indians.** *Same, p. 162.*

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

So long as we have the good fortune to stand well with the Indians (and I shall always try to remain so), and keep them under our protection, so long, I say, **we need have no fear.** *Same, pp. 211-212.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—PROTECTION GIVEN INDIANS BY THE DUTCH.

——. British Case.

The Company was obliged in very early times to interfere **to protect the natives from the whites.** *B. C., 85.*

In their **protectorate** over and government of the Indian tribes, the Dutch secured the loyal service of those tribes in duties of a military or quasi-military character.

The Indians, however, acted not only as the allies and soldiers of the Dutch but also as their servants, being employed by them, as afterwards by the British, for various duties of an industrial character. *Same, p. 95.*

The districts of **Amakuru and Barima** were occupied by **Caribs** and other Indians, who **acknowledged the Protectorate and jurisdiction of the Dutch;** the whole of this region was dealt with in all respects as an integral portion of the Colony of British Guiana. *Same, p. 114.*

When ill-treated by Dutch traders they [Indians of Barima] complained to the Court of Justice for the Colony of Essequibo. *Same, p. 115.*

The Dutch West India Company received authority from the States-General to establish, and, in fact, **established, a Protectorate** over the Indian tribes of Guiana.

The Dutch and British employed the Indians living within the territory now in dispute in services both of a military and industrial character.

Subsidies were for many years paid to the Indians for military services by the Dutch and British Governments respectively. *Same, p. 119.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—PROTECTION GIVEN INDIANS BY THE DUTCH—(Continued).

1750. Court of Justice.

His Honour . . . stated that some Caribs from the River Massaruni were come to complain of the colonists Pieter Marchal, . . . said Marchal, . . . had made them and their wives work for nearly four months without giving them any payment.

The accused . . . is sharply admonished to leave the Indians there unmolested in their liberties, and to duly pay them for their services rendered.

Complaints concerning similar ill-treatment of the Caribs by Pieter de Bakker being confirmed . . . **Pieter de Bakker is to be reprimanded.**

B. C., II, 64.

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I had the honour to give your Honours information of the intolerable and inexcusable dealings of some of our itinerant traders above in the River Essequibo, which caused me to fear that the nations there would be induced to revenge themselves. . . . I have never been able to obtain proof . . . sufficient for a Court so as to be able to punish any of them according to their deserts.

Wherefore, being convinced of the justice of the Indians' complaints, I closed the river, and forbade individuals trading there.

Jan Stok . . . committed horrible enormities there [Upper Essequibo]. Accompanied by a party of Orinoco Caribs, he attacked the nations our friends close by the Post Arinda, caused all the men to be killed, and carried the women and children away as slaves, ruined all the provision gardens, and perpetrated many unheard of things.

In a word, **they have made the Indians desperate, who intend to take vengeance therefor, so that the other traders who are still up the river are in extreme peril of life,** and the plantations up the Essequibo run the risk of being deserted. *Same, p. 64.*

The **wantonness of the** rovers, or **traders,** up in Essequibo **should** also **be** forcibly **restrained, for by it the tribes are greatly embittered.** The wantonness goes so far that certain of these do not hesitate even to go with some tribes to make war upon others, or greatly to maltreat them, often carrying off free people and selling them as slaves, and abusing the Indian women. *Same, p. 67.*

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

Up to the present **no plantation has been attacked except those whose owners,** according to common report, **are accused of having grossly ill-treated that nation,** and who were the cause of several Acuways being killed by the Caribs. *Same, p. 121.*

1762. Court of Justice.

Serious complaints had been made to him concerning Nicholas Stedevelt and the free Indians, to the effect that he, Stedevelt, had gone so far as to wound an Indian up the Essequibo so . . . that the man had died therefrom the following day, . . . His Excellency considering such conduct likely to lead to many evil and dangerous results, had caused the **said Stedevelt to be apprehended.**

It was decided . . . to send away the aforesaid **Stedevelt by the Essequibos Welvaeren . . . on account of his frequent ill-treatment of the free Indians, for which he has already received correction in former times.** *B. C.-C., App., 208.*

NATURE AND PURPOSE OF DUTCH-INDIAN RELATIONS—PROTECTION GIVEN INDIANS BY THE DUTCH—(Continued).

1769. Commandeur in Demerary.

No one , . . is more convinced how advantageous and necessary the friendship of the Indians is to this Colony, because so long as we are fortunate enough to have them living around us we are quite safe inland, and have nothing to fear concerning the desertion of our slaves. I therefore neglect no possible opportunity of cultivating the friendship of the same, and of **protecting them from all the ill-treatment and tyranny of the whites**, . . . and in this way I have made myself so beloved by them that **I can now get them to do whatever I wish.** *B. C., IV, 5.*

1785. Court of Policy.

He shall take good care that the post be kept in proper order; **shall, for the benefit and welfare of the Post, treat all Indians properly**; shall enrol and take into protection about the Post as many of them as his means shall allow; and, besides, shall not suffer any wrong to be done (by any person, no matter who) to any belonging to these tribes. *B. C., V, 29.*

He shall not be at liberty to go from the Post for the purpose of carrying on any trade or commerce among the Indians, but **shall do his utmost that the trade with the Indians** for the profit of this Colony **be more and more established.** *Same, p. 30.*

RELATIONS TO THE ESSEQUIBO DUTCH; CREOLE-DUTCH LANGUAGE.

——. British Case.

As a result of the constant intercourse between the Dutch and the Indians, there sprung up a language known as **"Creole Dutch,"** which, when the British came into possession of the conquered territories, formed the best and most convenient form of communication between the settlers and the native population. *B. C., 96–97.*

This language was spoken by Indians of the Massaruni, Essequibo and Cuyuni as the language next to their own best understood by them, and was used by them in their intercourse with the settlers. *Same, p. 97.*

All the Indian Captains in the Barima (including the Aruka) and Waini . . . **The Creole Dutch was spoken** among them. *Same, p. 117.*

The **Indians** in the district **up to the Amakuru speak English** as well as their own language, and the **Spanish language is not spoken** by any Indian tribes except the refugees from Venezuela settled on the Moruka. *Same, p. 162.*

——. British Counter Case.

Creole-Dutch was also the common language among the Indians in the centre of the Colony (*i. e.* in the valleys of the Cuyuni, Massaruni, and Central Essequibo) so far as they used any language but their own. . . . **English and Creole-Dutch are the only languages, except their own, used by Indians in any part of the territory now in dispute, with the exception of the Spanish Arawaks.** *B. C.-C., 26.*

RELATIONS TO THE ESSEQUIBO DUTCH; CREOLE-DUTCH LANGUAGE—(Continued).

1768. Court of Justice.

His Excellency reported that it would be necessary to appoint and administer an oath to a **permanent interpreter of the Indian languages**, and also to give him a small salary, and for this purpose he proposes the person of Jean Baptiste, which is agreed to by the Court. *B. C.-C., App., 216.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

I left the two Guaraunos Indians we captured in Moruca at the first settlement, having treated them well. . . . They showed that they were highly gratified, and the younger, who was very sensible and handsome, **spoke English and Dutch**, and told me to pass where they lived on my return, . . . I thanked him for his offers, though they can not be relied upon, since the Guaranna tribe is the most inconstant and variable among almost all the tribes that occupy all the creeks of the Orinoco. *Same, p. 234.*

1833. Rev. L. Strong.

Mr. Armstrong [of Bartika Mission] has also regularly visited the settlements of Indians in the Essequibo and Massaruni Rivers alternately every week, **expounding the scriptures . . . to some in English, to others through an interpreter in the Creole Dutch.** *B. C., VI, 49.*

1836. Postholder in Pomeroon.

I do not understand any of the Indian languages, but can make them **understand me in the Creole Dutch.** *Same, p. 61.*

1836. Postholders in Boeraseri.

I have been Postholder about a month. I can converse with the Indians in the **Dutch Creole language**, which is generally understood by them. *B. C.-C., App., 276.*

1836. Postholder in Waibana.

Generally, all of the Indians up here **speaking English and Creole Dutch**, I can converse with them very well. *Same, p. 276.*

1836. Postholder in Berbice.

Can converse with the Indians **in the Creole language**, which is understood by all of them. *Same, p. 276.*

1839. Dr. George Ross.

I took down the statement of the woman Meea Caria under the disadvantage, however, of an interpreter who could speak very little English. Most of the questions and answers had, therefore, to be communicated **through the medium of Creole Dutch.** *Same, p. 286.*

1840. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Postholder [of Fort Island] can converse with the Indians of the Essequibo, most of whom speak Creole Dutch. . . . [Ampa] Postholder can converse with the Indians **in Dutch Creole.** *Same, p. 292.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Arawaak chieftain Jan [of Amacura region] . . . spoke **the Creole Dutch** perfectly. *B. C., VII, 14-15.*

RELATIONS TO THE ESSEQUIBO DUTCH; CREOLE-DUTCH LANGUAGE—(Continued).

1850. Sir Henry Barkly.

Their chiefs to this day bear the names of Jan, Hendrick, or the like; their intercourse with Europeans is still carried on mainly in **the Creole Dutch**; . . . even in their own dialect the Dutch names for things derived from abroad (rum, gunpowder, &c ,) are incorporated. *B. C., VI, 184.*

1897. Sir Henry Barkly.

The proof of the long-continued occupation of the adjacent region [Barima] by the Dutch . . . is clearly shown by the distinct indications of the influence they had exercised over the Indian population. The Chiefs of the Indian tribes then as at this day bore the names of Jan, Hendrik, and many other Dutch names. Their conversation and transactions with Europeans were largely carried on in **the Creole Dutch language**, and even in their own dialects the Dutch names spoken of, for instance. rum, gunpowder, &c., were incorporated. *B. C., VII, 236.*

RELATIONS TO FRENCH, ENGLISH, SURINAM-DUTCH, ETC.

——. British Case.

The English and Dutch **allied themselves with the Carib Indians** against the Spaniards. *B. C., 23.*

——. [1897] George L. Burr.

The French seem to have maintained for years their **alliance with the Barima Caribs against the Dutch.** *V. C.-C., II, 124.*

1613. Governor of Margarita.

Vargas, Governor of Margharita, . . . reported that he had information . . . that . . . not far from Margharita, on the coast of the mainland, **some English had settled, with the favour of the Caribs,** with the intention of cultivating tobacco.

He gives information of the **settlements** [**of English and Caribs**] which are being made in the island of Trinadad and coast of San Thomé of Guiana, where, **with the friendship of the Caribs,** they are extensively cultivating tobacco.

The English, who **were making settlements** on the rivers **in union with the Caribs.** *B. C., I, 35.*

1614. Don Juan Tostado.

For **if they** [**Dutch**] **had settled there** [**on the Corentine**] as they had resolved to do, **it would be a great injury to the friendly Arnac natives** to have the Dutch and Caribs so close to them. *Same, p. 34.*

Some natives of the island [**Trinidad**] brought news that they had seen a number of **Carib pirogues** on the southern side of the island **in company with some Flemish vessels,** which are those that the Flemish in the fort [on the Corentine river] were expecting in order to load them with the tobacco they had prepared. They are now seeking revenge.

It is proved by the information of six witnesses that this island is generally **surrounded by the Flemish and Caribs** both by sea and land, so that the inhabitants live in constant want of many things which they cannot go and fetch for fear of the enemy, the Caribs even coming as far as the city to rob and ill-treat them, which comes of **their strong alliance with the Flemish,** always moving together as they did when they attacked the Aruacas. *Same, p. 37.*

RELATIONS TO FRENCH, ENGLISH, SURINAM-DUTCH, ETC.—(Continued).

1615. Report of Council to Spanish King.

If they [enemies of Spain] are **aided by the Carib Indians, as they now are.** *B. C., I, 44.*

1637. Don Pedro de Vivero.

English, Irish, and others, with negro slaves, have established and settled themselves, from Cape North up to the mouth of the River Orinoco, in most productive lands, **allying themselves with more than 5,000 peaceful Indians and Caribs,** with many forts and a castle, on nine rivers. *Same, p. 110.*

1662. Report of Spanish Council of War.

They [**English and French**] **have** very great numbers of the **Indian natives** of that country [Terra Firma] **subject to them,** on account of the merchandize they give them in barter. *Same, p. 160.*

[1666.] Major John Scott.

Hendricson, a Switz by nation, that had served some Dutch merchants in those partes 27 yeares in quality of a factor with the **upland Indians of Guiana.** *Same, p. 168.*

1684. [1897] George L. Burr.

In the summer of 1684, and for long thereafter, **the Barima was occupied by hostile Caribs and by their allies, the French,** who in 1689 were building a fort in that river. *V. C.-C., II, 137–138.*

1684. British Counter Case.

The **alliance between the French and the Barima Caribs,** which commenced in 1684 (in which year these Caribs came to the Barima from Copename), lasted only during the war which was then proceeding. *B. C.-C., 64.*

1684. Commandeur in Essequibo.

They [**the French**] **have for their assistance many Caribs** from Copename . . . taking refuge here to our great disquietude.

Gabriel **Bishop,** . . . from Surinam and Berbice, coming into the Barima in order to trade, . . . being **surprised** and overtaken **by the Caribs** aforesaid, he with fifteen of men, **was slain,** . . . with threats to some other Indians friendly to us, that they, conjointly with the French, will probably come to destroy all the plantations outside the fort at Essequibo. *B. C., I, 187.*

1686. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

Those [**Caribs**] of the Golfo Triste in particular have committed much slaughter and devastation **in alliance with the French,** with whom at the present time they have traffic and communication, and it is much to be feared that they are going to help the French to settle on the mainland. *Same, p. 196.*

1686. Sancho Fernandez de Angulo.

To fulfil their ambition and that of the French, they [**Caribs**] **will make joint incursions with the latter,** and it is to be feared will proceed to occupy the territories and ports of His Majesty as they have done in other parts, and as the Dutch have also done with other settlements on the River Orinoco in the region of the mainland. *Same, p. 198.*

RELATIONS TO FRENCH, ENGLISH, SURINAM-DUTCH, ETC.—(Continued).

1689. [1897] George L. Burr.

It was **at the hands of French and Caribs** from the Barima that the Pomeroon colony fell, in April of 1689. *V. C.-C., II, 123.*

1701. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

They [the crew] shall . . . **inquire among the Caribs** there [Waini] how the matter stands, explaining to them, namely, to the Chiefs, that **if the [French]** enemy's boats **try to gain their favour . . . they may expect all** the **Christians** and **Arawaks of Surinam, Berbice, and Essequibo upon them,** and that the Commandeur of Essequibo, who has already made peace with them, strives to continue therein. *B. C., I, 224-225.*

1701. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

February 10, [1701]. . . . Mr. Hollander stated that he had had reports from the Carib nation concerning the murder of five [whites] who had been living amongst them at the mouth of the Corentin, and that this was confirmed by a certain Indian who had seen the deed with his own eyes, and who said that **they were not French, their sworn enemies, as had been pretended, but rather whites from Surinam** with trading wares. He further stated that **the said Caribs were uniting with all kinds of Indian tribes,** wherever necessary, **in order to kill and extirpate all the Europeans.** Even if the above should be untrue, it were well that we should take speedy measures, since their rascally practices were known to all the world, as well as their avarice, deceit, and bloodthirstiness. *B. C.-C., App., 141.*

1752. Council of Indies.

The Prelates of the Missions of the Society of Jesus and Capuchins . . . report that the Caribs are in possession of the great river Orinoco, and the other tribes cannot approach owing to the hostilities they carry on against them, and also **through the friendship which this tribe has contracted with the foreigners of Martinique, Surinam, Berbice and other colonies.**

Same, p. 197.

1754. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Surinam wanderers and most of the Carib Indians have retired from Barima, and have departed to the Waini. *B. C., II, 100.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

In the year **1720,** . . . **Dutch, English, and French, . . . with the Caribs, overran . . . the Province of Guayana** [and others] enslaving and slaughtering all the Indians, other than Caribs, whom they could seize, and burning the Mission villages and Spanish settlements established in the said provinces. *B. C., III, 34.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—IN GENERAL.

1595. Capt. Felipe de Santiago.

The Province of **Caura,** which is very fertile, and **inhabited by a great number of natives. Although Caribs, they are friendly towards the Spaniards.**

B. C., I, 10.

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—IN GENERAL—(Continued).

1614. Don Juan Tostado.

For if they [**Dutch**] had settled there [on the Corentine] as they had resolved to do, it would be a great injury to the **friendly Aruac natives** to have the Dutch and Caribs so close to them. *B. C., I. 34.*

1637. Governor of Guiana.

With 300 men well provided with munitions, and with a quantity of **Indians whom I will take care to collect by gifts** . . . I would undertake the expedition [against Essequibo]. *Same, p. 107.*

1638. Diego Ruiz Maldonado.

On this bank [North bank of lower Orinoco] the village of **the Guayanos** is also, who, while they **belong to his Majesty, have** in all the invasions of Guayana that have taken place by the Lutherans, **rendered succour**; not only have they not united with them, but they have come to the help of the people with provisions on the occasions that have presented themselves. And on the other [south] side of the river **the town of the Arnacas, a very powerful people, and all enemies of the Caribs and friends of the Spaniards.** *Same, p. 120.*

They knelt down, with great attention, both the Caribs and those of other nations, who were to the number of 133 in all, being rowers of the pirogues. And there is no doubt that were they instructed in the Faith they would embrace it, as **they are all very docile, especially the Chaguane Indians, who like the Spaniards much.** *Same, p. 121.*

The first village [to be christianized] must be of the **Chaguanes,** as they are very numerous, and because these are **very friendly with the Spaniards,** beyond others of those nations, and it must be called the village of San Felipe de la Real Corona. *Same, p. 128.*

1688. Governor of Trinidad.

The free Indians of the villages **of San Pedro de Marignaca and Santa Maria Magdalena de Caucao,** which are in the said territory of Guayana. *Same, p. 212.*

1767. Director-General in Essequibo.

On account of the bad treatment received at the hands of the present Governor of Orinoque, all **the Warouws,** thousands of whom live on the islands in the mouth of the Orinoco, **are fleeing** from there, and that **hundreds of them have already arrived in Barima.** *B. C., III, 144.*

1770. Commandant of Guiana.

The information previously given me by **the friendly Caribs** [of Upper Orinoco]. *B. C., IV, 77.*

1779. Don Jose Felipe de Inciarte.

A **canoe overtook** me and **brought in a youth** [Arowak] of twelve or fourteen **from the said Piache, begging me to take him with me that he might learn to speak Spanish and might see the lands of the Spaniards.** I took him, thanked them for their confidence, and promised to bring him back with me on my return. *B. C.-C., App., 239.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO.

——. British Counter Case.

The **Caribs regarded the Spaniards as enemies,** not as rulers. *B. C.-C., 85.*

1598. A Cabeliau.

They are there [Santo Thome] about 60 horseman and 100 musketeers strong, who daily attempt to conquer the auriferous Weyana, but cannot conquer the same either by the forces already used or by any means of friendship, since **the nation named Charibus daily offer them hostile resistance with their arms.** *B. C., I, 20.*

They who are enemies, and **who bear enmity to the Spaniards, are friends with the Indians, and they constantly hope that they will be rid of the Spaniards** by the Flamingos and Angleses, as they told us. *Same, p. 21.*

1601. Governor of El Dorado.

In reference to . . . the **depopulation of the Arias, . . . In the first uprising** [of Indians] they killed the Spanish chapetonés (Spaniards who come without passports to America); . . . Being so fertile, here the city of the Arias was founded. **There was an uprising of the natives,** who killed the Major; their punishment and seizure was seriously undertaken. By reason of the control exercised over them and the war made against them, **the natives refused to sow the land or to come to the town, and by this means the Spanish were ejected from this province, famine being used as the worst kind of weapon.** *V. C.-C., III, 4.*

1602. Governor of Nueva Andalucia.

The city of the Arias is one of the two that Don Fernando had settled; it is farther inland than Santo Thome, . . . thickly populated by Indians who, being barbarians, **conceived such a hatred toward the Spaniards that they preferred to leave their native country rather than to have intercourse with them,** and they retreated so far that, in a radius of thirty leagues from that city, not one single Indian was to be found. The soldiers, being unable to support themselves without the aid of the Indians, were compelled to leave said site and to search for another, where they could rebuild said city, which has not been done as yet. *Same, p. 2.*

1612. Sancho de Alquica.

From this island [Margarita] to that of Trinidad is more than 60 leagues to windward, and infested by **Carib pirates, who commit great damage.** *B. C., I, 29–30.*

1614. Mansilla, Parish Priest in Trinidad.

The **evil done by** the **Caribs** is notorious. *Same, p. 38.*

1637. Jacques Ousiel.

On the east side of the island named Punta Galera dwell two nations of Indians, the one called Nipujos and the other Arawaks, over 600 able men; these are friendly to the Dutch, especially the **Nipujos,** who are **deadly enemies of the Spaniards;** but the **Arawaks occasionally serve the Spaniards** in rowing their canoes, and cannot be relied upon so well. *U. S. Com., II, 87.*

One mile inland [in Trinidad] there is a very good opportunity for obtaining a supply of bananas from the old plantations of the **Caribs** who were **driven from the aforesaid island by the Spaniards,** and still are wont to come there every year with their canoes to lay in provisions. *V. C., II, 22.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO—(Continued).

1638. Corporation of Santo Thome.

The **Caribs of** the Province of **Caura**, who are Indians under the jurisdiction of this town [Santo Thome] **killed the men who came with the said information** [about the quicksilver mine near Santo Thome] and took all the despatches. *B. C., I, 103.*

The bearer is an honest soldier, married here, and as there is so much distress here, **ventures his life through so much danger, as there is in these plains of the Caribs,** only to take these letters. *Same, p. 104.*

1686. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

It is **impossible to conquer them** [Caribs] all owing to their great number and the various territories they occupy in a space extending over 300 leagues in length. *Same, p. 196.*

1733. Government of Trinidad.

It must be borne in mind that the **Caribs are not natives of the Orinoco,** but intruders, and that **Law 13, Title 2, Book 6, allows war to be made upon those of that tribe** who come to infest these provinces with armed force, and who eat human flesh, and sanctions the enslavement of those above 14 years, except the women. *B. C.-C., App., 178.*

1735. Governor of Cumana.

It was necessary to cross over to seek them [Caribs] in their own lands, in their clearing which they call the Pumeyo, **where they had three encounters with said Caribs.** *V. C.-C., III, 42.*

1737. Governor of Cumana.

The Governor, Don Carlos Sucre . . . reported to your Majesty the condition of that fortress [Santo Thomé] and dependency, and also of the **war which the Carib Indians, with other allies, are making, causing death and torture among the missionaries, and other Spaniards.** *B. C., II, 25.*

Nothing further can be taken in hand **except defensive measures against the Caribs.** *Same, p. 26.*

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

By these means [**making war**] **he is persuaded the object will be attained of punishing their** [**Carib**] **cruelty,** and forcing them to quit the country, leaving the other Indians free to settle there. *B. C.-C., App., 182.*

1750. Commandeur in Essequibo.

We dare not openly oppose them [Spaniards] as might very easily be done, by means of **the Carib nation, their sworn enemies.**

The frequent and well-founded complaints which the Spaniards make of the damage done to them by the Carib nation well deserve your Honours' attention, not only **on account of the damage which the Spaniards suffer, for by their harsh and unjust dealings they give cause for this,** but on account of the inevitable consequences which in course of time might befall the Colony. *B. C., II, 67.*

1755. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

It is morally **impossible to enter into negotiations of peace with the innumerable Chiefs of the sources of Aquire.** *Same, p. 111.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO—(Continued).

1755. Director-General in Essequibo.

The chiefs of the Panacays, (a mighty nation which has never before been here) **have** expressly **come down to offer their help against the Spaniards** if required, and they are going to settle down with their dwellings around the Post. *B. C., II, 119.*

1759. Director-General in Essequibo.

The latter [**Caribs**], on their part, **are not taking matters quietly, but are beginning to make a vigorous resistance, and to do much mischief in Orinoco itself.** Two well-armed boats have been kept cruising up and down the river, and the Spanish commerce has suffered a good deal. *Same, p. 175.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

In the year 1720, . . . **Dutch, English, and French, . . . with the Caribs, overran . . . the Province of Guayana** [and others] enslaving and slaughtering all the Indians, other than Caribs, whom they could seize, and **burning the Mission villages and Spanish settlements** established in the said provinces. *B. C., III, 34.*

[The inhabitants will soon quit Ciudad Real for other causes] even **if the continual attacks of the Indians do not overwhelm them.** *Same, p. 67.*

1766. Director-General in Essequibo.

We can fully rely upon the assistance of the **Caribs. The deep-rooted hatred and enmity of that nation towards the Spaniards** is so great that there is little probability of a reconciliation between them, and although that nation has lost many of its old characteristics, this still continues to be one of its innate peculiarities. *Same, p. 131.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO, ITS CAUSE.

1594. Antonio de Berrio.

I **cannot get the Indians** [to help conquer Guiana] **owing to** the **malice of my neighbours** [*i. e.*, Spanish governors of neighboring provinces.] *B. C., I, 8.*

1621. Juan de Lezama.

Juan de Lezama, Procurator-General of the City of Santo Thome and Island of Trinidad of the Province of Guayana, says that in respect of the **English pirate . . . having excited the natives of it, and caused them to rise in rebellion,** and refuse to acknowledge the obedience which they had given to your Majesty, and allied themselves with the enemy. *Same, p. 56.*

1662. Governor of Trinidad.

The Carib Indians of the Caura, servants appropriated to residents of this city [Santo Thome], Guaiqueries, Mapoies, and other nations, **revolted** in general, killed all the people that were among them, more than thirty persons, including residents of the city and strangers. The **cause** of this rebellion and havoc was the **incitement which the Dutch of these new settlements have produced, through the secret communication** they hold with them . . . I am taking the necessary measures for the punishment of these Indians.

When so many **enemies surround me, both Indians** of numerous tribes, **and the Dutch who incite them.** *Same, p. 155.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO, ITS CAUSE—(Continued).

1686. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

The injury which results . . . through the bondage system is [*inter alia*] . . . that, . . . the **Indians** of those regions **withdraw and defend themselves in order that they may not be compelled to settle**; and they regard the proposal to convert them as a snare, for they say that it is only for the purpose of making them work. *B. C., I, 195.*

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

"Why do you want to have a Father?" said Araguacare, [Lieutenant-General of the Carib tribe on the Orinoco] to him [Aritana, a Carib, Chief of the Jesuit Mission of Santa Teresa]. "**Do you not know that the Spaniards are very bad?** that they will take from you whatever you possess? They will take away your wives, and leave you only one; they will gather your sons together and carry them off for sale. If you complain they will kill you, or put you in the stocks, and will maltreat you continually."

"Know," he continued, "that **you will no longer be my friends, for you are friends of the Spaniards**, nor will you get implements or clothes; you will be their perpetual slaves, even though they are your relatives and friends, for because I was their friend they often made me deliver up my relatives to death, and, consequently, I want to come and live at Curumotopo, so that, being at a distance from them, they may not be sending for me every moment; and if, perchance, they come some time to summon me, **I will go or not, as I please; and if they send other soldiers to summon me again, I will kill them.**"

B. C.-C., App., 166.

I . . . ask . . . for the perpetual banishment of all the **Caribs** from Orinoco, as not being in their legitimate lands, as traitors to . . . Spain, as perpetual and even sacrilegious homicides, . . . for **hindering the spread of the Catholic faith**, not only in their villages, . . . but because for more than forty years, by force of arms and assassinations of apostolic missionaries, they have hindered it from spreading to the other tribes, with no other object than **that they may not be prevented from gorging themselves with human flesh, and stealing the children of other tribes for sale outside these dominions.**

Same, p. 171.

1734. King of Spain.

That in the creek [of Barima] there was a Carib Chief, . . . who had more than two hundred Indians, with arrows, guns, and broad swords, which force he kept, said the Indian, for the whites of Guayana, **because they hindered him taking the Indians of the nations of the Orinoco and selling them to the Dutch.** *V. C., II, 283.*

1735. Governor of Cumana.

Don Carlos Sucre [Governor of Cumana] **reports the excesses committed by the Carib Indians in the neighborhood of the River Orinoco**, by reason of his absence from that part; that they have cut to pieces a settlement of 200 persons, which he had founded with three missionaries, of whom they killed one. . . . He shows likewise how the Missions are on the point of perishing by the hand of the Caribs, . . . he will do his utmost to try if he can get together as many as 150 men, in order to try to form at the Angostura of the River Orinoco a redoubt with good stakes, in order once for all to block their way and restrain them. *B. C., II, 22.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO, ITS CAUSE—(Continued).

1758. Prefect of Missions.

The account you [Ferreras] were good enough to give me [Garriga] of your journey was as follows: That the murderers [who destroyed the Mission Avechica] were some **Caribs who in the year [17]50 had rebelled in the settlement** of **Tupuquen**, commanded by the Indian Caiarivare, the Alcalde of the said settlement of Tupuquen, one of the principal instigators of the rebellion; and that **the** said **aggressors** were living in the interior, on the river Cuyuni, and at the very mouth of the river Corumo, which flows into the said river; that they **were living with some Dutchmen from the Colony of Essequibo, engaged in Slave Traffic** for the said Colony; and that the principal reason for their murdering the said Captain was because he was founding a settlement in the neighbourhood of Avechica, and thereby was closing the pass of the River Usupama, and hindering them from passing without being discovered; . . . [and] that the said Dutch, with these very same Caribs, are still living at the mouth of the River Corumo, buying Indian slaves. *B. C., II, 145.*

1761. Don Jose Solano.

He [the Governor] can defend the city [Santo Thome], . . . and hinder the Dutch from coming up to the Caura to buy slaves from the Caribs and to furnish them with arms and cultivate the **hatred of the Spaniards, which they have introduced among the Indians.** *Same, p. 208.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

In none of the said provinces are **foreigners** any longer seen overrunning them and committing hostilities or **exciting the Caribs, their allies.**

B. C., III, 35.

1898. Michael McTurk.

The Caribs, as is well known, **were the inveterate enemies of the Spaniards, with whom they waged continual warfare, and were also the slave raiders,** penetrating as far for this purpose as the Upper Cuyuni and the Upper Essequibo.

B. C.-C., App., 405.

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO, ITS CHARACTER (REBELLION).

1594. Antonio de Berrio.

Part of the natives [of Trinidad] have rebelled, and the Caribs of the Islands of Dominica, Granada, and other neighboring places harass and injure me.

B. C., I, 8.

1618. British Case.

After the sack of Santo Thomé by Raleigh in **1618 the Arawaks, till then the friends of the Spaniards, also turned against them.** *B. C., 23.*

1618. City of Santo Thome.

The enemy [English under Raleigh] remained in possession of the place for twenty-nine days, during which time he [Raleigh] succeeded in attracting to himself **the peaceful Guayana Indians nearest to the town, who** at once **rose in rebellion,** doing much damage, in order to favour the enemy.

They soon embarked, . . . having excited and raised all the native Indians in rebellion, at their pleasure, who dwell on the sea-coast, Aruacas, Chaguanes, and Caribs of that province, who **renounced obedience to your Majesty.**

B. C., I, 49.

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO, ITS CHARACTER (REBELLION)—(Continued).

1621. Juan de Lezama.

In order that they may now defend this land, and **that the natives in rebellion may be reduced** and thereby brought to recognize your Majesty.

B. C., I, 56–57.

1621. King of Spain.

It is stated . . . that the **natives have thrown off the obedience** which **they had given me**, allying themselves with the enemy [English under Raleigh].

Same, p. 57.

1637. Governor of Guiana.

The whole place in great danger through two settlements of Dutch being therein, and all **the Indians in revolt and united with them.** *Same, p. 106.*

1662. Governor of Trinidad.

I endeavored to pacify . . . the native **Indians of . . . Trinidad, who were in rebellion, and did not wish to serve the Spaniards.** I carried it out with the few Spaniards of that island and some friendly Indians, and while receiving those who, warned by the punishment I inflicted on the bad ones who were in my power, came and submitted peacefully, and promised to give service to the Spaniards. *Same, p. 154.*

1733. Father Joseph Gumilla.

I, Joseph Gumilla, . . . declare that having been for the last two years **on good terms with the Caribs of this Orinoco, looking upon them as submissive to the Government thereof,** there came up this summer from Barima, Taricura; . . . he . . . terrified all the villages of my Mission, threatening death to the missionaries and to their escort, and to such Indians as might believe the Fathers; and they actually killed the Salina Captain Chabiruma and many of his men belonging to the village of Los Angeles [Los Santos Angeles de Sabinos]. *B. C.-C., App., 162.*

1752. Director-General in Essequibo.

The Spaniards have attacked and driven away the Caribs below Orinoco, and these have all retreated to our side, and thus their number has considerably increased.

Now they are more than ever incensed against the Spaniards aforesaid; **they lately overran two Missions,** and have murdered everyone there.

B. C., II, 76.

1758. Prefect of Missions.

Not only the **Caribs** of the forests, but even those **of the Missions participate in these wars, without our being able to control them** in any way; and whenever we make any efforts to do so, they immediately desert us in great numbers. *Same, p. 143.*

1758. Military Commandant in Essequibo to Spanish Commandant in Orinoco.

Our Governor has always striven to keep up good relations and friendship with his neighbours; you . . . had a convincing proof of this when he took the trouble to write to you in order to warn you, as soon as he had received advice that the **Caribs had formed the plan to attack your Missions**; which warning, and his repeated interdictions to the Caribs, even accompanied with threats, have prevented the execution. *Same, p. 173.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH—HOSTILITY TO, ITS CHARACTER (REBELLION)—(Continued).

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

It is clear that if . . . the fortress is attacked and taken by the enemies of the Royal Crown, the Missions would at once be destroyed. Their own inhabitants would plunder them, set them on fire, and return to the forests, as happened in 1742, when it was found that the Indians did much more harm than the English. . . . The fortress, . . . is the safeguard of all these provinces, . . . without it **the Missions** can neither be extended nor be certain that those now existing will not **rebel when it is least expected,** namely when driven to do so by the Carib tribe, which is formidable from its fierce, treacherous, and warlike character. *B. C., III, 24.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—ENTRADAS AND COMPULSORY SETTLEMENT IN MISSIONS.

——. Venezuelan Case.

The "**entradas,**" . . . **were constant** throughout the region west of the Essequibo from the coast far into the interior, even beyond the Pacaramia mountains. *V. C., 153.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

Spain was in truth the recognized sovereign of the Indians: . . . her rule over them was a rule depending not on *friendship* nor *acquiescence,* but upon force exerted by a *ruler over subjects.* *V. C.-C., 105.*

1615. Council of the Indies.

In order that the Spaniards now residing there and the **Christian Indian subjects of Y. M.** *V. C.-C., III, 6.*

1686. Spanish Fiscal.

With regard to the **removal of the Carib Indians,** who are close to those Missions. *B. C., I, 194.*

1761. Judicial Decree.

As the Aruaca **Indians seized at** the mouth of said creek [**Barima**] have been **delivered** to the Reverend **Fathers of those Missions,** so as to people the same and distribute them, his Honor . . . did rule **that said Indians be kept** for the above purpose in the said Mission. *V. C., II, 341.*

1772. Don Manuel Centurion.

[While going] to take possession of the famous Lake Parime . . . **the** Catalan **Capuchins** . . . **had an escort of** fifty men at arms, twenty of which were Spaniards and **thirty friendly Caribs.** *B. C., IV, 106.*

1786. Director-General in Essequibo.

Frequently having had complaints that the **Spaniards** and Spanish Indians . . . **surprise our free Indians** when off their guard, **and** also drag **them into slavery.** *B. C., V, 45.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—ENTRADAS AND COMPULSORY SETTLEMENT IN MISSIONS—(Continued).

1787. F. Mariano de Cervera.

Last year I went to the mouths of the Orinoco at a settlement of Guaraunos. I had with me only two soldiers and some Guayanos from Caroni. **The excursion was** brief and **lucky**, for within a few days I had made the catch, and **came back with 140 souls**, all of whom arrived here, excepting eight, who escaped at San Antonio, although they were afterwards caught. In the early part of this year I went on **another excursion** to the river Cuyuni, accompanied by Father Antonio de Martorel, with his Caribs of Cumamu, and we only succeeded in catching eighty-one Guaycas, for on the same day we started out, a Guayca of the Mission of Cura made his escape and warned those living in the woods, so that we found everything in confusion. *V. C., II, 446.*

1792. Governor Marmion.

Experience has constantly shown that the **Guarauno and Marinsa** Indians, . . . whenever any effort has been made **to take them from** the creeks and mouths of **the river and convey them to settle in** the interior of **the Missions**, have usually been of very little use and endurance, and upon the least inattention on the part of the Religious they have escaped to the woods or returned to their native spot, the little islands of the Orinoco.

There will be no inconvenience in forming a settlement of these people, as Lopez proposes on the Creek of Imataca. *B. C., V, 143.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—PUNISHMENT OF REBELS.

1637. Don Juan Desologuren.

In all these parts [**Essequibo, Berbice and lower Orinoco**] **they have dealings with the Indians**, and in the last named with the [Spanish] inhabitants both vassals and freemen, and they are **incensed against the said Governor** [of Guiana] for having overcome and dislodged them, and with the Governor of Margarita **for having beheaded the prisoners sent to him.** *B. C., I, 78.*

1653. Report of Council.

The obligation of Don Martin de Mendoza was . . . to **reduce the natives who** had **rebelled, chastising those who refused to render obedience.**

B. C.-C., App., 23.

1686. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

These [**Carib**] **Indians** likewise prevent the conversion of the others, and have on various occasions sacked villages of Indians already subdued. For these crimes such a race **may be chastised by force of arms.** And by these means and by occupying the ancient fort of San Carlos Fernandez de Angulo, it will be rendered certain that the Caribs will not return to give assistance in the Golfo Triste. And thus the Capuchin missionaries will easily convert the rest of the Indians. *B. C., I, 196.*

1733. Government of Trinidad.

The said Governor endeavored to **chastise this outrage**, the only result was that a son of the said Yaguaria was killed, . . . the effort was not continued, as they had withdrawn to the Dutch of Essequibo. *B. C.-C., App., 177.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—PUNISHMENT OF REBELS—(Continued).

1760. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

To prevent so many evils I despatched the Lieutenants . . . Antonio Mayhew to the Aroi . . . and . . . Vincent Doz . . . for Caura, arranging the time so that both surprises should be executed at the same moment. This was done, and so successfully that . . . **all those of Caura and . . . Aroi were seized** with the exception of those who were on expeditions for capturing slaves from other nations. *B. C., II, 184.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The said militia are the hardest workers in the entire garrison, for with the regulars they are detached to the Missions . . . **to subdue the Indians in the frequent disturbances** which occur. *B. C., III, 66-67.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—RECOGNITION OF THE SPANISH AS MASTERS.

1695. Capt. Felipe de Santiago.

Province of Caura . . . inhabited by a great number of natives. Although **Caribs**, they are **friendly towards the Spaniards**, and **disposed to serve them.** *B. C., I, 10.*

1596. Roque de Montes, Treasurer of Cumana.

I instructed him (Felipe de Santiago) that **he should warn the Chiefs** of the Indians on that bank (of the Orinoco) **not to admit** nor receive any **strangers** henceforward in their territories, except Spaniards in your Majesty's service. According to a Report I have received from the said Captain Felipe de Santiago . . . he **gave the Indians the necessary warning.** *Same, p. 12.*

1596. Venezuelan Case.

Keymis . . . says . . . "It was long time before wee could procure them [Indians] to come neere vs, for they doubted least wee were Spanish." . . . he adds that the Indian Chief informed him that the **Arwacas** "doe for the most part **serue and follow the Spanyards.**" *V. C., 46.*

1604. J. Maldonado Barnuevo.

The **Indians** and half-breeds are an abandoned people, and as to their being Christians and **frequenting the churches** and sacraments—most of them do so more from force than from duty, being **compelled by those who govern them,** and by the clergy who go to instruct them. *B. C.-C., App., 5.*

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

Araguacare, **Lieutenant-General of the Carib Tribe,** resident on this Orinoco, having got and obtained . . . permission issued by the Lieutenant-General . . . of this province, Don Antonio de Robles, with the signature of the Secretary of State, Angel Francisco Sanabria, in which his Lordship commanded that no person . . . should dare to hinder . . . the said Araguacare in his journey for trade in slaves, . . . and that the said Araguacare was an Indian **very loyal to his Majesty's Crown.** . . . This letter was obtained surreptitiously and by fraud, saying (as I believe) that he was going to purchase slaves, while his object was simply to kill and destroy the tribes of this Orinoco and steal their property and children for sale to the Dutch and French.

Same, p. 164.

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—RECOGNITION OF THE SPANISH AS MASTERS—(Continued).

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

Araguacare seized a little daughter of Captain Don Juan Vrayari to carry her off, but when Vrayari **threatened** him **with the Fathers and the Lieutenant of Guayana he relinquished** her and gave Vrayari a guayuco [girdle] to say nothing to the whites. *B. C.-C., App., 165.*

1755. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

They [**Caribs**] **are afraid of the Missions, and dread being discovered,** especially by the Pariagota tribe, their enemies.

This statement is general as regards the Caribs of the Orinoco.

B. C., II, 109.

1758. Prefect of Missions.

The Caribs of Miamo have very often **told the Father** that **he ought to allow them to** go and seize or **kill the Dutch at** the mouth of the **Cuyuni,** who had a large quantity of articles for the purchase of slaves. The Barinagotos of the Yuruary say the same. *Same, p. 146.*

1758. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

The Varinagotos and Guaicas of Father Thomas have returned very disconsolate from the incursion, for they thought they were **going to kill** all **their enemies,** the Caribs, at once, and with clubs in their hands they wanted to begin with the first they found, **but the Captain did not allow it.**

B. C.-C., App., 204.

1762. Director-General in Essequibo.

At the time of that occurrence [destruction of Dutch Post on the Cuyuni] **the Caribs** were full of courage and ready for all kinds of undertaking; **now** they **are all driven away from there and have retired right up into Essequibo.** *B. C., II, 217.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

It is extremely **difficult** for the missionaries **to supply these Indian labourers. They do not leave their villages, except very reluctantly,** and when at the fortress they **must be treated** with great kindness **and without severity, or else they run away** and take refuge in the forests. Only in a few cases do they come back to their villages, which they easily abandon. And no matter how good their treatment may be, it is always **impossible to keep them at work for more than eight days.** *B. C., III, 23–24.*

It is probable that they [Indians in the newer Orinoco Missions] **would go back to the woods and carry on a thousand rascalities were it not for fear of the troops** who are at hand to repress disturbances, especially in the villages of the Caribs, who are by nature haughty and apt to rebel. *Same, p. 24.*

The **Indians** [**in Missions**] are very **easily controlled.** *Same, p. 52.*

1773. Government of Trinidad.

This compelled the said Governor to go in person to Guayana, and publish a proclamation that the Caribs who desired to live in peace under His Majesty's protection should appear before him, and would be pardoned, but otherwise they would experience his Royal indignation. Thereupon some of **the Chiefs** came

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—RECOGNITION OF THE SPANISH AS MASTERS—(Continued).

forward, among them Araguacare with his adherents, and **promised obedience and fidelity**; and in order to cause it to be observed by their subjects with authority, they prayed the said Governor to confer upon him the title of Captain, and he so conferred it with its insignia. *B. C.-C., App., 177.*

1777. Augustin Crame (and) Joseph Linares.

When war becomes imminent, another company must be formed with the **Cabre Indians.** They manage a gun like Europeans, and are **very loyal to our Sovereign**; . . . their village . . . is in the jurisdiction of Ciudad Real . . . These Indians are, , . . few in number. *B. C., IV, 181–182.*

1789. Governor Marmion.

The Indians, being an **uncivilized and insubordinate** people, **lovers of their independence and liberty,** which the enemy would undoubtedly offer so as to attract them to their side, it is to be feared that they **would submit cheerfully to any change which would enable them to escape the subjection in which the Religious keep them for the purpose of instruction.** *B. C., V, 111–112.*

1794. Postholder in Pomeroon.

September 2, 1794. The son of the Captain Periper, a Carib by nation, came to the Post . . . to ask me for assistance in order to retake his father, whom the **Caribs from** the Orinoco **had taken and bound all his family.** . . . **The Caribs** who had taken them **were of the Mission of Tupuquen,** and the friar who is at that Mission is a Capuchin. *Same, p. 156.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—OBEDIENCE TO SPANIARDS.

1621. City of Santo Thome.

When the native Indians, who are to-day obedient, see the little help and remedy given, they will say that they have been deceived, and that what was promised . . . was not carried out, . . . and now knowing . . . that the rebellious Indians, their companions, have not been reduced, they, too, will rise and unite with the enemy.

The enemy have now full knowledge of the navigation of the river, [Orinoco] its entrances and outlets, and the Indians are in their power, whom they have made to rebel. *B. C., I, 50.*

1662. Governor of Trinidad.

I endeavoured to pacify . . . the **native Indians of** that Island of **Trinidad,** who were in rebellion, and **did not wish to serve the Spaniards.** I carried it out with the few Spaniards of that island and some friendly Indians, and while receiving those, who, warned by the punishment I inflicted on the bad ones who were in my power, **came and submitted peacefully, and promised to give service to the Spaniards.** *Same, p. 154.*

1682. Governor of Trinidad and Guiana.

The **natives abiding in** this island [**Trinidad**] and in Guayana, all in this jurisdiction, numbering more than twenty-four thousand, and **who communicate with us and serve us** for certain small presents that are given to them.

V. C., II, 269–270.

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—OBEDIENCE TO SPANIARDS—(Continued).

1686. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

The Brazil Indians who are in Trinidad, Margarita and Cumaná, and who came with the Portuguese when they arrived in the year 1666, being strangers and few in number, **have been and are very obedient, and the same thing will happen with the Caribs** who may be captured, if they are transported to the said islands [Puerto Rico, Santo Domingo and Havannah]. *B. C., I, 196.*

1743. Governor of Guiana.

Before His Honour had appeared Don **Juan Guayurumay, chief of the Panaeuyo nation,** with two other chiefs of the same nation, . . . **expressing . . . his wish to settle at the place Cunury, . . . subject to the teachings of the Capuchin Missionaries . . . and as vassals of H. M.**; and that for the purpose he has, as a beginning, thirty-three men of arms, . . . thirty-eight women, twenty-three boys, and sixteen girls, . . . requesting that he be received under the Royal protection and vassalage, and be granted the site of Cunury for settlement.

Wherefore, in order to encourage them to settle there, he resolved and ordered that the said Don Juan Guayurumay be appointed Founding Captain of the said Cunury settlement. *V. C., II, 287–288.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

I spoke with, the **Chief Patacon** (who **formerly lived in the Islands of Caroni, and is now settled** with the greater part of his people **in the Mission of Morucuri,** founded by Father Joseph de Guardia). *B. C., II, 110.*

1758. Prefect of Missions.

On account of that murder the said Guaicas of the Avechica Mission have returned again to the forests. There are also Indians of that nation in the Missions near the Yuruary, and they frequently demand to be allowed to go to avenge the murder of their people. But **the priest of the said Mission . . . informed me** of these events, and **that by his counsels he detained them.**

Same, p. 145.

1758. Santiago Bonaldes.

That . . . he considered it better to allow the aforementioned **Caribs** to return freely of their own accord, as they **promised him they would, and as they accordingly did.** . . . The proof of what he here states is to be found in the fact that to-day a great part of those Caribs are to be found in the Missions of the Reverend Capuchins. *Same, pp. 159–160.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The said Missions are important to the fortress, on account of the provisions which they supply to it, they are also important on account of **the Indians who do the work, and although they are very slow and not under compulsion, it is they who do it.** These Indians have repaired the fortifications; they have built the fort of San Fernando; they have made the bricks and the lime necessary for these works. They also provide the rowers for the vessels which necessarily have to be fitted out. *B. C., III, 23.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—OBEDIENCE TO SPANIARDS—(Continued).

1777. Augustin Crame [and] Joseph Linares.

When war becomes imminent, another company must be formed with the **Cabre Indians. They manage a gun like Europeans, and are very loyal to our Sovereign.** . . . their village . . . is in the jurisdiction of Ciudad Real. . . . These Indians are . . . few in number. *B. C., IV, 181–182.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—SPANISH CLAIM TO SOVEREIGNTY OVER THEM.

1619. City of Santo Thome.

Governor Don Fernando de Berrio . . . dispatched forty of them [soldiers] in the year 1619 to the Province of the **Aruacas,** which the enemy kept and keeps in rebellion on the sea-coast, **to reduce them to their former obedience to your Majesty.** Among these Indians there were six of the enemy's ships, trading and negotiating with them, and doing all in their power to **dissuade** them **from acknowledging your Majesty's jurisdiction,** and urging them to kill all the Spaniards of the town. *B. C., I, 49–50.*

1682. Spanish Council.

In the year 1682, . . . at the instance of Don Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga, **orders were given to abolish,** in the Province of Trinidad of Guayana, every sort of **bondage-contract of Indians,** in order that they might enjoy their liberty. *Same, p. 193.*

1686. Spanish Fiscal.

With regard to the **removal of** the **Carib Indians,** . . . he agrees with . . . Don Tiburcio and Don Sancho; in whose proposal and in their method of carrying it out by hostilities, which are rendered necessary by the character of the Indians, the Fiscal sees nothing objectionable; . . . when it has been carried out it will be possible to **place the Caribs in other islands** and in the neighbourhood of Spanish settlements, so that . . . **being held in subjection on all sides,** they may live as rational beings. *Same, p. 194.*

1686. Tiburcio de Axpe y Zuñiga.

As to providing a measure for removing the **Carib Indians** from their present place, . . . and the conveyance of them to another part, where it might be hoped that . . . they **would change their habits, as we have experienced** with those who were brought from Brazil, and who are now peaceful. *Same, pp. 194–195.*

With reference . . . recently converted Indians . . . I consider it very much for the service of God and the King that the **Indians** should remain **subject to the missionaries** for the space of ten years, and should afterwards be under the Royal Crown, and that, in recognition of vassalage, a small tax be placed upon them. *Same, p. 195.*

It will be very **advantageous if** the said **Caribs are compelled to leave** it; [**place spoken of by the Capuchins**] and the method which seems most suitable is that His Majesty should bestow upon any one who will drive out the Caribs

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—SPANISH CLAIM TO SOVEREIGNTY OVER THEM—(Continued).

from that part the grant of an appointment of Captain Conquistador [etc.] . . . upon condition that all the Carib Indians, men and women, above the age of 14 years, who might be captured, should be conveyed to the Islands of Puerto Rico, Santo Domingo, and Havannah. *B. C., I, 195–196.*

1686. Sancho Fernandez de Angulo.

Thus the object for which the Fathers went will be attained, and all the Spaniards will enjoy their advantages at the hand of the Fathers, who have always taken care and will take care that **the Indians** are not idle.

Same, p. 197.

I held a Council in one of the Missions then existing upon the advisability of commencing a **war against the Caribs**; but for reasons which then prevailed it was suspended as far as they were concerned, and they remained in perfect security, for it was then advisable, and they assisted me by a national force against the [other Indian] nations I was attacking. *Same, p. 198.*

And passing on to consider [as to] the effect of taking the **Carib Indians** from there and **transporting them to other parts**, it seems to me that . . . **the Council** [should] . . . **approve the execution thereof with vigour and force of arms.** *Same, p. 198.*

If in this invasion any **Indians**, men or women, are **taken prisoners**, they can be easily transported to the Islands of Puerto Rico and Santo Domingo, or to New Spain, . . . **not one of them must be allowed to remain in the country** under any pretext. *Same, p. 199.*

1733. Father Bernardo Rotella.

By being divided they [Caribs] **will not be able to revolt again**, and still less, fly to their lands, which will be settled at once with good tribes, who, through fear of the Caribs, have fled from the Orinoco. And thus a stop will be put to any Carib from the sea coming up the Orinoco. *B. C.-C., App., 171.*

It is absolutely **necessary to eject them** [Caribs] **from the Orinoco as they were ejected from Cumana.** *Same, p. 174.*

1735. Governor of Cumana.

This nation is the only one that refuses to be subdued, all the others that have been discovered by us seek our friendship, and many nations send me their Caciques to swear obedience, recognizing His Majesty as King and Master.

V. C.-C., III, 43.

1746. Commandeur in Essequibo.

The Postholder of Wacquepo and Moruka came the day before yesterday [July 18, 1746] to inform me that a nation of Indians have come down from Orinoco and have attacked the Caribs subject to us in the River Waini [perhaps the Akawaini, a small tributary of the Pomeroon. See *U. S. Com., III, pp. 283–284.* Also *B. C., II, p. 48 D, 70 C.*], have killed several, and have threatened that they would extirpate them all, . . . **I have strong reasons to suspect that the Indians have been sent by the Spaniards of Cumana.** *B. C., II, 45.*

RELATIONS TO THE SPANISH AS SUBJECTS—SPANISH CLAIM TO SOVEREIGNTY OVER THEM—(Continued).

1753. King of Spain.

With a view to dispelling the fears of the [Carib] **Indians** who **revolted.** [from the missions and fled to the Dutch] His Majesty wishes you in his Royal name to **pardon them their crime of rebellion, exhorting them and giving them warning for the future.** *V. C., III, 373.*

1758. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

The Indian women . . . who . . . cut the sticks of manioc and cast them down the river, saying that the Caribs were never more to dwell in that river [Cuyuni], because the Dutch would make Poitos of them, and would be held responsible for the capture. And for that reason all the Caribs were already inclined to come to the Mission. But **although I had charged the Captain to bring all the Caribs,** and especially those who kept the purchasers of poitos in their houses, **he told me** that considering how very well they behaved with them, **he has thought it better not to disturb them from there, but gave them his warnings and threats.** *B. C.-C., App., 203.*

1763. Don Jose Diguja.

The Catalonian **Capuchins have pacified and subdued** part of the **Indians of the Province of Guayana.** *B. C., III, 20.*

1769. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

With respect to the **slaves who have deserted from Essequibo: . . .** if there is any question about our retention of these, our reason for it is clear; for **being subjects of the King** criminally enslaved by the Dutch, who maintain this inhuman traffic with the Caribs contrary to all law, **we cannot and must not restore them to slavery** when they have the good fortune to escape it by again availing themselves of the protection of the officers of their legitimate Lord and Sovereign. *B. C., IV, 49.*

1771. Commandant of Guiana.

The aforesaid commanding officer shall . . . make friends with all those nations, especially with the Macusi and Arecunas, presenting the Indians with such charms and amulets as they esteem, especially the Chiefs . . . in order **to encourage them all to submit voluntarily to the dominion of the King,** our master, in whose name the said officer shall formally take possession of all that territory with as much solemnity as circumstances may permit; demanding an oath of fidelity from the Indians, . . . offering them help and protection in the King's name, promising to preserve their lands and goods as those of faithful subjects, and to defend them from their enemies that they may . . . enjoy the many other advantages of those who **subject themselves to the just and gentle dominion of our Lord the King.** *Same, p. 98.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS.

——. British Case.

The British claimed and exercised the right of appointing the Captains of the Indians, who were officially recognized as such by the Government of the Colony. *B. C., 119.*

The **Indian Captains were appointed by the Dutch and British Governments.** *Same, p. 162.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS—(Continued).

1778. British Case.

In 1778 a number of **Indian Chiefs were summoned, and it was officially stated that the hats and staves then presented to them were given as a token that the Chiefs were recognized as such by the Dutch Government,** and that when the tribes desired to appoint new Chiefs they might present to that Governnment the persons selected. *B. C., 90.*

1778. Court of Policy.

The presents were given to the Chiefs of the Indians named respectively Marawari, Jurmare, from Tampoco, Maraywirany, Massuckury, Mawara, Masseuw, and to their attendants, who arrived last, and in manner as follows:

The interpreters being called in, they were told to inform the Indians that the Government asked them to-day, in consideration of the old friendship, to accept of the presents, and to cultivate the friendship, as the presents were given to them as a token of friendship.

That it is expected from them that they will always be true and faithful to the Government and the inhabitants of this Colony, and, when called upon, to give all help and assistance.

That if they have any grievance amongst them, to come forward and make it known, and that if they are wishful of visiting here, they shall always be welcome and be well received.

That the hats and sticks were given to the Chiefs as a token that they are recognized as such by the government.

That if they want to appoint new ones they shall choose such persons from among them as may be proposed by the Government.

B. C., IV, 187–188.

[*Another translation.*]

The presents have been distributed to the latest-arrived Indian Chiefs and their suites in the same manner as before. The names of the Chiefs are Warawri, Jarimare or Tampoco, Maraywinany, Massuckury, Mawaru, Massieuw.

The interpreters having been called in, they are directed by the presiding Captain-Commandant, to explain to the Indians that it was on account of the old friendship that they were invited to the Government to amuse themselves, and in order to cultivate that friendship; that, as a proof of this, the presents are given; that it was expected from their side, that they should always faithfully adhere to the Government and to the inhabitants of this colony, and when called upon give all help and support; that, when they have any grievances, they must always come to present them; that, whenever they wish to come to this place, they shall always be welcome and be received; that the hats and canes are given to the Owls as a token that they are recognized as such by the Government.

And that, when wishing to appoint new Chiefs, they may, to that end, offer to the Government such persons among them as they shall choose thereto. *U. S. Com., II, 544–545.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

Among new acts of jurisdiction which have been practiced by Great Britain, and which were wholly unknown to the Dutch, is the **appointment of Indian Captains by the Colonial Government.** The British Case at various times speaks of this new practice as though it were something dating very far back, into Dutch times; but in reality it is wholly British. *V. C.-C., 107.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS—(Continued).

1804. Court of Policy.

One of their captains, named Arawara, . . . had come down Essequibo River some time ago, . . . and . . . **had given over his commission of captain or Uil, which he had received from the former Governor Baron van Grovestins,** and expressing his dissatisfaction. *B. C.-C., App., 262.*

1897. Michael McTurk.

The same **system of Captains** who exercised control over the Indians was pursued in that part as in the Essequibo, and it **had been followed by the Dutch previous to the English occupation.** *B. C., VII, 234.*

1897. E. F. im Thurn.

From the commencement of the present century, in fact, **previous to the transfer of the country from the Dutch to the English, the system has been in practice of appointing Captains of Indians for the respective tribes.**

Same, p. 237.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS (OWLS) BY THE INDIANS THEMSELVES.

1818. Thomas Cathrey, Protector of Indians.

[Tonys an Arawak chief at Bartika Grove being dead] **Warakan commands the tribe till the majority of his son, who is absent.** *B. C., VI, 12.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The Accaways are the most warlike of any tribe in the Colony, and, notwithstanding the smallness of their number, set all the other tribes at defiance. They **elect their own Captains, and acknowledge no Protector,** and are particularly repugnant to the interference of white persons in their domestic government, or the settlement of whites in their territory. *Same, p. 25.*

I have also to **request,** on the part of the Indians generally, **that your Excellency** will be pleased to **prohibit all interference of the whites in the nomination of their Captains,** as different individuals have in many instances taken upon themselves this right, which is purely elective on the part of the Indians themselves. *Same, p. 34.*

1833. Protector of Indians in Pomeroon.

The Indian Captains, which Mr. Hilhouse asserts to be appointed by the Postholders, are diametrically opposed to the fact, at all events in the Pomeroon district, where **no deviation has been practiced contrary to the ancient established custom of leaving the choice of their Captains to the tribes themselves.** *Same, p. 49.*

1844. Mr. Macrae.

We all know that they [Indians] are ruled by their own chiefs.

V. C.-C., III, 181.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS (OWLS) BY THE INDIANS THEMSELVES—(Continued).

1897. Stephen Johnson, an Akaway Indian.

My father . . . was an Accowayo Captain, Mr. **McClintock did not make him a Captain, but he was so through an inherited right.** The Accowayo and Carib nation in the whole of the Barima River and also the Woeboo country did look upon him as their only chief. *B. C., VII, 232.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS, BY THE DUTCH AND BRITISH.

1831. William Hilhouse.

The Ackaways during the insurrection **applied to have me appointed their Chief.** *B. C., VI, 41.*

1834. Captain Tonge, Pomeroon.

Having collected as many of the Indians as . . . the weather would permit, I first explained and then **presented** in form **his Excellency's commission to Captain Juan** and . . . it . . . was universally received with respect and gratitude. *Same, p. 54.*

1837. Rev. A. Hermant.

The Indian Maria Hymé applied . . . to pray me to appoint and choose another Indian for Captain. Seeing that if he is Captain against his will he shall not attend to his duty, I . . . recommend . . . the Indian, Miguel Chacon, who is now living in Essequibo; . . . He is . . . esteemed by the Spanish Indians. *B. C.-C., App., 276.*

1840. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Visiting the Hymurucaboru, **several of the Warrow Indians** residing in that creek, as well as those . . . in the Manawarein, **requested that Captains should be appointed to live among them**—Captain Jonklass . . . and Captain George . . . having . . . died. *B. C., VI, 105.*

1843. W. C. McClintock, Postholder in Pomeroon.

I . . . inclose Captain Maguil Chacon's commission, who died in Morocco Creek . . . last month.

The **inhabitants of Morocco having expressed their desire to have another Captain appointed,** I . . . recommend . . . the Spanish Indian, Jaimé Maria, as . . . fully qualfied to act as Captain and constable over all the Spaniards in Morocco Creek.

. . . Permit me to recommend that the person holding the commission be allowed to act as constable also. *Same, p. 125.*

1843. Rev. J. Cullen.

Captain Jaimé Maria and the **Indians of the Morocco Mission, . . . are desirous to have Calistro Hermandez appointed to act as sub-Captain,** as they consider it necessary to have a protector . . . during the . . . absence of the Captain. Moreover, as the Postholder may require the services of the Captain in his capacity of Chief Constable, it is expedient to make this appointment. **The Indians likewise are desirous that a constable's staff be provided for the Captain and sub-Captain,** and accompany their respective commissions. *Same, p. 127.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS, BY THE DUTCH AND BRITISH—(Continued).

1843. R. H. Schomburgk.

The Macusi chieftain, Pasico . . . I . . . recommend . . . **as Captain of the Macusis near the frontier, and deserving to receive the stick, or official staff,** and a commission like the Arawaak chieftain Caboralli at the Guainia. *B. C., VII, 53.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The following **Indians, . . . fit and proper persons to hold the office of captain,** are . . . submitted

Cabarally (Arrawack), captain and constable **for Assakata Creek.**
Moses (Worrow), captain **for Winey River,**
Ben (Worrow), captain for **Barama Creek.**
Daniel (Carabeese), for **Barama Creek.**
John (Worrow), for **Upper Bareema River.**
Nelson (Worrow), for **Aruka Creek, or Lower Bareema.** *B. C., VI, 172.*

1849. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The **Arrawak Indian** Cabarally . . . **having already held a Commission,** which, however, he **returned to the** then **Government Secretary, . . . because I declined to recoguize him as captain for the Worrow Indians.** . . . His Excellency . . . caused a Commission to be issued to John Henry, a Worrow . . . in Upper Morocco: . . . I pray his Excellency will . . . confirm the said Arrawack Indian Cabarally in the office of Captain and constable, for the Assakata Creek. *Same, p. 171.*

1852. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

I . . . recommend . . . the **Warrow Indian** France, whose settlement is **in Himara Cabara Creek, . . . as a fit and proper person to fill the office of Captain and Constable.** *Same, p. 189.*

I . . . recommend . . . **the following Indians** as . . . **fit to act as Captains and Constables:**

Thomas Adams, Arrawack Indian, residing at Piraca, **Upper Pamaroon.**
Cornelius Scarda, Arrawak, residing at **Pomeroon.**
John Carrabeese Indian, residing in **Iserooroo** Creek, Upper Pamaroon.
France, Carrabeese, residing in Kiramap Creek, Rio **Pamaroon.**
Jeffrey, Carrabeese, living at Arria, Rio **Pomeroon.** *Same, p. 190.*

Indians . . . recommended . . . **to act as Captains and constables:**

France	Carrabeese	**Pomaroon.**
Hermannus	"	"
John	"	**Isserooroo** Creek, Tributary of Pomaroon.
Dick	"	**Pomaroon.**
Jeffrey	"	**Arria** . . " (Upper).
Thomas Adams	Arrawack	**Pomaroon.**
Cornelius Scarde	"	"
John William	"	**Arrapicro Creek.**
Fraser	"	**Tapacooma Creek.**

Same, p. 191.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS, BY THE DUTCH AND BRITISH—(Continued).

1854. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

I communicate the loss of John Henry, **Captain of the Warrow Indians in Upper Moruca,** . . . from an attack of small-pox. . . . To fill up the vacancy which his death has caused I respectfully recommend . . . the Warrow Indian Watson, and . . . for similar appointments, the Warrow Indian France, living on **Kinamu Creek**, situated between Moruca and Wieney River, and the Arrawack Indian Cabaralli, of **Assakata** Creek, where no Captain has yet been created. *B. C., VI, 197.*

1863. Governor of British Guiana.

Whereas it has been represented to me that the Carabice Indian Cephas is a well conducted and loyal subject, . . . **I** . . . **appoint** the said **Indian Cephas to the office of Captain and Constable.** *B. C., VII, 227.*

1868. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Names of the Indians respectfully submitted . . . to hold the office of **Captain and constable over their respective tribes:—**

William Scard (Arawack), in the room of Cornelius.
Harry (Warrow), in the room of France.
Davidson (Warrow), in the room of Ben.
Antonie (Accoway), in the room of Saurawick.
Francisco (Maiongong), in the room of Raiman.
The above-named five Indians attend at the **Waramurie Mission.**

B. C., VI, 208-209.

1868. Petition of John Davidson, an Arawak Indian.

Since the death of our Headman, Captain Caliestro, all the buck Indians up that side of the Colony, they are wholly ungoverned, making wars against themselves, and taking each others' lives, for want of a Chief or Captain amongst them, or a Headman over them; . . . under these circumstances your **petitioner** respectfully **prays to recommend himself to . . . be appointed** by your Excellency as **Headman or Captain over the other buck Indians** in the room of the late Captain Caliestro, . . . so that I could command peace and order amongst them as formerly during the lifetime of Captain Caliestro. *Same, p. 209.*

1869. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Previous to Missions being established among the aborigines of this district, **their Captains, or Chiefs, were always selected by themselves**, and the men possessing the art of conjuror—or, according to the people's belief, the power of destroying the lives of others by their incantations and prayers—were invariably chosen to fill the office. **This system proving such a barrier to everything calculated to** ameliorate **their then degraded condition,** the conjurors having so much influence over their respective tribes, as to induce them to set their faces, so to speak, against all kind of instruction, and seeing, as I did, the necessity for some interference, **I brought matters under the notice of Sir Henry Light,** the then Governor of the Colony, expecting the difficulties to be overcome before any permanent good for the Indians could be achieved. With the view, therefore, of removing, if not to suppress entirely, the then prevailing influence of the Chiefs, **I suggested to his Excellency** Sir Henry Light,

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS, BY THE DUTCH AND BRITISH—(Continued).

that they should at once **be dispossessed of all authority to nominate Captains, and** the **power** of making such appointments **should be vested in the Executive; this arrangement . . . has proved most beneficial.**

B. C., VI, 209.

I, therefore, **beg his Excellency to appoint Sandy,** Carribee Indian, **to the office of Captain** &c., for this district. *Same, p. 210.*

1876. Governor Longden.

Whereas . . . the Caribee Indian, Peter Cornelius, is a well conducted and loyal subject, . . . **I . . . appoint** the said Indian, **Peter Cornelius, to the office of Captain and Constable.** *B. C., VII, 227–228.*

1877. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent in Pomeroon.

I . . . recommend . . . Jose Rosario Torres, Spanish Arrawack of Moruca River, . . . to fill the office of **Captain and constable.**

I have also to recommend . . . a Warrow Indian named **Moses, of Himara-Cabara Creek,** Rio Moruca, . . . **to fill the office of Captain.**

B. C., VI, 216.

1878. Kortright, Governor of British Guiana.

Whereas . . . the Caribeese Indian, Peter Cornelius, is a well conducted and loyal subject . . . **I . . . appoint . . . Peter Cornelius to the office of Captain and Constable.** *B. C., VII, 228.*

1891. Michael McTurk.

Twenty-five Indians came from the creek. They had many complaints to make of the "Spaniors," all of the same nature, the taking away of their cassava, and giving nothing in return. **There was no man among them** [Indians of Ekereku Creek] **whom I considered fit to be appointed as captain, but the most intelligent one, Edward Robert, I promised should be appointed as a constable,** and he is to follow me to Kalacoon for the purpose. I explained to him, through an interpreter, what his duties would be, and also the boundaries of our territory. . . . This interested the others very much, and they appeared pleased that the Governor should appoint some of their own in authority, and promised to obey him. *B. C., VI, 254.*

1897. Michael McTurk.

Indian Captains have been appointed by me in the Pomeroon and Mornca rivers, . . . These appointments have given great satisfaction to the Indians. *B. C., VII, 337.*

1897. Wauakumma, a Warrow Indian.

I have heard from my father and mother. . . . that the Dutchmen had places about Koriabo. . . . I also know the place below Koriabo which is called "the Dutchman's place." . . . There are three trenches there into the Barima River. . . . **I have heard the old people speak of the Warrau Captain Tremencia** [Clementia] . . . My father and mother told me about the Dutch. They were very good to the Warraus, and used to give them cloth and things. *Same, p. 209.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS, BY THE DUTCH AND BRITISH—(Continued).

1897. Burriburrikutu, a Warrow woman.

I knew the Warraw Captain Tremencia. Tremencia had a short stick with silver at the head of it, and he had a paper from the Governor.

B. C., VII, 210.

1897. Kwaidawarri, a Warrow Indian.

I knew the Arawack man **Caberalli.** He was **the Arawack Captain. He lived in Asacarta, but sometimes . . . at Howhanna, in Aruka. . . . He had a paper from the Governor.** *Same, p. 211.*

My father's brother been the Warrau Captain this side. His name been Waiakwarri. . . . **Waiakwarra had a stick with three holes in it. Schombruck gave him the stick.** After Waiakwarra died, a white man from Essequibo came to Moruka and took the stick. He said the stick belonged to the English people.

There been at the same time another **Warrau Captain in Kaituma.** He name **Waha.** He had a stick from the Governor. I saw it. **Tamanawarri was another Warrau Captain.** He lived **in Kaituma** too. He had a stick from the Governor. *Same, p. 212.*

1897. Bautista Calietro, a Spanish Arawak.

My father was Captain Callietro, . . . Captain of the Spanish Arawacks, who all lived in Moruka. . . . **My father, because he was Captain of them all, had a Commission, a stick, a flag, and a cannon. The Colony gave him these things.** After he died Mr. Mac took them all back again. . . . After my father died Captain Raffaelle was made Captain in his place.

Captain Caberalli . . . had a Commission, a stick, and a flag, but he did not have a cannon. *Same, p. 213.*

1897. Issokura, an Arawak woman.

Captain Jan been my mother's brother. Dutchmen been make him Captain. He been have paper and stick. Dutchmen been give them to him. He been talk the Dutch language. *Same, p. 219.*

1897. Neebrowari, a Warrow Indian.

My father . . . was Captain for the Warrau and Arawack in Amakuru. He . . . had a stick. *Same, p. 220.*

1897. Matthias Schade, an Arawak Indian.

My father was made Captain of the Arrawaks . . . when Mr. Brett was missionary and before the Pomeroon Mission was moved from Arapaikru Mouth to Cabacaburi. . . . **The Bishop handed him the stick and the writing.** *Same, p. 221.*

1897. Michael McTurk.

Peter Cornelisen . . . I know . . . was a Captain for the Carib Indians living about the upper parts of the three rivers.

I also knew Thomas Cephas. . . . The Het Fall, on the River Essequibo, where he lived, is the second fall encountered on ascending the river. The staff now produced and shown to me . . . is his staff of office, and was presented to him on his appointment.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—APPOINTMENT OF INDIAN CAPTAINS, BY THE DUTCH AND BRITISH—(Continued).

The staff now produced and shown to me . . . belonged to the Captain of the Atorai Indians, who inhabit the savannah at the head of the Essequibo and Rupununi. . . . and who . . . held the position of Captain for a considerable number of years. *B. C., VII, 233.*

The same system of Captains who exercised control over the Indians was pursued in that part as in the Essequibo, and **it had been followed by the Dutch previous to the English occupation.** *Same, p. 234.*

1897. E. F. im Thurn.

The following is the earliest complete, or nearly complete, **list of these Captains [appointed by the Government]** that I have been able to compile, and would embrace the period from about 1840 to 1850:—

Name.	Tribe.	Residence.
Callietro	Spanish Arawacks	Hobo (Moruka).
Caberalli	Arawacks	Assacarta.
Peter	Caribs	
Bushman	Warraus (tribe of Warraus in Moruka)	Manawaina.
Clementia	Warraus (Barima)	Warina.
William	Warraus	Cumacka.
Tamanawari, Waha	Ditto	Kaituma.
Jan	Arawacks	Wassekuru.

Same, pp. 237–238.

[1898.] Editor of British Case.

List of Commissions to Indian Captains. A complete series of the Commissions issued does not seem to be extant; those collected here are a few leading specimens:

Name.	Tribe.	Place.	Date.
John William	Arawak	**Pomeroon**	Nov. 18, 1852.
Erijee Manarwa	"	**Upper Essequibo**	Jan. 1855.
William	Warow	**Barima**	Aug. 27, 1861.
France	"	**Moruka**	Sept. 24, 1861.
Patricio Sabana	Arawak	"	Nov. 9, 1861.
Wiabee	Carib	**Waini**	Feb. 5, 1862.
Daniel	"	"	July 9, 1862.
Vigilant	"	"	" "
Hillario	Akawoi	**Barama**	" "

Same, p. 246.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—PROTECTORS OF INDIANS.

1785. Director-General in Essequibo.

November 28, 1785. To-day, . . . discharged from his Postholdership, Nicolas Pierson, who had been appointed by the French, and in his place was placed again, and newly sworn in, Daniel Starrenberg, the former **protector of Indians** and Postholder in the upper part of this river from old time called Moera, with fresh instructions and a fresh commission. *B. C., VII, 174.*

1803. Court of Policy.

A Petition dated the 10th December, 1802, addressed to his Honour by **F. J. van derLott as Captain of the burgher soldiers in the division of the Red Ensign in Demerary**, containing a report of his demands in the matter of the last general bush expedition against the bush negroes. *B. C., V, 179.*

Ordered, that an extract of the present Resolve be transmitted to Lieutenant Moore and to the **Protector of Indians in Essequibo** for their respective information. *Same, p. 183.*

1804. Court of Policy.

Read a memorial of the **Protector of the Indians of Essequibo, Mr. F. T. van der Lott**, acquainting the Court with his having some time ago, in his capacity as Protector of the Indians above-mentioned, appointed to be Postholder in the Upper River of Essequibo the free coloured man Amon Cornelis.

Resolved, to conform the provisional nomination made by the **Protector,** Mr. van der Lott, on the person of Amon Cornelis aforesaid.

Ordered, that an extract from this Resolution be handed to the **Protector, Mr. van der Hoff, aforesaid.**

Counsellors van der Velden and Kroll have not concurred [and believe] . . . that Mr. van der Hoff should not have appointed Amon Cornelis . . .

Mr. van der Hoff then observed . . . that he was not aware of it [a certain resolution] when he made the above-mentioned appointment.

Same, p. 185.

Mr. Mack, who was requested and deputed by the Court's Resolution of the 30th of May, of the present year, together with Mr. Clements and Mr. Fiscal **van der Lott, as Protector of Indians**, to assemble the Indians in the Upper River of Essequibo, and to assure them of the friendly dispositions of the Government of the Colony towards them, and at the same time distributing among them some small presents or gifts, reported that he . . . repaired to the upper river of Essequibo; that he **found on the place of rendezvous about 300 Indians and twelve Captains or Uilen, whom he consequently entertained in the usual way**, and whom he endeavored to satisfy with some small gifts, promising them . . . another distribution would be made amongst them.

B. C.-C., App., 262.

1805. Court of Policy.

The manner in which a distribution out of these articles was to be made among the Indians being now deliberated upon, it was resolved, in the first place, with regard to Essequibo, to request **Mr. Mack, as Protector of the Indians** of that river, to appoint the time and place for such distribution to take place, and to give the necessary direction to the Postholders to collect the Indians and to report to the Court. *B. C., V, 187.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—PROTECTORS OF INDIANS—(Continued).

1805. Court of Policy.

With respect to **Demerary River,** Mr. Cuming was requested to arrange with the **two Protectors of Indians in that river** the time and place for a general distribution of these articles among the Indians of that district.

B. C., V, 187.

Gratifications and presents to Indians—

Account of Mr. Mack, Protector, for sugar and rum provided for the great entertainment of **Indians** which took place some time since.....1,423.5 fl.

Same, p. 188.

1807. Court of Policy.

Mr. Councillor **Knollman,** in his capacity as **Protector of the Indians in Essequibo,** [stated] that the Indians who live at the Post of Morocco, and who had been employed in a bush expedition under the direction of the **late Protector, Mr. Mack,** deceased, had not yet been paid.

Whereupon it was resolved to authorise the said Mr. Knollman, if the articles which are deposited in the Colony House are not sufficient, to purchase an additional quantity of salempores, etc., for account of the Colony, and therewith to pay the Indians.

Mr. **Knollman was further authorised** at his request to take over, under a proper inventory, the presents for Indians which still remain at the house of the late Mr. Mack, deceased; and, further, **to share every three months among the Indians who live near the Post of Morocco 100 gallons new rum,** and a proportionable quantity among the Indians of the Upper River Essequibo.

B. C.-C., App., 263.

Read a letter from Mr. **Knollman,** the **Protector of the Indians in Essequibo.**

With respect to the second part of Mr. Knollman's letter relative to the circumstances of two free Indians having been purchased as slaves by an inhabitant of Essequibo, it was resolved that the letters respecting that charge shall be transmitted to the Fiscal of Essequibo, that he may enforce the law against the delinquent. *Same, p. 263.*

Relative to some differences which had lately broken out between the free colored people settled in the Essequibo River, and some of the Indian tribes, particularly the Ackawoys. . . . some mutual animosity seemed to prevail among the Indian tribes themselves, yet . . . they were all irritated against the above-mentioned free coloured people.

Mr. **Knollman** begged leave to report, in his capacity as **Protector of the Indians of Essequibo,** that . . . he had directed the Postholder Linau [of Moruka], to proceed without delay up that river [Essequibo], as well as up its branches named Cajooni and Massaroenie; also with instructions to collect every information and to satisfy the Indians of the amicable disposition of the Colony in their behalf, so as to induce all those who might have left their villages to return and reside there peaceably. *Same, p. 264.*

1808. Court of Policy.

Resolved that Mr. **G. Timmerman** be, and hereby is, appointed **Protector of the Indians for the district of the West Coast of Essequibo,** commencing at Supename Creek, and extending to the utmost limits of the Colony towards the Spanish settlements; and that Mr. **A. C. Roberts** be appointed **Protector of the Indians for the River Essequibo and its different branches.** *Same, p. 265.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—PROTECTORS OF INDIANS—(Continued).

1808. Secretary of Demerara to Gerrit Timmerman.

H. W. Knollman, . . . having resigned the post of **Protector of the Indians for the River and Dependent Districts of Essequibo,** the . . . Court has . . . seen fit, in the place of . . . Knollman, resigned, to nominate you . . . and instal you as Protector of the Indians so far as concerns the west coast of the aforesaid Colony from the Creek Supename right up to the Spanish boundary, the River Pomeroon being included therein, Mr. **C. A. Roberts** having been appointed as **Protector of the Indians for the River Essequibo and the rivers and creeks flowing into it.**

I have . . . to request you to . . . apply to Mr. Knollman, with a view of taking over the papers and documents **respecting the post of Protector** [**of the Indians**] and at the same time (according to inventory) the half of the items for native trading and rations belonging to the Colony which may yet remain under the care of Mr. Knollman, *B. C., V, 191.*

1809. Court of Policy.

The Court having considered an act of H. C. Wahl, Postholder with the Indians in the River Massaroeni, for sundries supplied for the use of the Post, and wages of Indians hired to work about the same, amounting in all to G. 7,232 15, it was resolved that the same shall be paid in this instance, but . . . in future he is directed positively to abstain from contracting or engaging for any expense whatsoever . . . without the **previous knowledge and approbation of the Protector of the Indians** under whose orders he stands.

B. C.-C., App., 265.

1809. Court of Policy.

The . . . Petition having been read, the Court ordered that the same be referred to **Mr. Roberts** as **Protector of the Indians in the River Essequibo,** to report thereon to the Court at the next meeting. *B. C., V, 192.*

1810. Court of Policy.

Laid before the Court a list of some articles which the **Protector of Indians in Essequibo, Mr. G. Timmerman,** requested the Court's authorization to purchase for the Indians who have been attached to the Post of Morocco since April, 1809, to April, 1810. *B. C.-C., App., 266.*

1810. Accounts.

G. Timmerman, Protector of Indians at the Post of Morocco . . G. 2,313 7 8
The heirs of . . . W. H. Knollman, for sundry disbursements of said Mr. **Knollman** when **Protector of Indians in Essequibo** . . G. 2,621 2 0
Protector of Indians, A. C. Roberts, for sundries delivered and paid for the Indians . . . . . G. 812 0 0

Same, p. 391.

1812. Postholder of Mazaruni.

The Protectors make their regulations themselves, and these the Postholder follows. *B. C., V, 199.*

1813. Acting Governor Codd.

Mr. Edmonston, the Protector of the Indians, is a gent universally respected in the Colony and beloved by them, but his private affairs do not admit of his taking any active measures to improve the condition of the Indians, nor does it appear to be prescribed as a duty expected of him. *Same, p. 215.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—PROTECTORS OF INDIANS—(Continued).

1813,* May 15. Instruction for Postholders.

1. The Postholder shall keep an accurate journal.

2. He shall transmit quarterly a copy of this journal **to the Protector** of his district.

3. In case of any extraordinary occurence at or near the Post, he **shall** immediately **acquaint therewith the Protector.**

6. When required by the **Protector** he shall . . . execute promptly any orders he may receive from the **Protector.**

7. He shall not permit any persons, . . . to pass the Post, unless they show him a pass, either from the Governor-General, or from the Commandeur of the Essequibo, or from **one of the Protectors of the Indians.**

8. If any person not provided with such a pass, should attempt to pass the Post, the Postholder shall . . . detain such person . . . at the same time giving notice to the **Protector.**

13. Should any Indian apply to him with complaints . . . he shall repair with such Indian to the **Protector.**

14. Any white or free coloured person about the Post who might be desirous to have an Indian woman to live with him, shall acquaint therewith the Postholder, who is then to wait on the **Protector** with such woman, . . . and the Protector is then either to sanction or to refuse such cohabitation as he may think right.

17. **He shall apply from time to time to the Protector for the rum he may want for the purpose of giving a dram to the Indians who call upon him.** *B. C., V, 216.*

1814. Court of Policy.

William Robertson, as **Protector of Indians for Essequibo,** stated that the Post Masseroeni had not been supplied with their annual allowances for nearly two years, . . . and moved that the Protectors should be authorised to procure the necessary articles.

The Court . . . ordered that the **Protectors of Indians** for Posts Masseroeni and Mahaica be authorised . . . to procure the annual allowances for their respective Posts. *B. C.-C., App., 269.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The office of Protector of Indians is of recent creation, not being known in the earliest days of the Colony.

Its principal benefit appears to consist in the establishment of a medium of communication between the Indians and the Head of the Government. . . . It is entirely a civil office. *B. C., VI, 30.*

There are five Protectors—that is, five petty Governments—over the Indians, without concert and without superintendence. . . . In a military point of view the office is in every way objectionable, and its inconveniences can only be obviated by the regular and acknowledged appointment of a Commander, or Captain-General of Indians. *Same, p. 31.*

---

* This document dated May 15, 1803 was enclosed in a letter dated Sept. 26, 1813. 1803 is believed to be a misprint for 1813.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—PROTECTORS OF INDIANS—(Continued).

1823. William Hilhouse.

The following remarks . . . from . . . an Indian Captain :—

Our **Protectors** are appointed without reference to any choice of ours, and when we look up to them for kindness and favour, we receive coldness and contempt. *B. C., VI, 32.*

1824. Instructions for Protectors of Indians.

The Protectors of Indians will, to the utmost of their power, **give effect to and enforce among their respective Postholders** a strict and diligent **observance of the instructions** originally issued on the **18th May, 1803**, and subsequently reprinted and issued afresh by authority on the 2nd May, 1815.

Same, p. 39.

1827. Lieutenant-Governor D'Urban.

There is a legally appointed Protector of Indians for each of the six rivers: Mahaiconey, Mahaica, Demerary, Boerasirie, Essequibo and Pomeroon, under whose immediate orders Postholders act. *Same, p. 38.*

1831. A. van Ryck de Groot.

I am a Protector of Indians. If an Indian made a complaint to me I should act as mediator, not as a Magistrate. If the injuring party did not choose to appear, I should not feel myself authorized to compel him to do so. In their quarrels I should consider I had nothing to do unless they called on me as mediator. . . . I give presents . . . to the Indians, they are a retaining fee for their fidelity and friendship, . . . the Indians consider them as presents to them as friends and allies, not as subjects. *Same, p. 41.*

1831. Second Fiscal.

In every district of the Colony where Indians reside, **an officer** is appointed, who is selected from amongst the most respectable proprietors, **whose very title—"Protector of Indians"—proclaims the duties which he has to perform.** To him it belongs to receive the complaints which Indians may have to prefer against, not only, as I conceive, any of the other inhabitants, but also against each other, and use every legal method to procure redress of their grievances.

In each of these districts is also a Postholder, receiving a salary from the Colonial Government, and residing at situations more immediately in contact with the Indians, who are chiefly, though not exclusively, appointed for the purpose of assisting the Protectors in their care of the Indians, as appears in the instructions for those officers, and who are therefore placed under the immediate superintendence of the Protectors.

That such protection has been promptly and effectually afforded, and been relied on by the Indians can be proved by the production of innumerable instances.

Same, p. 44.

As soon as he had committed the crime . . . he made his way to Mr. Timmerman **the Protector of Indians**. . . . The family of the murdered woman pursued him there, and demanded that he should be surrendered to them, which was, of course, refused by the Protector. The family then proceeded to the office of the Second Fiscal . . . demanding justice . . . and desirous that he should be dealt with according to our laws.

[While] Second Fiscal three or four [like] cases [were] . . . brought before me by the Indians. *Same, p. 44.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—PROTECTORS OF INDIANS—(Continued).

1832. William Playter, assistant Postholder.

Mr. Richardson is the Postholder. . . . His duty is to look after the Indians and keep them in order. They always come to him when they have disputes to have them settled . . . **There is a Protector of Indians in the Essequibo, His Honor George Bagot.** Mr. Richardson is allowed every three months, a puncheon of rum and one of molasses, plaintains and fish, cutlasses and axes, for the purpose of distributing to the Indians. I have been to the Protector for these supplies, and I have also received them in town by his order. Sometimes they come and put the Post in order and weed the grass, and they are given these things in payment. They always expect payment for their work. Sometimes they get these things without work. *B. C., VI, 48.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—SUPPRESSION OF INDIAN SLAVERY AND ITS EFFECT.

1807. Court of Policy.

Respecting the revival . . . of **the law promulgated on the 1st May** of the year **1793, by** express **command of the States-General . . . against the purchasing of Indians as slaves,** it was resolved that the said law shall be again republished for the general information . . . and with the addition . . . that it shall also be unlawful and criminal for any persons to take or receive Indians in pawn, or as a pledge for debts due by other Indians.

B. C.-C., App., 264.

1810. Court of Policy.

The Ambassador had then received some presents and had returned into the woods, and his Excellency began to entertain some hopes he would have been heard of no more, when this Chief arrived, which now rendered it absolutely necessary to come to some determination on the subject of their representations; and **as the selling their Indian prisoners as slaves in these Colonies could not be allowed, to devise some means at least so far to satisfy them as to prevent their making war upon the Indians settled in the back lands and their murdering their prisoners** . . . his Excellency was not, however, of opinion that their settling in the neighborhood of the Colonies should be encouraged, or their alliance for the purpose of internal defence be courted.

B. C., V, 194.

[As to the **Caribs**] having **formerly** been **of great use** to the Colony . . . this certainly was the case at the time it was lawful to employ the other classes of Indians as slaves, when these Caraiban Indians were very useful in procuring them, but **could not be applicable at this moment, when that trade was prohibited.** *Same, p. 195.*

1812. Court of Policy.

Chief Manarwan having been now admitted in Court . . . His Excellency . . . demanded . . . the reason of his coming, he answered:

That the presents made to him and his people when he was last in this Colony were for services rendered in former years to the Colonies.

That Governor Bentinck and the Court at that time made him promise not to wage wars against the other Indian tribes . . . and that he **should** entirely **give up the Slave Trade.** *B. C., V, 200.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—SUPPRESSION OF INDIAN SLAVERY AND ITS EFFECT—(Continued).

1812. Court of Policy.

That his Excellency and the Court, **in consideration of his thus leaving the Slave Trade, had promised to distribute to him and his people annually,** when called for, similar kinds of **presents** as those then given to him.

That he had faithfully kept his word, . . . and that he consequently expects to receive the presents promised him and his people. *B. C., V, 200.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—TREATIES OR AGREEMENTS WITH INDIANS.

1810. Court of Policy.

The result of a very long conference . . . was the following agreement,—

That **the Court should give him** [Manariwan, a Carib Chief] and his people, in the first instance, **such articles as he had demanded . . . and that the same kind of presents should be distributed to them annually** when called for at the end of each year.

In consideration whereof he, the said Manariwan, . . . **pledged himself not to make war upon the Indians residing in the back lands** or connected with this Colony; that he would spare the lives of the prisoners he had made, . . . and that, finally, he and his people would behave themselves peaceably and amicably towards the whites and those who lived under their protection, excepting, in case of his being molested by either of them. *B. C., V, 195.*

1812. Court of Policy.

Chief Manarwan having been now admitted in Court . . . his Excellency . . . demanded . . . the reason of his coming, he answered :—

That the presents made to him and his people when he was last in this Colony were for services rendered in former years to the Colonies.

That **Governor Bentinck and the Court** at that time **made him promise not to wage wars against the other Indian tribes . . . and that he should** entirely **give up the Slave Trade.**

That **His Excellency** and the Court, **in consideration of his thus leaving the Slave Trade, had promised to distribute to him and his people, annually,** when called for, similar kinds of **presents** as those then given to him. . . . That he had faithfully kept his word, . . . and that he consequently expects to receive the presents promised him and his people.

The Governor . . . explained to the Chief Manarwan that, he having so faithfully kept his promise, the government on their part would give him the presents he and his people had come down for. . . . His Excellency was of opinion that he could not continue this annual subsidy without the sanction of His Majesty, that his Excellency would therefore give him as soon as they would arrive the presents of the year, but that he could not promise anything further without a sanction from home.

The Chief having expressed his surprise at his Excellency's statement, saying Governor Bentinck and the Court had stated to him that the agreement entered into . . . was on record, and that provided he [Manarwan] kept his promise he would have no trouble in obtaining whatever presents had been promised.

Same, p. 200.

The arrival of the Carib Chief Manowura . . . placed me in a situation . . . which I felt extremely difficult and delicate. . . . This Indian . . . declared he came by invitation to receive presents promised

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—TREATIES OR AGREEMENTS WITH INDIANS—(Continued).

annually. On referring to the Minutes of this Honourable Court I found his statement correct. . . . my predecessor, . . . Governor Bentinck may have had instructions from high authority, which would cause an act of his to be . . . proper, whereas, . . . without the commands of my Sovereign . . . I do not think myself authorized to enter into any compact or assent to this Colony being bound to pay a yearly subsidy.

I do not think it would be in my power to assent to any Treaty of this nature, unless by express orders from . . . the Prince-Regent.

B. C., V, 201.

1813. Governor Carmichael.

When **Manarroe, the Chief of the Caribs,** came down with about 300 people, . . . I received him and his Chiefs, desiring to know the cause of their visit. His reply was, that he **came for presents promised him,** and . . . he expected to have what he came for. **I told him that the promise of any former Governor I could not be answerable for,** unless ordered by my King—that I was confident His Majesty . . . would not permit any demand to be made as a right, but that they would grant from their own generosity and friendship a boon and a gift, which must come of their own free will and when they thought proper, . . . I then told him that, in consideration of the distance he had come, he would be given what presents could be had conveniently, but he must not come or expect any more unless sent for, that **the English would always perform any promise made by them, but did not now consider any to bind them.**

Five chiefs of the Arrowauks, with their followers, **came down the Demerary;** as **their tone and demeanour seemed to be more peremptory than the Caribs,** expressing a jealousy of the presents they had received, and threatening to make war, . . . I told them at their peril to attempt anything of that kind, and informed them they could not now receive anything, but if at any future time it was thought proper to call for them, notice would be given to Mr. Edmonston, their Protector, and the gratuity or presents would depend upon good behaviour. *Same, p. 203.*

1813. Charles Edmonston, Protector of Indians.

Though my appointment as Protector of the Indians is of no more than three or four years' standing, yet I have been in the habit of calling, on the behalf of the Government, for the assistance of the Indians at different periods since the year 1795, during which space of time **I know of no Treaty or Agreement with the Chiefs of Indian tribes implying anything of the nature of subsidy or tribute;** nor in my intercourse with these nations was I ever authorized by this Government to make any promise of the kind, though I know, from a residence of thirty-three years in the country, **presents were generally made by the Dutch Government,** and as often expected. *Same, p. 204.*

In 1811 a claim was set up by a tribe of Indians, which came down the Essequibo from a distant part, **to an old engagement alleged by the Indians to have taken place between the Old Dutch Government and their forefathers, whereby the former were indebted to the latter,** and if the Colony had any regard for their (the Indians) friendship, it had now a fair opportunity of confirming the same by agreeing to supply their wants. *Same, p. 204.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—TREATIES OR AGREEMENTS WITH INDIANS—(Continued).

1813. Charles Edmonston, Protector of Indians.

It was not, I believe, thought expedient to repulse them suddenly. They were in consequence told that, though **the Government could never recognize a claim of the nature made by them**, yet, that in consideration of their wants, and the great distance they came, some presents would be sent for to England.

B. C., V, 204.

1826. **TREATY OF PEACE** AND FRIENDSHIP . . . **BETWEEN THE INDIAN CHIEFS LEWIS** ON THE ONE PART, **AND JANKLASS AND JARABAKKARIJ** ON THE OTHER PART, **BOTH OF THE ACCUWAIJ NATION,** FOR AND ON BEHALF OF THEIR RESPECTIVE TRIBES.

ARTICLE I.— . . . all hostilities . . . shall cease, and full and free pardon shall be granted for all and every offence that may have been committed by individuals of the one Party against those of the other Party.

ARTICLE II.—There shall be peace, friendship, and alliance between the parties from henceforth.

ARTICLE III.—Should any individuals of either Party offend against any of the opposite Party . . . the offender, together with the persons aggrieved, shall be brought by the Chiefs of the Party to which they respectively belong before the Protector of Indians to be dealt with as he may think right and necessary.

. . . in the presence of . . . George Bagot, Protector of Indians, David McKie, . . . J. W. Thompson, . . . G. P. Wischropp, Assistant Postholder, whose names appear hereto. *B. C., VI, 37.*

1826. Protector of Indians.

The murderous warfare . . . carried on between the Carbinee and Paramona tribes of the Akawaye nations of Indians in the Mazaroony River, has been put an end to by . . . Mr. McKie and the Assistant Postholder Wishropp, whom I have ordered to proceed to the settlements of the respective parties for that purpose. . . . I . . . **lay before your Excellency a copy of a Treaty of Peace and Alliance which has been entered into and ratified by the Chiefs, with the** unanimous **consent** and concurrence **of their followers.**

Same, p. 38.

1831. William Hilhouse.

I know from tradition a Treaty has been made by the Colony **with the Arrowacks, Warrows and Caribbees . . . retaining them as soldiers in the defence of the Colony,** . . . in consequence of which an allowance is made every three years, which they consider as a retaining fee. I think it the only tie—they look on it as subjecting them to serve when called on solely as allies: there is no clause I have heard of calling on them to submit to the laws in other respects. I was employed by the Governor to raise an Indian force. . . . The Governor, in my presence, thanked them as friends and allies. *Same, p. 41.*

1831. A van Ryck de Groot.

I do not know that they [Indians] have any mode of recording events or any substitute for writing; **any compact between them and us is oral only.**

Same, p. 41.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—WHAT INDIANS WERE CONTROLLED.

1818. Thomas Cathrey, Protector of Indians.

Return of Indians [Essequibo]. List of Indian chiefs in the District of Essequibo, etc.

The table shows 277 Caribs, 6 being chiefs, **about the junction of the three rivers**; 566 Arawaks, 12 being chiefs **chiefly in or near the Essequibo estuary**; 643 Akuways, 21 being chiefs **chiefly in the Cuyuni and Mazaruni.**

B. C., VI, 12.

1823. William Hilhouse.

The nearer the Indians are to the white settlements the more debauched they are in their manners, and the less dependence can be placed upon their services. They are also more prone to desertion from the immediate vicinity of their homes, and their habits of traffic with the whites gives them such a supply of necessaries that the pay and allowances of the service are no objects to them.

The Accaway Indians, living beyond these temptations, although they are **less civilized, are more subordinate**, and from their poverty the pay and allowances they receive is of considerable importance to them. It would be difficult to keep together for any time beyond a week a body of Arawaaks without an equal number of Accaways to influence and overawe them.

The Accaways are the most warlike of any tribe in the Colony, and, notwithstanding the smallness of their number, set all the other tribes at defiance. They elect their own Captains, and acknowledge no Protector, and are particularly repugnant to the interference of white persons in their domestic government, or the settlement of whites in their territory. *Same, p. 25.*

1831. A. van Ryck de Groot.

I lived in Fort Island in 1795. . . . A man was punished in 1795, I think, for murdering his wife. I believe she was an Indian woman. I **cannot say whether the man was an Indian or not.** but we took him for one. His name was Macaniouri; **he was decapitated.** *Same, p. 41.*

1836. Postholder in Pomeroon.

There are three tribes of Indians **within twenty-four hours' journey from this Post,** say Warrau, Arawacks and Caribs. There are in all, about from 700 to 800, including males and females. There are also about from 200 to 250 Spanish Indians residing about six hours' distance from this Post up the Morocco Creek. *Same, p. 61.*

1837. [Father Hermant].

In the Mission of Morocco there are now no more than ten or twelve Indian families residing. The others are scattered in Pomeroon, Essequibo, Waini, and even about Oronoco Rivers. *Same, p. 62.*

Should his Excellency manifest expressly his will to have them settled in Morocco there is no doubt that all those living in Pomeroon and Essequibo should obey to his order immediately, **and those living in Waini should come, when they should be advised.** *Same, p. 63.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—WHAT INDIANS WERE CONTROLLED—(Continued).

1838. Governor Light.

The number of Indians below the Falls of Essequibo on the rivers and creeks, not including **those of the Morocco and Pomeroon**, amounts to 680. On those of the two last, with their tributaries, the number is supposed to **amount to 1,700.** Let us take this amount as that of the Indians **who from time to time approach our cultivated regions** on the other rivers and creeks of British Guiana.

B. C., VI, 63.

1839. William Crichton, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The aborigines [of Barima-Waini region] **look to this colony for protection.** *Same, p. 77.*

1840. W. C. McClintock, Postholder in Pomeroon.

Return of Indians in the **Pomeroon District**, December, 1840.

Whole number 2361 ; includes all the settlements, 181, **situated between the Baramany and Itrabeese creeks.** *Same, pp. 99-100.*

Your reporter . . . has visited all the Indian settlements in Pomeroon district, and . . . assembled the families in each, . . . to furnish a most correct Return with the names of the creeks, the number of settlements, and the number of Indians residing in each.

If the above **number of 2,361 were added to the numerous Indians that inhabit the Rivers Waini, Bareema, and the right bank of** the **Amacoora** Creek, which by Sir Robert Schomburgk's survey is the western boundary of British Guiana, together with their various tributaries, **the grand total would be upwards of 6,500 Indians.** *Same, p. 106.*

1841. Rev. W. H. Brett.

I am unable to give an accurate account of the **number of Indians in the Pomeroon** and its tributaries, but should estimate them at 400 or 500. Mr. McClintock, **the Postholder, has taken a census.** *Same, p. 117.*

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The number of Indians residing in these remote parts [Waini, Barima and Amacura] **must remain doubtful until a census be obtained,** a job which your reporter would gladly undertake . . . but . . . he is strongly of opinion that they would number about 4,500, say, 1,400 effective people, all excellent workers and in every respect worthy the notice of colonists, not only on account of their numbers, but to insure their more constant services to the estates on the coast.

If emigration were the only object in view a Post in Bareema River would have the desired effect. Your reporter is so sanguine on this point, he has no hesitation to say that were he residing in that part of his district, he would undertake to furnish the estates with three times the number of Indians as already employed by them. From such a post, properly conducted, he is satisfied results would be arrived at which would prove of enduring advantage to the sugar estates as well as to the Indians generally. *Same, pp. 138-139.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—WHAT INDIANS WERE CONTROLLED—(Continued).

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

If the [Waramury] Mission be properly conducted, it will be the means of adding at least 1,000 Indians to the present stock of labour on that coast.

Desirous that his Lordship . . . should be afforded an opportunity of conversing with Indians from the more remote parts, he **despatched messengers to the Rivers Winey, Bareema, and Amacura, with instructions to each Headman** or Chief **to bring as many Indians as could** conveniently **be collected, to Waramury hill,** which instructions were obeyed with alacrity. . . . When the Indians from Winey, Bareema, and Amacura were added to those already on the hill, there could not have been less than 700, of which Warrows formed the principal number. *B. C., VI, 141.*

1846. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The general unproductiveness of the high lands of this district after the first crop compels the Indians to wander about in search of other hills; therefore, to curb this propensity, which, without a shadow of a doubt, is the main barrier towards civilizing them, can only be accomplished . . . by placing them in possession of land, . . . **to hold out to the Indians such inducements as may be likely to cause them to remove from their present hiding places down to the post** . . . that . . . the Post lands . . . be . . . given over to such Indians as may feel disposed to settle thereon. *Same, p 145.*

Proposing to drain the lands belonging to the Post . . . firstly, for the purpose of inducing Indians, especially those who at present inhabit the banks of the Rivers Winey and Bareema, to locate thereon; secondly, to improve the general condition of those people by combining industry with education, and thirdly, as this last can only be accomplished by placing the Indian in possession of land capable of yielding large returns, . . . the Post [is] better calculated to answer his expectations than any other part of the district. *Same, p. 145.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

During . . . 1840 . . . and . . . 1841, your reporter took the census of all the Indians inhabiting a portion of this most extensive district, commencing **from Baramany Creek,** which is about 27 miles beyond Morocco Creek, and extending **as far as Itrabeese Creek** in the Essequibo River. *Same, p. 169.*

1849. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The importance of keeping up the Post-house at the mouth of the Pomeroon River has been too often represented; . . . to leave this district unprotected would be the means of renewing the old system of imposing upon the poor Indian and dragging them per force from their settlements, and compelling them to labour on the coast and elsewhere, and afterwards send them home unremunerated, disgusted, and heart-broken. *Same, p. 177.*

1850. Governor Barkly.

Since the claim of Great Britain was distinctly defined by landmarks, **several tribes have moved within them.** *Same, p. 184.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—WHAT INDIANS WERE CONTROLLED—(Continued).

1856. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Mr. James Light, manager and attorney of plantation Anna Regina, addressed reporter during the disturbance, expressing a wish for assistance "from any quarter." To this reporter immediately responded by sending at once a body of Arrawack Indians to aid Mr. Light, at the same time offering to convey a large number of Carabeese, should they be required.

The Spanish Arrawack Indians of Muruca Creek were exceedingly indignant . . . with reporter for not taking them to the coast to assist the whites in suppressing the late riots.

Such is the loyalty of the Indians of Moruca Creek, or rather of St. Roses Mission. *B. C., VI, 200.*

If the foregoing suggestions were advocating the cause of the aborigines only, he would not have introduced them, **knowing the feelings generally to be rather against than in favour of the Indians,** simply because they, as a body, don't contribute continuous labour to the cultivation of the staples of the country, . . . but as it so happens, these few observations apply equally to their more favoured brethren, the negroes of the Colony, who have received all the loaves and fishes. *Same, p. 201.*

1857. W. H. Holmes and W. H. Campbell.

The **Indian population** inhabiting the country **between the rivers Pomeroon and Amacuru,** the Atlantic Ocean and the river Cuyuni. **Mr. McClintock . . . estimates their number at about 2,500.** *V. C.-C., III, 198.*

1861. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Census returns I now beg to forward . . . do not exhibit, by very many, the actual number of resident inhabitants for . . . most of the laborious population are on the coast selling plantains, &c., and . . . a number of the people attached to this district were returned as residing on the sugar estates, . . . likewise, . . . **to arrive at a correct census of this district, the people,** other than Indians, **residing on the rivers Maruca, Winey, and Bareema, should be included.** *B. C.-C., App., 307.*

1888. E. F. im Thurn.

The lives of nearly all these people [Indians in Pomeroon Judicial District] have been deeply colored by Mission influence, and **the Warrans of the Amakooroo and Lower Barima, the Arawaks of the Aruoka, and the Caribs of the Upper Barima,** and possibly of the Barama, **are the only Indians of this district now living in something like their natural state.** *B. C., VII, 257.*

1897. Waiaree, a Carib Indian.

Whenever my father required anything, or wanted justice, he went [from Barima region] **up to Mucaseema** in the Upper Pomeroon, **where the English Magistrate lived,** and also at Aikowinie [branch of Pomeroon] mouth, where the Postholder resided. *Same, p. 229.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ADMISSIONS THAT BRITISH DID NOT CONTROL.

——. British Case.

In the first instance **every serious case of complaint by the Indians came before the Postholder, to whom the Indians were exhorted in every instance to repair** instead of taking the law into their own hands. *B. C., 100.*

The early days of British administration produced no immediate change in the custom of the Indians to exact the penalty of life for life in every case in which a white inhabitant did not step in to buy off the avenger. . . . It was not unusual for the Protector or the Postholder to buy off the animosity of the friends of an Indian who had met with his death under circumstances which afforded no grounds for the institution of a prosecution. *Same, p. 101.*

1807. Commandeur in Essequibo.

I . . . Commandeur of Essequibo, hereby authorise Mr. A. Meertens, together with Messrs. Molier, Hebbelinck, De Haas, and Spaman, to go to the upper part of the river to the Indians, in order there **to inquire** into the reasons **why** the **said Indians have abandoned their village,** and make preparations to undertake what, . . . never can be suffered; they, moreover, are **to inquire if they have any complaints to make,** and how far such complaints may be well founded. Furthermore, to do and perform whatever the said gentlemen may judge necessary for keeping the interior quiet. *B. C., V, 188.*

I recommend to you in particular not to let the Indians perceive you are armed, **to prevent their suspecting us from having any hostile intentions.** *Same, p. 189.*

1818. Thomas Cathrey, Protector of Indians in Essequibo River.

[**Macollo an Arawak chief** generally residing at Iterbice creek, in the River Essequibo] **has been called three times for registration, but will not obey.** In 1815, at the distribution, his tribe was 19 men, 10 women and 10 children. *B. C., VI, 12.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

An enormous sum is appropriated by the combined Court for the purchase of the **allianee and friendship of the Indians,** and as an equivalent to them for the occupation of their territory by the whites. This sum is certainly enormous, for the principal object for which it is given remains at this day unaccomplished, and in the assemblage of our Indians for service we are obliged to depend upon the individual popularity of those persons most immediately in contact with them, or the muster would be indeed miserable.

At this day there is no loyal feeling amongst them towards the Colony, which is the consequence of what they esteem a series of unfriendly or neglectful acts towards them. But they have only withdrawn their attachment to the community to vent it in individuals, and a recurrence to the candid and generous policy of former Governments would soon restore that tone of feeling amongst them, so indispensible to our interests. The immediate evil resulting from this neglect has been the emigration of such numbers from within the limits of the Colony that at the same rate a few years would leave us **without an ally.** *Same, p. 31.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ADMISSIONS THAT BRITISH DID NOT CONTROL—(Continued).

1831. Lieutenant-Governor D'Urban.

Protection is afforded to the Indians by the Magistrates of the Colonial Government, and . . . they willingly avail themselves of it. . . . but . . . **if** . . . our laws suffer such **a murderer** to **escape** with impunity, **they will cease to resort to their interference, and resume** their habit of seeking **their own vengeance.** *B. C., VI, 43.*

1831. Second Fiscal Bagot.

From the despatch of my Lord Goderich it would appear that there is a want of information at the Colonial Office on the subject of the **relative situation of the Indians of these settlements with the Colonial Government,** and your Excellency would, in my opinion, be doing a service to the former, and but justice to the latter, by informing the Secretary of State more minutely on the actual relations subsisting between them.

This is perhaps the more necessary at this moment, as, unfortunately, I have, within a few days, had to send up another Indian for trial on a charge of the murder of two individuals. *Same, p. 43.*

The Indians . . . consider our taking upon ourselves the decision of cases of this nature [murders] as the greatest favour we can do them.

Indians receive effective protection where offences are committed against them by persons other than Indians . . . I have sent forward within the last two years three cases for trial for offences against the persons of Indians.

Fears have been expressed that the natives have to this day received no compensation for the lands we have dispossessed them of. . . . Indians can scarcely be said to be dispossessed of lands . . . they never inhabited or cultivated. *Same, p. 45.*

1832. Second Fiscal Bagot.

The **Indians of the Orinoco . . . also those Spanish Indians located in and about** the **Morocco.** Mr. Hynes seems most anxious to draw the Indians now in the Morocco more into the heart of the Colony, as well on their own account as with the hope that they might eventually become the means of extending Christianity and habits of industry and morality amongst the Indians of **our** settlements. *Same, p. 46.*

1834. George Bagot, High Sheriff.

As the . . . Warrow Indians appear impressed with a strong suspicion that the Indian Hendrick came unfairly by his death, and the family of the deceased may feel themselves bound to revenge it unless some compensation be made, **I would recommend some small present should be offered them, on condition of their giving up the feud; otherwise,** I apprehend from the customs of these people, **there will be bloodshed, and, if once begun, it is hard to say where it may end.** *Same, pp. 58-59.*

1834. T. S. St. Clair.

The Europeans in this country **seem to be afraid of leaving the seashore, apparently anxious not to expose themselves to the fury of the native Indians.** *V. C., III, 402.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ADMISSIONS THAT BRITISH DID NOT CONTROL—(Continued).

1834. T. S. St. Clair.

It is to the interest of our government to reconcile this people [Indians] to our possession of their lands, and conducive to our peace and comfort **to keep on amicable terms with them.** *V. C.-C., III, 237.*

1838. Governor Light.

Many of the Pomaroon, Morocco and Essequibo Indians are contributing by labor on wood-cutting and other establishments **to administer to the wants of the Colony.** They are acquiring slowly, indeed, habits of civilized life, . . . **We used these people as auxiliaries,** . . . we made them presents . . . **Their influence brought** much larger numbers of **Indians** that at present are **within our borders.** It is evident if some equally powerful motive were presented they would again appear. *B. C., VI, 63.*

1839. Pastor of Morocco Mission.

In the aforesaid rivers [Waini and Barima] there are several Spanish Indians, all Roman Catholics; many tribes of Warows, Waycos [Akaways] and Arawaks are presenting their children to be baptized. . . . The Captain of the Waycos, named Juan Ventura, is a Spaniard, and himself, and almost all his tribe, are Roman Catholics. **In the one only creek of Bareema which I visited I met the Catholic Captain and** the **most of his tribe.** *Same, p. 64.*

1841. R. King, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

April 22.—Remained on the Shell Bank at Waini until the 27th, . . . [then] started, accompanied by Mr. R. Schomburgk, to the Aruca River.

April 28.—Remained at Aruca.

April 30.—**Several Indians came from Amacura, and complained** of the treatment of the Spaniards towards them. . . . **advised them most strongly to remove into the Waini,** or other parts where there could be no doubt as to the boundary, **and that they should have every protection.** *Same, pp. 111–112.*

1841. Rev. W. H. Brett.

Every effort to induce the Indians to attend [church] for the purpose of receiving instruction **seemed ineffectual,** and all solicitations were met with indifference or ridicule. At length, having succeeded in inducing an Arrowaak captain to set the example, and use his influence with his tribe, accompanying me to the various settlements, they began to attend divine worship, and leave their children with me for instruction. *Same, p. 116.*

1841. R. H. Schomburgk.

Venezuela has a Post and a Commandant within a short distance from the mouth of the Orinoco; the Post nearest to the western boundary of British Guiana is in the River Pomeroon, a distance of 120 miles from the Amacura; and it follows, consequently, that **the Postholder of the Pomeroon can never exercise his influence or protection over the Indians who are settled on the Barima or its tributaries.** *B. C., VII, 13.*

1841. Postholder at Ampa Post.

Two corials with **bucks** passed up this evening; they **were requested to stop at the Post** for a few hours **and assist in getting up the sills of the new house from the waterside, which they refused to do, although offered payment.** *B. C.-C., App., 293.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ADMISSIONS THAT BRITISH DID NOT CONTROL—(Continued).

1844. Mr. Macrae.

No attempt has been made as a public measure to withdraw the Indians from the wilderness and their habits there, and to settle them in a community in a civilized state, in the midst of our cultivation.

V. C.-C., III, 180.

1844. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Your reporter . . . is disposed to **regret** most deeply **the uncertainty** that at present exists, and he fears will continue to exist (unless teachers are sent to civilize the unfortunate Indians) **of being able to induce . . . any Indians** from the more remote parts of this Colony **to settle . . . on the banks of Tapacooma Lake,** or anywhere so convenient to the seacoast.

B. C., VI, 134.

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

I would be glad to hear of something being done toward supporting all Indian children from Waini, Barima, and Amacura. It is impossible to expect them to attend at the Mission, living, as they do, such a distance from it.

A Postholder situated in Barima could not only furnish the estates with plenty of Indian labourers, but also induce others from the Orinoco to follow their example. Several families are wishful of quitting the Orinoco, but, like the Worrow, require to be led. *Same, p. 138.*

To establish the Mission upon a more firm footing . . . there is an obstacle of no small importance yet to be overcome, that of **inducing Indians of the more remote parts of this extensive district . . .** in the Rivers Winey, Bareema, and Amacoora, **to allow their children to remain at the Mission.** *Same, p. 138.*

Has at last **succeeded in inducing several Warrow Indians,** inhabitants of the Orinoco, **to work on the Arabian Coast.** *Same, p. 141.*

1846. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Carrabeese Indians . . . declined to join the Accaways on account of their disbelief respecting the report that "God was on earth" . . . they discovered that the Accaways were repairing thither for the purpose of fighting, which **caused that gang** (ten in number) **to settle again in their old quarters, Upper Pomeroon.**

The following **extraordinary change that has taken place in the minds of several Carrabeese Indians of this district.** Most of them until very lately evinced a serious desire to become members of the Established Church by not only adhering to its rules, but their regular attendance to Divine worship combined with strict attention to a neat and cleanly attire, was . . . sufficient . . . to confirm the . . . opinion that civilization was making rapid progress among them, but . . . **those very Indians . . . have . . . abandoned . . . all kinds of instruction . . . quitted the district . . . and gone to the upper part of the River Coyoney,** where they firmly believe the Supreme being is waiting to receive them.

All **the Accaway Indians,** numbering about 550, **have likewise started, . . . (a) misunderstanding . . . existed between them and the Waikas of Coyoney,** and is now to be decided by a fight. The awful massacre is to take place in the upper part of said river; the exact spot is as yet unknown.

Same, p. 142.

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ADMISSIONS THAT BRITISH DID NOT CONTROL—(Continued).

1846. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Worrow Indians, who are the most numerous, being, as they are, the principal inhabitants of Morocco Creek and its tributaries, as also of the Rivers Winey, Bareema, and Amacoora and their various streams. The total number of this most useful tribe varies from 3,550 to 4,000, but . . . not more on an average than 200 derive any benefit from the Mission. . . . **Something to stimulate them to more constant habits of industry is the great want,** . . . to combine industry with education, . . . **to remove them from the present deplorable state of barbarism,** . . . although the system of combining one with the other is acknowledged to be the only one at all likely to civilize the Indians, still **nothing has ever been adopted to put so praiseworthy a plan into execution.** *B. C., VI, 145.*

1848. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Worrows, as well as every other tribe of Indians inhabiting the Rivers Winey, Bareema and Amacuru, and also various other streams of less note within this extensive district, **are** up to the present moment **totally unprovided with any kind of instruction, left entirely to themselves to indulge in all the horrors of a savage life.** *Same, p. 170.*

1849. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

I accordingly proposed . . . the immediate establishment of a mission on Barima, for the Worrow Indians . . . the likelihood of being instrumental in **inducing the Worrows of lower Oronoko to abandon their present habitations and settle down on the Bareema.** *Same, pp. 170–171.*

1850. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

There are no less than 4,000 Indians in Bareema and Wieney, and of this number, 100, and no more, . . . **repair to the sugar estates in search of work.** . . . Worrow Indians . . . (are) at present neglected and living in a state of most abject barbarism. *Same, p. 181.*

1855. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Reporter, occupying a central position, he could more frequently exercise his influence with the various tribes inhabiting the remote parts of this extensive district to abandon their present habitations, and settle somewhere contiguous to Waramuru Mission. *Same, p. 199.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ALLIES AND FRIENDS, NOT SUBJECTS.

——. British Case.

The Indians had, on the defeat of their protectors and rulers, the Dutch, retired to the remote districts of the interior. It was the **aim of the British Government to attract them,** as far as possible, **to the more populated districts of the coast,** an object which as time went on was gradually attained. *B. C., 99.*

The habit of **resorting to the British plantations and wood-cutting establishments** to obtain employment **confirmed the Indians in their dependence on the British.** *Same, p. 108.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ALLIES AND FRIENDS, NOT SUBJECTS—(Continued).

1802. Commandant of Berbice, Demerary and Essequibo.

The interior of Guyana is inhabited by various tribes of Indians, who are generally termed "Buks." Those residing nearest the sea, . . . are the Arawaak, the Akawye, the Worrows and the Charibbs. But of late very few of them have made their appearance, and it is to be apprehended that this circumstance has arisen from dissatisfaction. It would, however, be **better policy to keep these people in good humour, and . . . their attachment may be secured at a very small expense.** Their great utility is experienced in the service they are capable of rendering the Colony in times of insurrection among the negroes. At such periods they cannot be dispensed with. *B. C., V, 172-173.*

1802. Anonymous Memorial.

Another means of internal defence . . . should not be lost sight of.

This means consists in **fostering the friendship with the indians** . . . who have an hereditary hatred against the negroes. *Same, p. 176.*

1807. J. J. L. Molier.

At Mr. Thuman's place we saw more than forty Arowak bucks preparing to fly to the seaside or lower islands, saying that the Acquajen had taken possession of their villages, and had stolen a child from them. We **endeavoured to persuade the men to remain with us.** *Same, p. 188.*

1809. H. C. Wahl.

Captain Hendrik Waragana requires payment for a bush expedition made in the year 1794, 600f., allowed him by his Excellency Baron van Grovestins, received and employed by Mr. Bonnet.

Captain Francisco Achaway, for ten days under the command of the Post-holder Anthon, 30f.—on this expedition his brother was killed; also for ten people, at 10f.=100.

If these people are not paid the Government cannot expect their faithful assistance. *Same, p. 192.*

1810. Court of Policy.

The Governor communicated that a Chief of one of the Caraiban tribes of Indians had lately arrived in town accompanied by a numerous suite.

Further . . . that the Indian alluded to . . . had actually called about that time in the character of an Ambassador, as he said, from his cousin the great Indian Chief, . . . he had so little the appearance of what he pretended to be, that his Excellency had not given much credit to his assertions, and had given him to understand that, . . . the presence of the Chief himself was absolutely required.

The Ambassador had then received some presents and had returned into the woods, and his Excellency began to entertain some hopes he would have been heard of no more, when this Chief arrived, which now rendered it absolutely necessary to come to some determination on the subject of their representations; and as the selling their Indian prisoners as slaves in these Colonies could not be allowed, to devise some means at least so far to satisfy them as to prevent their making war upon the Indians settled in the back lands and their murdering their prisoners, . . . his Excellency was not, however, of opinion that their **settling in the neighbourhood of the Colonies should be encouraged,** or their **alliance for the purposes of internal defence be courted.** *Same, p. 194.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ALLIES AND FRIENDS, NOT SUBJECTS—(Continued).

1810. Court of Policy,

The Governor stated that having found it indispensably necessary that the Indians who have been employed in the late expeditions for scouring the woods should immediately receive their promised pay, and the bounties for the negroes taken or killed by them; . . . he had . . . borrowed for the use of the Colony . . . a sum of money to the amount of about 19,000 guilders.

The members having expressed their acknowledgements to the Governor for the judicious measures he had adopted speedily **to satisfy the Indians, whose ready assistance on occasions of this kind it is so essential at all times to secure.** *B. C.-C., App., 266.*

The Court . . . grants the petitioner, [Henry Mursh] a sum of two thousand two hundred guilders, partly as a remuneration for the services mentioned in this Petition, and partly in consideration of an additional duty which the Court thinks proper to attach to his situation of colonial armourer, viz., that of **repairing the firearms of the Indians who may from time to time bring them to him for that purpose.** *Same, p. 267.*

1811. Court of Policy.

The following accounts against the Colony were examined and . . . the Secretary is authorized to issue warrants of payment of the same:—

	Fl.
G. Timmerman, for **sundries supplied to the Indians**	3,318 19
Pln. Caledonia for plantains supplied for the Indians and the bush Indians at Maroco	2,050
Pln. Walton Hall, for ditto	2,050
Dr. Hancock and Dr. Thomson, for medical attendance at the Post Maroco	946
H. Linau, for **sundries supplied per order to the Indians**	806
Hendrik Cornelissen, for **services done by him respecting the indians**, 2,888 fr., reduced to	1,960
H. C. Wahl, for **sundries supplied the Indian Post** at Masserouny, 1,187 fr., 367 fr., 914 fr., and 1,175.15 fr.	

Demerary Department.

	Fl.
McInroy and Sandbach, for **articles for Indians**	151 15

B. C., V, 196.

1812. Postholder of Mazaruni.

Councillor Knollman had **paid the Indians,** for a period of three months each, one piece of salp, one hatchet, one chopper, [etc.] . . . the hatchet and chopper is too much with the other trifles, whether it was for bush cutting, for building lodgings, or for carrying heavy posts; taking also in consideration that at Pomron there are crabs and fish which are not to be got here. Here the bananas have to be fetched, yonder are large gardens with negroes to work, . . . the Protectors make their regulations themselves and these the Postholder follows. *Same, p. 199.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ALLIES AND FRIENDS, NOT SUBJECTS—(Continued).

1813. Acting Governor Codd.

The first head of expense in the abstract is that connected with the Indians amounting to . . . 6,904 £. sterling for 1811; and . . . 5,112 £. sterling in 1812, in both of which years, it is true, extra expenses were incurred. It is, however, obvious that our Colonies are tributaries to the Indians; whilst the proper system of policy would be to **make them allies, looking to us for protection**; . . . I think the whole present Indian system requires to be reconsidered. *B. C., V, 216.*

1823. William Hilhouse.

The **distribution of Indian presents** should unquestionably be made subservient to this end [attaching the Indians to the interests of the Colony]. It would, indeed, be impossible to explain the utility of giving these presents without reference to some such service being implied. The **presents to Indians, though having some reference to the occupation of Indian territory by the whites, are at this period better understood as an equivalent for the amity and assistance of our Indian allies.**

Uniting the sum requisite for the maintenance of a corps of Jagers, with the exclusive appropriation of presents to the families of those individuals who personally serve, a fund is at once provided which, without any assistance, can in a short time bring into the field 2,000 **efficient auxiliaries**, to be employed as occasion may require. *B. C., VI, 29.*

This is the only Colony in the Indian territory in which this latter authority (the office of Commander of Indians) does not exist, and without it it is vain to hope for efficient **assistance from our Indian allies.**

The Indians are so ready and willing to acknowledge European ascendancy when vested in proper hands.

An enormous sum is appropriated by the combined Court for the **purchase of the alliance and friendship of the Indians**, and as an equivalent to them for the occupation of their territory by the whites. This sum is certainly enormous, for the principal object for which it is given remains at this day unaccomplished, and in the assemblage of our Indians for service we are obliged to depend upon the individual popularity of those persons most immediately in contact with them, or the muster would be indeed miserable.

At this day there is no loyal feeling amongst them towards the Colony, which is the consequence of what they esteem a series of unfriendly or neglectful acts towards them. But they have only withdrawn their attachment to the community to vent it in individuals, and a recurrence to the candid and generous policy of former Governments would soon restore that tone of feeling amongst them, so indispensible to our interests. The immediate evil resulting from this neglect has been the emigration of such numbers from within the limits of the Colony that at the same rate a few years would leave us **without an ally.**

Same, p. 31.

1831. William Hilhouse.

There are three tribes in alliance with the Colony; the Caribbees, Arrowauks, and Warraus. The Ackaway is the main strength at present. . . . I know from tradition a Treaty has been made by the Colony with the Arrowacks, Warrows and Carribbees. . . . They look on it as subjecting

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ALLIES AND FRIENDS, NOT SUBJECTS—(Continued).

them to serve when called on solely as allies. . . . I was employed by the Governor to raise an Indian force. . . . The Governor, in my presence, thanked them as **friends and allies.** *B. C., VI, 41.*

1831. A. van Ryck de Groot.

I give presents in the name of the Governor to the Indians, they are a retaining fee for their fidelity and friendship, . . . the Indians consider them as presents to them as **friends and allies, not as subjects.** *Same, p. 41.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ATTITUDE TOWARDS BRITISH SOVEREIGNTY.

——. British Case.

The Indians of Guiana submitted to, acknowledged, and supported the sovereignty of the Dutch and British respectively within the territory now in dispute. *B. C., 119.*

The **Indians there [Barima region] consider themselves and are treated as British subjects.** *Same, p. 163.*

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

Even after the coming of the British, the Indians continued to be their own avengers, keeping in their own hands the execution of their own laws **instead of submitting to British authority.** *V. C.-C., 112.*

——. British Counter Case.

Though beyond the Moruka there were no residents on British grants, that territory was at this time . . . comprised within the jurisdiction of a British Magistrate, . . . and **inhabited by aborigines owning the supremacy and claiming the protection of the British Crown.** *B. C.-C., 110.*

[1669]. Gov. Byam's journal.

I ordered about 70 men against the french . . . and about 80 more Leeward **agst.** ye Dutch and **Arwacas** and to relieve our dear countrymen Descacebe and Bawrrooonsa [*sic*] who we feared were in Distress—under the command of Capt. Christopher Rendar. Nor was Capt. Rendar unsuccessful at leeward, having **stormed two warehouses of the Arwacas and** had other bickerings wth. them wherein he **slew about 30 men and took 70 captives.** *B. C., I, 167.*

1834. Court of Policy.

The River Demerara . . . Indians . . . [are] greatly incensed, and expressing strong resentment on account of the discontinuance of the annual presents to them, and . . . some . . . declare that, in case the negroes revolt, that they [the Indians] will assist them. **The whites, they say, have done them no service; this country is theirs, they have their own laws, and wish not the whites to govern them.** *B. C., VI, 56.*

1849. [1897] Sir Henry Barkly.

Up the Pomeroon . . . several hundreds of Indians of the Carib tribe who came together in my honour, and marched in full war-paint and feathers to salute me as Governor. *B. C., VII, 235.*

RELATIONS TO THE BRITISH—ATTITUDE TOWARDS BRITISH SOVEREIGNTY—(Continued).

1849. [1897] Sir Henry Barkly.

In August, 1850 . . . at Point Barima . . . we landed on the promontory . . . inhabited by a tribe called the Warrows, . . . **I found all these Indians, including the Warrow tribe, enthusiastically loyal and ready to do anything for us or the British Government to whom they looked for protection.** *B. C., VII, 235.*

1855. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The **Indians** themselves, for those **who** now **come from Bareema** all the way to his place in Upper Pomeroon, to seek the redress which, **as British subjects,** they are as much entitled as other labourers of Guiana. *B. C., VI, 199.*

1868. Petition of John Davidson, an Arawak Indian.

Since the death of our Headman, Captain **Calliestro, all the buck Indians up that side of the Colony,** they **are wholly ungoverned,** making wars against themselves, and taking each others' lives, for want of a Chief or Captain amongst them, or Headman over them, . . . under these circumstances, your petitioner respectfully prays to recommend himself to your Excellency, to be appointed by your Excellency as Headman or Captain over the other buck Indians in the room of the late Captain Calliestro, so that I could command peace and order amongst them as formerly during the lifetime of Captain Calliestro.

Same, p. 209.

1870. Rev. W. H. Brett.

The station at Waramuri is also in a flourishing condition. . . . **The aboriginal races** of that district [covered by the agreement of 1850] **desire nothing more earnestly than to be subject to her [Great Britain] and under her protection and laws, as in former years.** *B. C.-C., App., 310.*

1897. Thomas Thompson, an Akaway Indian.

I consider myself **an English subject,** and entitled to the protection of the Queen of England. *B. C., VII, 219.*

1897. Issokura, an Arawak woman.

All my people always been belong to the Dutch and then to the English and not to the Spanish. *Same, p. 219.*

RELATIONS TO THE VENEZUELANS.

1847. Andres Level.

A large number of the Indians have proceeded to other countries. . . . In this way . . . those who dwell in the forests bordering upon our territory are attracted. . . . All along that frontier, where the heads of the rivers intercommunicate, the **denaturalization of our Indians is constantly going on.** And nothing is more natural than that they should protect those who protect them, when **on this side they are obliged to flee from ill-treatment and deception. This is the ostensible origin of the occupation of the Guianese territory by the foreigner, who claims to base his titles upon the protection for which he says he has been asked by the persecuted Venezuelans fleeing from our towns.** For it is not the mountain dwellers, who have never shown themselves in a town, who have gone over to the foreigner, but those fugitives who,

RELATIONS TO THE VENEZUELANS—(Continued).

from having dwelt amongst us, have been enabled to draw comparisons between the martyrdom they endure here and the very flattering way in which they are received there. *B. C., VI, 157–158.*

1897. Waiaree, a Carib Indian.

When we were **captured** [in Barima region] **by the Spaniards** it was done **so with the assistance of Spanish Caribs,** who accompanied the Spaniards. *B. C., VII, 229.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE SPANISH.

1593. Antonio de Berrio.

God was pleased to send us guides, in the form of two pirogues of Caribs, who . . . came with me **for presents.** *B. C., I, 2.*

1682. Governor of Trinidad.

The natives in this island [Trinidad] and in Guayana, all in this jurisdiction, numbering more than twenty-four thousand, and who communicate with us and **serve us for certain small presents that are given to them.** *V. C., II, 269–270.*

1753. Instructions to Iturriaga.

It will be necessary that such persons are assured of receiving a reward corresponding to the work and danger, which your Excellency may offer them in the name of His Majesty, ... **you might offer the negroes** who may wish to retire to civil life, **liberty, and lands, where they may settle, . . . also assisting them with presents** and means to defray the expenses of their journey. *B. C., II, 87.*

The King wishes that in your journey from Cumana to the Rio Negro **you will seek** an opportunity of bringing about **a conference of the Chiefs of that nation,** for the purpose of attaining the above-mentioned end, by **offering them in his Royal name whatever presents might appear to you adequate for the purpose.** *Same, p. 89.*

1755. Don Eugenio de Alvarado.

Patacon—who, like all of them is a very great liar—**when he saw the presents made to him** and to all his followers, he **offered to bring to me Thumucu and other Chiefs,** and to gather a number of Indians forthwith for settlement in the Mission of Aguacagua. He fixed a month for this service, **but he deceived me, for he did nothing.** *Same, p. 111.*

1760. Don Jose de Iturriaga.

I have treated the Caribs with kindness and presents, in order that leaving their dwellings on the hills, **they might come to settle in the Missions.** *Same, p. 183.*

1771. Don Manuel Centurion.

A chief came afterwards **from Parime with a considerable suite, attracted by the presents and good treatment received by the subjected Indians of the Erevato and sources of the Caura,** and offered to guide the Spaniards. I should send to the Lake Parime, and put them in possession of the boasted hill of El Dorado, and peaceably subject to us the principal savage nations that defend and inhabit it. *B. C., IV, 96.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE SPANISH—(Continued).

1771. Don Manuel Centurion.

The aforesaid **commanding officer shall . . . make friends with all these nations, especially with the Macusi and Arecunas, presenting the Indians with such charms and amulets as they esteem, especially the Chiefs . . . in order to encourage them all to submit voluntarily to the dominion of the King, our master,** in whose name the said officer shall formally take possession of all that territory with as much solemnity as circumstances may permit; demanding an oath of fidelity from the Indians, . . . offering them help and protection in the King's name, promising to preserve their lands and goods as those of faithful subjects, and to defend them from their enemies that they may . . . enjoy the many other advantages of those who subject themselves to the just and gentle dominion of our Lord the King. *B. C., IV, 98.*

1782. Fray Benito de la Garriga.

They [in Caura] may find out whether the priests of other towns give **presents** to their parishioners continually as theirs have, and as the priest now at Upata does. *B. C., V, 4-5.*

1790. Lopez de la Puente.

It would be much to our advantage to acquire the friendship of the **Macusis,** a considerable tribe, and the largest that dwells in the interior of the country. **This would not be difficult by means of the Guaycas, by making them some presents,** such as looking-glasses and other bagatelles of that kind.

Same, p. 121.

1804. Court of Policy.

Mr. Mack represented to the Court that he had heard from different quarters that notwithstanding the measures taken last year by the Court to revive friendly intercourse with the Indians there still existed a **great dissatisfaction, principally among those of the Caraiban nation in the Upper River of Essequibo,** which must undoubtedly be ascribed to this—that by want of timely notice these Indians have not shared in the distribution of rations, &c., done in the month of April, 1803; that in the meanwhile, as is well known, the Caraiban nations . . . have . . . often proved of the greatest utility, it was highly necessary that the Colony should secure their assistance in case of need, and that he therefore **suggested** to the Court **to send a deputation, . . . to the Upper River of Essequibo,** in order **to assemble** all **the Indians** that live there, **and** then to **treat them, and distribute some gunpowder and salt among them.**

Resolved to request Messrs. Mack and Clements, along with the Fiscal of Essequibo, Mr. van der Hoff, **Protector of the Indians** in Essequibo, . . . **to give them** [Indians of the Upper Essequibo] **a treat, offering them at the same time some trifling gift of salt and gunpowder,** and there to give them such assurances in the name of the Government as they will think most likely to renew their attachment to these Colonies. *Same, p. 185.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, ORIGIN OF.

1686. Jacob De Jonge.

Y. H. will be pleased to send me five or six red coats and breeches, with some **sham gold and silver lace, to keep on friendly terms with the Chiefs of the Indians.** *B. C., I, 200.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, ORIGIN OF—(Continued).

1735. West India Company's Account Books.

Goods assigned as a present to 2 Indian Captains, 1 being of the Carib nation and 1 of the Warauw nation, **to maintain the good harmony with both nations:** 2 hats, 4 ells gold lace, 6 coarse Osnaburg. *B. C., VII, 179.*

1764. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have never seen so many Indians together before. My house is . . . full . . . [**they**] **have asked me for only twelve rifles, powder, and shot for the Chiefs, which I have given them.** *B. C., III, 105.*

1784. West India Company (the Ten).

In case of . . . revolts of the negroes, . . . these troops would not be sufficient to stop them: it would, therefore, be necessary to make use of the Indians. But, in order to make somewhat sure of this, it would, in our opinion, be necessary that the Director-General, . . . send a letter to Mr. Van der Heiden, requesting him, in view of the great influence he has over the Carib Indians, &c., **to come** to the seat of Government **with all the Chiefs or Owls of that nation, and all others, and that the Director-General then try to make those people understand that the Dutch, . . . desire to live with them in a greater and more familiar friendship;** that we had observed that they were withdrawing more and more, which we ascribed to the uncertainty in which they hitherto had been with respect to their possessions; that in order to remove for the future all doubt on this point, your Honours had authorized him, the Director-General, to give them certain pieces of land in full and free ownership, . . . that . . . the Governor, ought to give them a deed of grant of such piece of land in such creek as he should select, but that they, on the other hand, should be obliged to pledge themselves to come to the fort once every year, in order to hand to the Governor a list or enumeration of their men in each village, and that in case of revolt they should be under obligation to aid us at the first summons, **all of which, . . . should be accompanied by some presents to the Chiefs or Owls,** . . . they should be obliged to come every year to renew this compact and their deed of grant, for which trouble **some presents could also be made to them every year.** *B. C., V, 25–26.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, FREQUENCY OF.

——. British Case.

This system [**of annual presents to Indians**] appears to have been **regularly continued until the termination of Dutch rule.** *B. C., 91.*

1777. West India Company.

We confirm by these presents the orders already given several times to cultivate friendly feelings with the Indians, which same may be of great service in recovering fugitive slaves, and . . . that they may be always at the service of the Government, upon which the security of both colonies so greatly depends.

These orders . . . have been so badly fulfilled that **even the staffs with silver knobs, which were sent to be presented to the chiefs of the Indians, have not been distributed to them.**

Besides this, . . . the Indian Chiefs never, or at least rarely, present themselves because they are not invited to do so, this being, nevertheless, very necessary. . . . **it would be expedient to present, from time to time, these trifles to the Indian chiefs, in order to stimulate them to present themselves.** *V. C.-C., III, 297.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, FREQUENCY OF—(Continued).

1777. Court of Policy.

As early as was feasible, the Chiefs of the Indians should be summoned to the fort, and **the canes and other presents conferred** [on them], **and thereto obliged, twice a-year, to come down here in order to hold revels** and receive some knick-knacks. *B. C., IV, 185.*

1779. Government Journal in Demerary.

The formal distribution of presents granted by their Lordships to the Indians **took place to-day.** *Same, p. 207.*

1785. Governor-General in Essequibo.

I request your Honours **to send out yearly constantly a consignment to be distributed as presents to the Bucks or Indians,** as also for gorgets [metal collars] to gratify their Chiefs. *B. C., V, 36.*

1802. Anonymous Memorial.

These savage nations, such as the Caribs, Arawaks, Warrows, &c., have always lived **in friendship with the Dutch Government, from which they yearly received some presents,** such as hats laced with point d'Espagne, long walking sticks with large silver knobs, and muskets, for the Chiefs, together with axes, a few yards of salempouris, knives, scissors, beads, mirrors, and other trifles for the common people. In addition to this, **whenever they came down** in troops of from twelve to fifty with women and children, **the Government** of Demerara and the Administration of Essequibo **provided them with bananas, rum, tobacco and negro pipes,** and moderately supported them as long as they remained below. *Same, pp. 176–177.*

1803. Court of Policy.

The members of this Court, . . . are of opinion—

. . . . . .

The Postholders should, from time to time, have the Indians come to them, and distribute amongst them some trifle or other, in order to remain on good terms with them, and thereby inducing them to live in the neighbourhood of the whites, so as to be more readily obtainable to give assistance to the Colony in case of need. *Same, p. 181.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, CHARACTER AND OBJECT OF.

——. British Case.

In 1778 **the Court of Policy,** on the occasion of **a distribution of presents to Indian Chiefs, explained to them that when the Indians had any grievances they must always come and present them.** *B. C., 86.*

In 1778, a number of **Indian Chiefs were summoned, and . . . hats and staves then presented to them.** *Same, p. 90.*

The **Dutch from very early times** had been **accustomed to make presents to Indian Chiefs** as well as to reward them and their followers for services rendered. *Same, p. 91.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, CHARACTER AND OBJECT OF—(Continued).

——. Venezuelan Counter Case.

It was to foster this sort of **friendship that the Dutch made presents to the Indians**; and it was in that spirit that the Indians accepted the presents.

V. C.-C., 104.

——. British Counter Case.

The Warow Waiakumma says:—"My father and mother told me **about the Dutch. They were very good to the Warows, and used to give them cloth and things.** They told me that the Spanish were not good; I must keep away from their country." *B. C.-C., 22.*

1637. Don Pedro de Vivera.

Products which are being worked by slaves and **peaceful Indians and Caribs,** whom they have **attracted to their** [pirate enemies] **service by** many **gifts** they have given them. *B. C., I, 111.*

1700. Official Diary at Kijkoveral.

March 27, [1700] . . . In the forenoon **there appeared here the Owl . . . who for past, and as an encouragement for further services was,** in the name of the Honourable Company, **presented by the Commandeur with a new dress of honour,** and, after being further regaled, he departed very well satisfied. *B. C.-C., App., 93.*

July 6, [1700] At about midday to-day the said Postholder, **his Owl, and some Indians again set out** from here for Demerara **after they had held some revels** the day before, **according to the custom** of the country, and **as an encouragement for bringing more dye.** *Same, p. 107.*

1714. West India Company (Secret instructions).

And **if, in order to facilitate the aforesaid trade it should be necessary to make some presents or regalia to the Chief** or any of the Headmen, such may be made out of the merchandize. *B. C., I, 243.*

1721. West India Company Account Books.

February 20, (1721). Goods delivered for materials for a **coat to be presented to the Indian Owl who delivers most dye** to the Company.

B. C., VII, 179.

1739. Marquis de San Felipe y Santiago.

The Dutch gain their [Carib] goodwill by gifts of all those different kinds of goods which they value, also maintaining their commerce by buying from them slaves of other Indian tribes whom the Caribs capture, both men and women. *B. C.-C., App., 182.*

1744. [1897] George L. Burr.

The Caribs of the Barima . . . offered [in 1744] to become responsible for all future runaways escaping toward the Orinoco if only a Postholder might be stationed in the Barima—a petition not so strange if one remembers **the rum which was always on tap at a Dutch post for every Indian caller.**

NOTE:—Its consumption at the Moruca Post, which lay nearest the Barima Caribs, was especially large, and was expressly justified by this need of hospitality to the Indians. . . . The Spanish Missionaries complained especially of their powerlessness with the Indians against **this Dutch means of allurement.**

V. C.-C., II, 127.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, CHARACTER AND OBJECT OF—(Continued).

1765. Director-General in Essequibo.

I have received **the ring-collars for the Indians Chiefs**; they **are very pretty—too pretty, in fact**, and too heavy for Indians. Those which they use are on an average about as thick as a shilling, and set in a piece of wood to make them stronger.

I have been informed that the two Owls (or Chiefs) of Essequibo and Massaruni are dead.

I have sent word to him of Barima to come here, when I will give him one of the ring-collars. *B. C., III, 126.*

1768. West India Company (Zeeland Chamber).

The slaves . . . returned . . . by the Warrows in return for pay . . . shows **the great utility** which . . . **there is in encouraging** as much as possible **the bringing in of runaway slaves by the due payment of adequate rewards to the Indians.** *Same, p. 179.*

1769. Director-General in Essequibo.

The chief of the Caribs, who is now here, goes up the river to-day. He has promised me to attack the murderers of the Postholder, and to hold all his people in readiness in case we might have need of them. Commandant Backer told him this morning that he would like to come up the river, and asked him whether he would then let him be master? He answered: "No, I am master of the Caribs. You can be master of the whites and of the other nations, and then we can together become masters of everything." **I let him see one of the silver ring-collars which I still have, and promised to give it to him, and to give him some clothes** (of which they are very fond) **if he behaved well.** *B. C., IV, 11.*

1769. Acting Postholder in Cuyuui.

Hired five Indians to fell, burn, clean and **plant a bread-garden**; paid to each Indian five yards salempouris, two woodsman's knives, two mirrors, [&c]., and this is payment for one garden.

Hired five more Indians for the second bread-garden; paid to each Indian five yards red-flowered calico, two woodsman's knives, two mirrors [&c.].

This is payment for the second bread-garden. *Same, p. 16.*

1773. West India Company.

It was **resolved** . . . **to send some** blue drill, combs, corals, mouth organs and looking glasses to be **presented to the Caribs, who have distinguished themselves** in suppressing the riot. *Same, p. 108.*

1774. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

We were also much honoured with your Lordships' respected commands . . . concerning the manner in which we were to deal with and distribute the silver ring-collars, *salempouris*, combs, beads, mouth-drums, and mirrors.

The ring-collars being **intended as a present for the** Indian **Chiefs** . . . **are not well suited** for that purpose, . . . This is a **present** which would have been very acceptable to them in former times. . . . but **the Spaniards have made these things so common amongst them** that they now have some in gold which cover their whole chest. *B. C., IV, 122.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, CHARACTER AND OBJECT OF—(Continued).

1774. Court of Policy in Essequibo.

We have therefore resolved to request . . . twelve ordinary canes with knobs covered with thin silver, and twelve common hats with broad sham silver brims or points d'Espagne . . . this would be a particularly acceptable present to these Indian Owls.

The common Caribs having been already sufficiently rewarded at the time of the revolt . . . it would be best to divide the salempouris and other trinkets amongst the Honourable Company's slaves. *B. C., IV, 122.*

1774. Commandeur in Demerary.

Mr. **Van der Heyden**, a planter of Essequibo, . . . really saved the whole Colony in the last revolt with the help of his Indians, . . . this man **has spent more than a thousand guilders in making the Indians presents, and in treating them.** *Same, p. 124.*

1775. Courts of Policy and Justice.

We first note your Lordships' approval concerning the gifts of ring-collars, *salempouris*, &c. . . . We shall await **the twelve canes with silver knobs and the twelve hats** with false silver trimmings, or point d'Espagne, and **when we receive the same we shall distribute them according to . . . orders.** *Same, p. 137.*

1778. Court of Policy.

The Chiefs of the Indians . . . and their attendants who were at the fort having appeared in Court, . . . the President of the Court assured them . . . of the continuance of the existing friendly relations with the tribes, and **presented them, as a token of friendship, sticks with large silver knobs,** bearing the impression of the seal of the West India Company, hats with large silver pointed plumes, blue drill coloured clothes, axes, ribbons, looking-glasses, and other articles, **and requested them to visit the fort from time to time,** and keep up existing friendly relations.

Accepted gratefully by all the Chiefs, being well pleased with their gifts; they promised to be always willing and ready in rendering every assistance whenever required and called upon by the Government. *Same, p. 187.*

The interpreters being called in, they were told to inform the Indians that the Government asked them to-day, **in consideration of the old friendship, to accept of the presents and to cultivate the friendship, as the presents were given to them as a token of friendship.**

That **it is expected from them** that they will always be true and faithful to the Government and the inhabitants of this Colony, and, when called upon, to give all help and assistance.

That if they have any grievance amongst them, to come forward and make it known, and that if they are wishful of visiting here, they shall always be welcome and be well received.

That the hats and sticks were given to the Chiefs as a token that they are recognized as such by the Government.

That if they want to appoint new ones they shall choose such persons from among them as may be proposed by the Government.

Same, pp. 187–188.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, CHARACTER AND OBJECT OF—(Continued).

Another translation. The interpreters having been called in, they are directed by the presiding Captain Commandant, to explain to the Indians that **it was on account of the old friendship that they were invited to the Government to amuse themselves, and in order to cultivate that friendship; that, as a proof of this, the presents are given;** that **it was expected from their side,** that they should always faithfully adhere to the Government and to the inhabitants of this Colony, and when called upon give all help and support; that, when they have any grievances, they must always come to present them; that, whenever they wish to come to this place, they shall always be welcome and be received; that the hats and canes are given to the owls as a token that they are recognized as such by the Government.

And **that, when wishing to appoint new chiefs, they may to that end offer to the Government such persons among them as they shall choose thereto.**

U. S. Com., II, 544-545.

1785. Governor-General in Essequibo.

I had the honour some days ago to have here some (who were **Caribs**) **who were very insolent, and in the presence of the negroes said that if they obtain no presents, they,** if once again a revolt occurred, would not alone abstain from helping the whites, but **would assist the negroes and murder the whites** with their bananas, salt fish, men; so much they desired gifts and salempour (clothes), cotton, knives, mirrors, &c., out of the store-house. *B. C., V, 36.*

I have had different parties of them [Indians] here, and I have also already had two Commandos of them in the forest against the runaways, . . . **These Commandos cost certainly much, through the manifold presents which we must (give) to the Indians, without which they will not move a step,** and especially when we must here purchase goods therefor . . . but the entire welfare of the Colony depends thereon.

I am obliged to your Honours for dispatching the **metal collars, which I shall distribute among the Chiefs of the Indians** according to their merits.

Same, p. 38.

1785. Government Journal.

December 30. The **Postholder Smith,** of the Post up in Essequibo, named Arinda, **came . . . with 108 free Indian Caribs** to see the Governor with three of their Commanders **to present their service and fidelity, seeking presents as tokens of friendship,** upon which the Commanders each obtained a silver metal collar, a half piece of salampore (cloth), two flasks gunpowder, and the others each 5 ells of salampore, besides salt fish, soopye, and bananas, wherewith they all departed very satisfied. *Same, p. 40.*

1786. Director-General in Essequibo.

Herewith Petition from the store-house of the Commissary . . . concerning the canes and hats for the Indians. . . .

The **canes for the Indian captain must be a genuine cane, otherwise they will despise them,** and they know quite well how to distinguish them.

Same, p. 40.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, CHARACTER AND OBJECT OF—(Continued).

1790. Reports of Commissioners on the Condition of Essequibo and Demerara.

It would therefore be better if the Postholders were employés, not of the Company, but of the Colony, . . . they would have to cultivate their [Indian] friendship and always make them consider the whites as neighbours from whom they were never to expect anything but friendship, good treatment, and prompt help in case of necessity. **It was, therefore, on this footing that the Undersigned proceeded in distributing to the various nations of the Indians the presents sent them in the name of the Zeeland Chamber.**

B. C., V, 81.

1794. Governor-General in Essequibo.

We again went on land, in order **to give the Indians some presents for their trouble and aid,** consisting of Indian wares, powder, ball, rum, and salempouris, . . . with which those simple people were very content. *Same, p. 152.*

1795. Court of Policy.

In consequence of a Resolution of your Honours . . . we . . . commenced making the payments to the Indians who respectively presented themselves. *Same, p. 159.*

We were also afterwards informed that the three Indian Captains, Carrowe, Allert, and Hendrik, were called Owls, which is a higher rank than Captain, . . . Besides the above-mentioned 13 Captains, **231 Indians made application, to each of whom we dealt out the ration granted by your** Honourable **Resolution,** together with 11 guilders, or a half Johannes. *Same, p. 160.*

1803. Court of Policy.

Resolved that, in order to carry out the aforesaid distribution of native trading wares to the Indians, the Fiscal van der Lott and Councillor Plettner are hereby requested and **authorized** to purchase the necessary articles for the native trade for account of the Colony, and subsequently to assemble at the Fort Island . . . the aforesaid Indians who served with their captains in the bush commando . . . and **to distribute to** them **the aforesaid native trading wares and money gratifications** respectively and also to have dealt out to them the necessary rum and fish for a feast. *Same, p. 179.*

1803. P. C. Ouckawa.

I certify that **the gratifications granted to the men** by the aforesaid Resolution **are as follows:**

	F.
To 3 free men, 220 f. each	660
To 30 free men, 110 f. each	3,300
To 5 native Captains, 66 f. each	330
To 68 Indians, 33 f. each	2,244
To Captain Hendrik	33
To Captain Piramus	110
	6,677

Same, p. 180.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE DUTCH, CHARACTER AND OBJECT OF—(Continued).

1803. Court of Policy.

List of Buck's goods ordered from . . . Europe in compliance with the request of the Court.

18 pieces Bucks' cotton.
18 pieces checks.
18 hats with lace bands.
18 sticks like those used by the drum-major in Europe.
500 guns.
2,000 razors.
1,500 lbs. powder.
2,000 wooden flint-boxes.
2,000 gun caps.
2,000 pairs scissors.
2,000 Jews' harps.
6,000 bush knives.
2,000 looking-glasses.
12,000 assorted fish-hooks.
12,000 ells' salemporis.
50,000 needles.
50,000 pins.
2,000 coarse combs.
10,000 beads of all sorts and colours.
12,000 flints.
4,000 lbs. assorted shot.
2,000 Bucks' axes.
2,000 cutlasses with yellow handles.
48 cassava plates.
1,500 thimbles.
1,000 round hats.
36 checquered shirts.
18 silver circular collars, engraved with the lion, bearing the inscription, "Batavian Republic of Essequibo and Demerary" around and above it, with the necessary national ribbon.
18 cases claret, of 18 bottles in each case.
18 cases gin, of 6 flasks in each case.
1,000 fish harpoons, from 4 to 5 inches long, as per annexed design.
1,000 ditto, from 4 to 5 inches long, as per annexed design.

This calculation is made for the number of **1,000 Indians**, each of whom to receive now and then a certain quantity of each article. *B. C., V, 180.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, FREQUENCY OF.

——. British Case.

Up to the present time [1898] **a sum is annually voted** to the Governor under the heading "Contingencies" **for presents to Indians.** *B. C., 106.*

1807. Court of Policy.

Councillor Knollman . . . **Protector of the Indians** in Essequibo . . . was **authorised . . . to share every three months among the Indians** who live near the Post of Morocco **100 gallons new rum** and a proportionable quantity among the Indians of the Upper River Essequibo.

B. C.-C., App., 263.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, FREQUENCY OF—(Continued).

1810. Court of Policy.

The result of a very long conference . . . was the following agreement, viz.:—

That the Court should give him [Manariwan, a Carib Chief] and his people, in the first instance, such articles as he had demanded . . . and that the **same kind of presents should be distributed to them annually** when called for at the end of each year.

In consideration whereof he, the said Manariwan, . . . pledged himself not to make war upon the Indians residing in the back lands or connected with this Colony; that he would spare the lives of the prisoners he had made, . . . and that, finally, he and his people would behave themselves peaceably and amicably towards the whites and those who lived under their protection, expecting, in case of his being molested by either of them, to obtain such redress from the Government of the Colony as should in justice appear to be due to him.

B. C., V, 195.

1811. Court of Policy.

The Court resolved to authorize Mr. G. Timmerman, Protector of Indians in Essequibo, to purchase the following articles for the Indians at the Post of Bouroem, viz.:—

Resolved, . . . that **the annual payment to be made to the Indians** employed at the Post of Maroco, and at all other Posts, **shall henceforth be as follows**, they having been paid at that rate to the 9th April, 1810.

Same, p. 196.

Resolved . . . that the Protectors and Postholders . . . shall be directed to repair to town . . . with an account . . . of the number of male and female Indians attached to the respective Posts, . . . to enable the Court, . . . to come to a determination touching the quantity, and the best means of procuring . . . the **articles which are annually to be distributed to the Indians settled at or attached to the Posts.** *Same, p. 197.*

His Excellency had been attended yesterday by the Protectors of the Indians and several of the Postholders, and . . . after forming an estimate of the number of Indian families settled near the different Posts, a list had been submitted . . . of the **presents that would be required to be annually distributed** to the said Indians, and which the Governor proposed to order from England for that purpose.

The Governor further added that it was computed the expense of ordering this supply would amount to about 30,000 fr. *Same, p. 198.*

1830. Estimates.

Triennial presents to the Indians.....G. 33,000

B. C.-C., App., 398.

1831. Lieutenant-Governor D'Urban.

The tribes who live within reach of civilization, derive most solid and important benefits from our regular and constant assistance, . . . and **triennial presents** also **distributed at** the **posts on the river,**

Annual supplies..... 1,400
Triennial Presents..... 2,400
Amounting in every year to..... 6,600

B. C., VI, 43.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, FREQUENCY OF—(Continued).

1831. Second Fiscal.

The Colony pays annually a considerable sum for allowances and rations to the Indians . . . and, besides, **every third year a large amount** is expended **for the triennial presents.** *B. C., VI, 45.*

1834. Court of Policy.

[As to] the **triennial presents which hitherto it had been customary to bestow on the Indians** he was informed that the period of giving presents had been passed over last year. It was entirely a question of policy whether this custom of giving presents to the Indians should be continued or not. *Same, p. 54.*

The Court . . . resolved . . . to place on the respective estimates the following item :—

Provisions for promoting industry amongst the Indians within this territory—for Demerary and Essequibo, 25,000 f. : for Berbice, 5,000 f. *Same, p. 55.*

1836. Postholder in Pomeroon.

With regard to the last presents given out to the Indians, there is nothing on record at the Post ; but on inquiry I have ascertained that **the distribution of presents to the Indians was in November, 1830.** *Same, p. 61.*

1837. Court of Policy.

Allowances and rations to Indians allowed, with notice to Postholders **that no such issues can in future be defrayed by the Court.** *Same, p. 61.*

1839. William Crichton, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

All the Indian Captains in the Wyena and Barima, including those on the left bank, of the latter streams with its tributary Creeks, **have received their insignia of command and presents when this custom prevailed** from this Colony, and look one and all for its protection. *Same, p. 76.*

1839. Mr. J. Hadfield, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Indians who chose to reside at the Posts were supplied with plantains, salt, fish, rum, &c., and **presents of small articles . . . were periodically distributed amongst all the Indians** that chose to assemble at the Posts on such occasions, which induced many of them to attach themselves to the Posts, or locate in the vicinity, whose services could be obtained at an easy rate by the Postholders. . . . **But now no such encouragement is given them,** and the consequence is that not an Indian is to be found at any of the Posts who may be considered as attached thereto. *Same, p. 87.*

1845. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

The Indians almost all call at the Post on their way going and coming where they **expect and invariably receive salt fish and other little matters of supply entirely at his** [my] **expense.** *Same, p. 140.*

1846. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

Having had repeated **applications from Indians for medecines, . . .** furnishing the Post with **a large chest well stocked with good medecines . . . would . . . be an act of the greatest charity.** *Same, p. 143.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, FREQUENCY OF—(Continued).

1850. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

During the dark days of slavery the white population of this Colony considered it indispensably necessary for the peace of society generally, **to gain, . . . the affections . . . of the Indians, which . . . was accomplished by an annual distribution of presents;** but the **free use of rum** to them who called at the respective posts **cemented still tighter the bonds of friendship.**

This authorized system of demoralization . . . was practised at every Indian post . . . in a manner recognized as one of the then laws of the land . . . until freedom to the Blacks was proclaimed; but no sooner had this . . . been granted . . . than those very Indians were . . . cast off, the Whites telling them: We no longer require your assistance, **no more presents will be given,** no more rations of fish, plantains, &c., issued, . . . the negroes are free, and you can withdraw from the posts and return again to the wilds. *B. C., VI, 185.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, THEIR OBJECT AND CHARACTER.

——. British Case.

The British employed the Indians living in the territory now in dispute in services both of a military and industrial character.

Subsidies were for many years paid to the Indians for military services **by the Dutch and British Governments** respectively. *B. C., 119.*

1797. Captain-General of Caracas.

Felix de Tarraga, a Capuchin ecclesiastic, a missionary of thirty-one years' residence. . . .

Having arrived by the Creek Amacuro, at the Savannah, he found the entry closed, for there are the head-waters of the River Maruca, where the Aruaca Indians, whom he there found posted, informed him that on the east bank opposite **the English had paid Indians in their service who, whenever they heard that the stakes placed at the entry to the Savannah were being destroyed, were to fell others at the entry of the creek, and give notice to the guard placed at the mouth of the Maruca,** where it flows into the sea, in which place they told him they [the English] had a number of cannon planted and a large force of soldiers. *B. C., V, 165.*

1802. Anonymous Memorial.

Since the English have come into possession of the Colonies, the Indian nations have retired farther inland, because they got no encouragement from the English, **received no presents,** and obtained no signs of that esteem and friendship on which they prided themselves upon being held by the Dutch.

Same, p. 177.

1807. Estimates and Accounts.

Examined and passed the following accounts against the Colony, viz.:—

Expenses of the late Bush expedition.

Account of J. van der Haas for salempores delivered to Mr. Knollman to be distributed amongst the Indians of Essequibo.....G. 4,125 0 0

Gratuities and presents to the Indians.

An account of H. W. Knollman for **rum and plantains** furnished to the Indians .....G. 545 11 4

B. C.-C., App., 389.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, THEIR OBJECT AND CHARACTER—(Continued).

1807. Estimates and Accounts.

Presents and rations to the Indians ..... G. 5,686

B. C.-C., App., 390.

1808. Expenditures.

H. W. Knollman, for **rum for the Indians** .....G. 620 0

" " " " " " " " .....G. 1,122 3

Same, p. 390.

1808. Estimates, 1808–1809.

Presents and rations to Indians..... G. 6,000

The two Postholders with the Indians and their assistants..... G. 5,000

Same, p. 390.

1809. Accounts.

G. Timmerman, Protector of Indians, for **plaintains, rum, &c., furnished to the Indians** .....G. 2,209 17

The Widow Clark, for **presents to Indians**.....G. 606 0 0

The heirs of H. W. Knollman, for goods furnished to Indians....G. 1,269 19 8

Same, p. 391.

1809. Estimates 1809–1810.

Presents to the Indians..... G. 6,000

Same, p. 391.

1810. Accounts.

The Governor laid before the Court a list . . . of the articles which would be procured here, to be given **as a present to the Indian Chief Manariwan, and his people,** agreeable to the Court's resolution of yesterday, [aggregating] as follows: G. 12,620.

Resolved that Mr. Charles Edmonstone be requested to charge himself with the purchase of the goods, . . . as well as the distribution thereof to the Indians. *Same, p. 392.*

1810. Estimates.

Presents to the Indians..... G. 6,000

Same, p. 392.

1810. Protector of Indians.

The Indians complained to me that they were grieved to find that **they were not treated with that consideration by the British Government that they were by the Dutch, as they do not receive the presents they used to have from the Dutch Government.** *Same, p. 267.*

1810. Court of Policy.

Estimate of Colonial Expenses 1810–1811.

	Fl.
Expense of feeding, clothing, and lodging the negroes taken in the last expedition, at present kept at Maroco Post.....	6,000
Occasional expenses for Indians.....	6,000
Presents to the Carib Chief.....	12,000
Probable expenses of sending Mr. Simon and others in the interior of the country to ascertain the real strength of the Carib tribes whose Chief lately visited the Colony.....	4,000

B. C., V, 195.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, THEIR OBJECT AND CHARACTER—(Continued).

1811. Court of Policy.

Your petitioner, [C. L. Thomé, *widow*] **having incurred considerable expense in consequence of** the place of **her residence** [up in Essequibo] **having been selected in 1805 for the general distribution of presents** made at that time, to the Indians. *B. C., V, 197.*

1812. Estimates.

Presents to Indians..... G. 6,000 0

B. C.-C., App., 393.

1812. Court of Policy.

Chief Manarwan having been now admitted in Court, . . . his Excellency . . . demanded . . . the reason of his coming, he answered :—

That **the presents made to him and his people when he was last in this Colony were for services rendered in former years to the Colonies.**

That Governor Bentinck and the Court at that time made him promise not to wage wars against the other Indian tribes . . . and that he should entirely give up the Slave Trade.

That his Excellency and the Court, **in consideration of his thus leaving the Slave Trade, had promised to distribute to him and his people annually, when called for, similar kinds of presents** as those then given to him.

That he had faithfully kept his word, . . . and that he consequently expects to receive the presents promised him and his people. . . .

The Governor . . . explained to the Chief Manarwan that, he having so faithfully kept his promise, the Government, on their part, would give him the presents he and his people had come down for.

His Excellency was of opinion that he could not continue this annual subsidy without the sanction of His Majesty, that his Excellency therefore would give him as soon as they would arrive the presents of the year, but that he could not promise anything further without a sanction from home.

The Chief having expressed his surprise . . . saying Governor Bentinck and the Court had stated to him that the agreement entered into . . . was on record, and that provided he (Manarwan) kept his promise he would have no trouble in obtaining whatever presents had been promised. *B. C., V, 199–200.*

1813. Estimate of Supplies.

Occasional expenses for Indians visiting the seat of Government, or settled near the Posts, and working there.....G. 12,000 0

This sum wanted **to purchase in Europe presents for Indians** 12,000 0

Indians, general expenses of..... 120,000 0

B. C.-C., App., 394.

1813. Acting Governor Codd.

I . . . agree with your Lordship on **the rule to be observed in giving presents,** which ought to be performed . . . by the Governor, instead of intrusting it to Postholders and inferior Agents. . . . **I am inclined to believe that our present system with regard to the Indians is extremely defective.** *B. C., V, 215.*

1815. Estimates.

Presents to the Indians..... G. 25,000

B. C.-C., App., 397.

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, THEIR OBJECT AND CHARACTER—(Continued).

1823. William Hilhouse.

No way appears so eligible for the purpose of acquiring and securing a permanent and respectable Indian force as the putting a body of them upon permanent pay, and forming a company of Indian rangers, with Europeans for superior officers, and bush-captains for subalterns. The Indians have generally declared their willingness and consent to such a measure.

The adoption of a measure of this nature will have the effect of attaching the Indians most strongly to the interest of the Colony. *B. C., VI, 28.*

The distribution of Indian presents should unquestionably be made subservient to this end. It would, indeed, be impossible to explain the utility of giving these presents without reference to some such service being implied. The **presents to Indians,** though having some reference to the occupation of Indian territory by the whites **are at this period better understood as an equivalent for the amity and assistance of our Indian allies.** *Same, p. 29.*

The following remarks will be considered as coming from the mouth of an Indian Captain:

Our presents are of bad quality, and they are thrown away, . . . amongst tribes not belonging to the Colony, and amongst people who have never helped the whites in trouble, and never will help them. We who live near the whites, and are ready at every call, receive no more presents than those far in the interior, and who are never called.

Our Protectors are appointed without reference to any choice of ours, and when we look up to them for kindness and favour, we receive coldness and contempt.

The assurances we have from time to time received from the Government of future encouragement and better treatment have passed away like the wind.

Our Postholders we know not, or, knowing them, know no good of them. Our territory above the Post is taken away from us without remuneration or notice.

Give us arms and ammunition, and we will keep the land of our forefathers though the savages of Africa be let loose upon us; and if the whites will help themselves, we will help them. But give us the means of self-defence, or we must follow the Caribisce to a happier land beyond the falls. *Same, p. 32.*

The Dutch in Surinam have paid dearly for their negligence neglecting to increase the strength and numbers of the Indians so as to secure them the permanent possession of the bush. They **are now** in consequence **obliged to pay a tribute of no small amount to the free bush negroes to insure an uncertain alliance, and to prevent** the open encouragement of **desertion to them from the plantations.** *Same, p. 33.*

I . . . solicit . . . that a present of a good quality patent breeched fowling-piece may **be immediately made to the several buck Captains, who have actually served in the Bush.** *Same, p. 34.*

1831. A. van Ryck de Groot.

I give presents . . . to the Indians, they are a retaining fee for their fidelity and friendship. . . . the Indians consider them as presents to them as friends and allies, not as subjects. *Same, p. 41.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, THEIR OBJECT AND CHARACTER—(Continued).

1834. George Bagot.

As the . . . Warrow Indians appear impressed with a strong suspicion that the Indian Hendrick came unfairly by his death, and the family of the deceased may feel themselves bound to revenge it unless some compensation be made, **I would recommend some small present should be offered them, on condition of their giving up the feud**; otherwise, I apprehend, from the customs of these people, there will be bloodshed, and, if once begun, it is hard to say where it may end. *B. C., VI, 58–59.*

1838. Governor Light.

We made them [Indians] presents. . . . Their influence brought much larger numbers of Indians than at present are **within our borders. . . .** if some equally powerful motive were presented they would again appear.

Same, p. 63.

1841. W. C. McClintock, Superintendent of Rivers and Creeks.

There are but two places within the districts Nos. 1 and 2 where Indian children are educated, and unfortunately both of those places are situated on the Arabian Coast, so that district No. 1, or **Pomeroon is totally neglected, although the . . . Court granted about two years ago 10,000 dollars for the benefit of Indians,** Spanish Mission St. Roses . . . in the Upper Morocco [not included]. *Same, p. 106.*

PRESENTS TO INDIANS—BY THE BRITISH, TO INDIANS OUTSIDE THE COLONY.

1804. Court of Policy.

Mr. Mack represented to the Court that he had heard from different quarters that notwithstanding the measures taken last year by the Court **to revive friendly intercourse with the Indians** there still existed a great dissatisfaction, principally among those of the Caraiban nation in the Upper River of Essequibo, which must undoubtedly be ascribed to this—that by want of timely notice these Indians have not shared in the distribution of rations, &c., done in the month of April 1803; that in the meanwhile, as is well known, the Caraiban nations . . . have . . . often proved of the greatest utility, it was **highly necessary that the Colony** should **secure their assistance** in case of need, and that he therefore **suggested** to the Court to send a deputation, . . . to the Upper River of Essequibo; in order **to** assemble all the Indians that live there, and then to treat them, and **distribute some gunpowder and salt among them.**

Resolved to request Messrs. Mack and Clements along with the Fiscal of Essequibo, Mr. van der Hoff, Protector of the Indians in Essequibo, . . . to give them [Indians of the Upper Essequibo] a treat, offering them at the same time some trifling gift of salt and gunpowder, and there to give them such assurances in the name of the Government as they will think most likely to renew their attachment to these Colonies. *B. C., V, 185.*

1833. Quarterly Return of the Pomeroon Post.

August 25. [in addition to refreshments given to other Indians] **Spanish bucks called and received refreshments.** *B. C., VI, 51.*

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 015 918 161 3